

*William Brown*  
1822

Founder of Brown University

THE HISTORY  
OF THE STATE OF  
RHODE ISLAND  
AND  
PROVIDENCE PLANTATIONS

BY

THOMAS WILLIAMS BICKNELL, LL. D.

Author of *The History of Barrington; The Story of Dr. John Clarke;*  
etc., etc. Member of the American Historical Association; President  
of the Rhode Island Citizens' Historical Association.

ASSISTED BY AN ABLE BOARD OF ADVISORS



VOLUME III.

---

NEW YORK  
THE AMERICAN HISTORICAL SOCIETY, INC.

1920

F 79  
.B58

COPYRIGHT, 1920  
THE AMERICAN HISTORICAL SOCIETY, INC.

438644

Gp 26, 33



THE HISTORY  
OF THE  
STATE OF RHODE ISLAND  
AND  
PROVIDENCE PLANTATIONS



CHAPTER XXXVIII

---

MANUFACTURES



## CHAPTER XXXVIII.

### MANUFACTURES.

The Narragansett Indians were the first historic manufacturers in Rhode Island. Man and woman power did the work on stone and wood fabrics, with the exception of fire-power in the structure of canoes. Axes, hammers, chisels, gouges, arrow and spear heads were fashioned from stone and sharpened by friction on harder stone. Mortars, pestles, cooking utensils, pipes, tomahawks, were also made of stone. The Ochee soap-stone quarry on the Angell estate in Johnston is full evidence of the constructive ability of the tribe. The public and private historical museums of Rhode Island bear abundant specimens of this Stone Age.

Canoe construction consisted in the charring and gouging of long logs, a single Indian making and finishing a boat in three weeks from the cutting of the tree in the forest. For lightness in carriage the pine log was chosen.

The manufacture of wampum was the most useful of the arts of the Narragansetts. This tribe was the chief coiner of Indian money, the shores of the Bay and Ocean furnishing plentiful raw material in quahog and periwinkle shells. A bit of wampum was flat and about the size of a silver five cent piece. These bits of shell, black and white, were strung on threads like beads. The Colonists used the Indian coin until it became so low as to be rated only as a commodity in 1662. Prior to that date white peag passed at six pieces for a penny, and the black at three pieces. Wampum was also used for necklaces, bracelets and girdles.

Civilized manufactures began in Rhode Island very early—at Providence, when John Smith, the miller, built his log grist mill, at the Falls, on the west bank of the Mohassuck river, and on Aquidneck, as early as 1638. The Smith mill was run by water power and was a private venture, built in 1646, called a stampers mill, as it crushed the grain, as a pestle in a mortar. The Portsmouth mill was built by the town and was worked by wind power. The toll to the miller or the town was two quarts out of every bushel, a six per cent. industry, fair for operator and patron. Before the close of that century, wind and water mills either of town or private ownership, were erected in all the towns of the Colony. The most noted of the wind power mills was built at Newport by Governor Benedict Arnold. It was a stone mill, circular, standing on stone pillars, about eighteen feet in diameter and twenty-five in height. In early annals, its origin was attributed to the Norsemen, whom tradition traced to Rhode Island and Mount Hope. Even in our own time, the conundrum,

"Who built the old stone mill at Newport," is often asked and left unanswered by the uninitiated. Happily, the will of Governor Arnold, probated 1678, recites that he wished to be buried at the northeast corner of a parcel of ground, three rods square, in or near the path from dwelling house to "*my stone-built wind mill in the town of Newport.*" The old mill is treated with reverential care by the city of Newport, but the Arnold burial lot is shamefully neglected. Diplomacy alone can find the grave of the first governor under the Royal Charter, who died in office, in 1677. A few of the old-time corn mills still stand as memorials of the early days, in the south part of the State. The John Smith grist mill continued its useful service for the town until the construction of the Blackstone Canal, one hundred and eighty years later. The old mill was the meeting place of the town's people for the discussion of all matters of interest. The domestic mill parliament was in perpetual session and nothing was too great or too trifling for debate. The mill was the school house for information, the meeting house for religious debates, the town house for caucus, local politics, lands and finance. At high tide, "cannowes and boats" brought their grists to mill, the country paths, trails and roads converged at the mill, the people of the town built their first houses in its neighborhood, and the first taverns, shops and trades made the mill the center of their operations. Thomas Olney, Jr., the town clerk, had his house and tannery across the stream. Stamper's Hill was the manufacturing and business end of the town. Later, the surplus power at Moshassuck was used for a saw mill (in 1705), wool carding machines, clothiers' works, oil works, a cotton factory, a machine shop, a furnace, a fulling mill and other useful manufactures.

At Portsmouth water power was at work in sawing lumber for building purposes as early as the winter of 1639, and 1640. Ralph Earle and Samuel Wilbour, carpenters, were ordered to deliver "good sufficient stuff," of sawn boards at eight shillings per hundred, half inch boards at seven shillings and good clapboards and fencing twelve pence a foot. Timber was not to be cut or exported without a license in any town in the Colony. The export and import trade of the towns was carried on in boats or shallops, with or without masts and propelled by oars or sails. Here we find on the Island of Aquidneck the beginnings of our manufactures in mills and ship building and the first Colonial commerce. The first ship building began in Portsmouth soon after the founding in 1638, and it is certain that a vessel of from 100 to 150 tons was built on Aquidneck in 1646, for the New Haven Colony. In 1649, Bluefield, the pirate, came into Newport and sold a prize, but the authorities would not allow him to purchase a frigate, fearing he would attack our coastwise commerce which was then fairly well established.



While agriculture was the basic employment of the Rhode Island settlers, it is easily apparent that commerce would, at once, engage the enterprise of the Aquidneck founders. It is true, while it is to be regretted, that Providence discouraged ship building or the cutting and sale of lumber for export, and it is not until the early part of the eighteenth century that Providence opened her doors to the ship building trade, as ships were the chief commerce carriers. In 1656, less than twenty years after the founding of Pocasset, Governor William Coddington was shipping horses from Newport to the Barbadoes, to be used as power in the sugar manufacture of the Islands. On the return trip, sugar and molasses were brought home, a large portion of the latter commodity to be converted into New England rum. Thus agriculture, the raising of horses and sheep, made material for commerce and commerce demanded ships for transport, and the import of molasses led to the important industry of manufacturing molasses into rum, for which industry Newport alone had twenty-two distilleries. Still further, the ship goods were overworked on vessels to carry rum to Boston and the East, for the inspiring of the New Englanders in the cod fishing industries and it was not long before the slave trade was quickened by the fact that New England rum was a valuable purchasing factor in procuring slaves on the coast of Africa. The output of the Rhode Island distilleries called for ships, while the amazing profits of the slave trade called for more ships. Weeden thinks that the distilling of molasses and poor sugar into rum was the most important of the New England industries in the second quarter of the eighteenth century. Distilling had reached Providence and stills were running on the Town Street at Abbots on the southeast corner of Market square; Angells near Thomas street and Antrims at Smith street. Providence commerce started on the products of the stills.

In 1709, Edward Wanton, a ship builder from Scituate, Massachusetts, came to Newport and established a ship yard. Two of his vessels were fitted out by the Colony as ships of war to take part in the expedition against Port Royal in Nova Scotia. Within thirty years more than one hundred vessels of Newport build were owned in that town. Prior to that, one hundred and three vessels were built between 1698 and 1708, eight of which were ships. Ship-building was also carried on at Bristol, Warren, Barrington and at Providence.

The passing of Providence from an agricultural to a commercial town took place in 1711, on the arrival of Nathaniel Browne, a grandson of the Hon. John Browne, of Plymouth and Wampanoisset. Prior to coming to Providence, Mr. Browne had built small vessels on the western shore of Bullock's Cove, south of the railroad bridge, in the town of

Rehoboth, Massachusetts, on the ancestral Browne estate. Mr. Browne joined the Anglican church and refused to pay a tax to support the Newiman Congregational Church. For this civil offence he was sentenced to and confined in the county jail at Bristol. On his release from "Massachusetts intolerance," he sought a new home for his industry and enterprise. On the 28th of January, 1711, Providence "granted one-half acre on Weybosset Neck, on Salt Water, to Nathaniel Browne so long as he shall use it for building vessels." He continued in ship building many years, leaving an honored name and a fair fortune to his successors. Before this time small boats had been built in the cove below Moshassuck Falls and later ship building was carried on on the east bank of the Moshassuck, south of Weybosset bridge.

The domestic industries started early. The shoemaker was one of the earliest settlers, and the tanner followed the shoemaker. Thomas Oliver, Jr., a tanner, was in Providence in 1653. Edward Inman dressed fox gloves in 1652. The blacksmith was a skilled workman in all iron work for farm tools, wagons and house furniture. Bog-iron ore was found near Pawtucket Falls, and work in developing it for manufacturing was begun by Joseph Jenckes, Jr., in 1655. Mr. Jenckes built a forge near the bed of ore, made domestic tools and utensils, finding a ready market in the neighborhood. Mr. Jenckes also built a saw-mill with the annex of a carpenter's shop. It is claimed that as early as 1703, Philip Browne commenced casting cannon from mixed ore of the Cumberland and Cranston mines.

Nathanael Greene, father of Gen. Greene, was a large land-owner and farmer, ran a gristmill, a flourmill and a sawmill, carried on an iron foundry, in which he forged anchors at Potowomut, on the banks of Hunt's river, and added the gracious labors of a Quaker preacher. The forge was set up about 1725 and the anchors of most of the shipping of the Colony prior to the Revolutionary War were made at Potowomut. General Greene, before the war, had established an iron foundry on the banks of the Pawtuxet, in Coventry. The Hope furnace was established by Daniel Waldo, at Hope on the Pawtuxet, where cannon, bells and other castings were made. Iron tobacco pipes, swords and a steam engine were also turned out at this forge. The Colony contracted for sixty cannon at £35 per ton, for local defence, at the opening of the Revolutionary War. A siege battery of eight heavy guns was cast at Hope for General Washington in 1781, and were used at Yorktown, Virginia. Small arms were made by Stephen Jenckes of North Providence, at the opening of the war with England. Prior to that time, domestic utensils and farm tools were made in Rhode Island.

The Wilkinsons, like the Jenckes family, were natural mechanics. Jeremiah Wilkinson, brother of Jemima, was a very capable iron worker, in Cumberland. He first made cards for wool and for currying animals. He was the first person in America to "draw" wire. His greatest invention, which gave him a wide reputation, was that of cutting nails out of cold iron. Prior to his time, all nails had been made by hammering. His plan was to cut them from a sheet of iron and then heading them in a vice. The Wilkinson Brothers made anchors, heavy iron implements, screws, oil presses, stoves, pots and other castings. Oziel Wilkinson made the first wing gudgeons known in America. David, son of Oziel, forged the iron work and turned the spindles for the first cotton machines at Pawtucket. In 1797, David Wilkinson invented a gauge and sliding lathe, for which Congress voted him a bonus of \$10,000, fifty years later.

Carding, spinning and weaving were domestic industries carried on in all the families of Rhode Island and early New England. Sheep were brought into the Colony early and the export trade in sheep began at an early date, while the manufacture of the clothing of the household was made from wool and flax, and was a part of the housewives' accomplishments and duties. In 1676, there were more sheep in Rhode Island, than in any other New England Colony, so that wool was exchanged for linen with France. In 1674, Governor William Brenton bequeathed 1500 sheep. The inventories of that time have "weaver's loom and tackling," "spinning wheels with old cards," "woosted combs," "flax, wool, and woolen wheel," "14 yds. tow cloth," "yarns," "sheep's wool," "flax," etc., etc. In 1719, Col. George Hazard gave Thomas Culverwell one-half acre of land for a fulling mill for "Promoting ye Wooling Manufactuary which may be for my benefit and the Publick Good." A fulling mill was established at Hamilton, Rhode Island, in 1720. Joseph Wells built vessels for the coasting trade, on the Pawcatuck, at Westerly, in 1681.

As population and wealth are the true bases of productive industry, it is well within our bounds to introduce an official statement of the valuation, polls and tax limit of the Colony of Rhode Island, a little more than a century after its settlement. With the exception of Newport and Providence most of the permanent wealth came from agricultural industries. It is noticed that Newport has double the valuation and polls of Providence and nearly three times the amount of tax, while Portsmouth has more than half the wealth and tax of Providence. South Kingstown had valuation and tax almost equal to Providence. North Kingstown, Warwick and Smithfield are on nearly an equal footing. The purely agricultural back towns make a good showing considering the dates of their founding and the handicaps to manufactures.

## RHODE ISLAND ESTATES, 1757.

Towns.	Valuation.	Polls.	Tax.
Newport .....	£ 5,126,813	1,017	£ 20,000
Providence .....	2,522,396	552	7,578
Portsmouth .....	1,327,714	222	4,406
Warwick .....	1,381,527	336	4,627
Westerly .....	629,037	289	2,528
New Shoreham .....	391,063	82	2,116
North Kingstown .....	1,060,470	423	4,550
South Kingstown .....	2,206,600	361	7,337
East Greenwich .....	628,222	254	2,581
Jamestown .....	644,478	70	2,252
Smithfield .....	1,305,377	421	5,570
Scituate .....	No return	250	2,560
Gloucester .....	716,096	360	2,550
Charlestown .....	406,931	178	1,750
West Greenwich .....	316,618	217	1,646
Coventry .....	No return	217	1,646
Exeter .....	605,886	276	2,225
Middletown .....	776,366	130	3,076
Bristol .....	No return	250	2,600
Tiverton .....	817,512	227	3,304
Little Compton .....	905,946	229	3,352
Warren .....	635,675	172	2,400
Cumberland .....	557,312	218	1,668
Richmond .....	185,846	181	1,525
Cranston .....	894,268	281	3,874
Hopkinton .....	518,476	226	2,084

In 1791, Moses Brown, of Providence, made a summary of the state of manufactures in and around Providence: Spermaceti factories about extinct; distilleries ancient, mostly for gin; three sugar houses in operation; twelve or thirteen forges making bar iron out of pigs; anchor-smiths are ancient and exports good; steel is perfected; screws for paper mills in Connecticut and New York; cold nails from card tacks to shingle nails; cotton and woolen card making is perfected, engines being used for cutting the wire and bending the teeth, "bending 800 or upwards in a minute, by a lad turning a crank by hand;" "two paper mills that do much business"—writing paper, press paper, bonnet paper, etc.; hand and water mills for ginning cotton; upwards of a dozen fulling mills in Providence county; Almy & Brown's factory turns out about 780 yards a month of velvets, thicksets, corduroys, fancy goods, royal ribs, denims, jeans, fustians, etc.; many chocolate and snuff mills, hats, girt webs and saddle fringes; we are talking of a duck and twine manufactory in addition to our rope walks, of which we have three; our poor of both sexes are or may be employed in various industries, thus avoiding daily charities. Salt works were established at Pawtuxet and at Barrington by the evaporation of the waters of the Bay.

As we have already noted, Rhode Island had a remarkable and wasted supply of water power in the Pawtucket and Pawtuxet rivers and their

small tributaries. It was not until near the close of the eighteenth century that any adequate use of this immense energy was suggested. It was by the union of Rhode Island capital, accruing from commerce and home trade, with English skill and initiative, that the products of agriculture, commerce and trade were soon to be vastly surpassed by the industries of factories of cotton and woolen goods. In 1786, Daniel Anthony, Andrew Dexter and Lewis Peck formed a company to engage in cotton spinning, and the first spinning jenny constructed in the United States was made by these Providence men. It had 28 spindles, made by Daniel Jackson, an ingenious coppersmith of Providence. A carder and spinning frame were procured and the machinery was set to work in 1787 in the chamber of the Market House, now the home of the Chamber of Commerce. The company made a fabric, called jeans, having a linen warp and a cotton filling. Moses Brown of Providence was the active financial force in this wonderful transformation of mighty wastage to mighty industrial wealth and Samuel Slater, of Derbyshire, England, was the contributing factor of talent and mechanical genius in the establishment of the initial enterprise of spinning and weaving cloth. Slater was born in 1768 and at the age of 14 was apprenticed to a cotton manufacturer, at Milford. "Samuel writes well, is good at figures and possesses a mechanical genius," wrote the elder Slater to Mr. Strutt, his employer, and so pleased was the factory head with his new ward, that when he closed his seven years service, young Slater was among the most skillful and best trained young men in England in his vocation as a cotton manufacturer and a brilliant future lay before him in his native land. The inventions of Arkwright, Hargreaves and Crompton had put labor-saving machinery on a permanent footing and, as England had at that time the command of the markets of the world for cotton fabrics, colossal fortunes were flowing into the laps of the great manufacturers. Slater knew all this, but there came to him the call and the decision to emigrate to the United States, where his talents, knowledge and inventive skill might find full opportunity. Severe punishments were declared against taking models, patterns or drawings of machinery out of England, but Slater carried in mind and memory all that he needed to enable him to start and equip a cotton mill in America, and disguised in the dress of a farm laborer, he sailed from London, September, 1789, landing at New York, two months later. Here, he learned that Moses Brown, of Providence, was experimenting in cotton machinery, and he wrote a letter to him, asking an interview. Mr. Brown replied at once, December 10, telling Slater of his failure and inviting him "to come and have the credit as well as advantage of perfecting the first water mill in America." Slater met Mr. Brown at Providence, talked

on cotton machinery, visited the Brown factory at Pawtucket, pronounced his machines worthless, entered into a business agreement, and proceeded at once to the construction of machines, after the Arkwright plan, the models of which he carried in his capacious brain. On April 5, 1790, the firm of Almy, Brown and Slater was formed for the construction of machines and the manufacture of cotton fabrics, the first incorporation of its kind in America, and to Samuel Slater belongs the honor of introducing and establishing the whole series of machines patented and used by Arkwright for spinning cotton. From this date and these circumstances, the State entered on its marvellous career in the manufacture of cotton and later of woolen goods. The "Old Slater Mill" in Pawtucket, just above the Falls, built in 1793, still stands as a memorial of the infantile days of the cotton industry in Rhode Island. At this mill was made of Surinam cotton, the first sewing cotton thread ever made, as suggested by Mr. Slater's wife, the daughter of Oziel Wilkinson. In 1798, Mr. Slater aided by his father-in-law Wilkinson started a second cotton mill on the left bank of the Pawtucket river. Some years later, Mr. Slater erected the first cotton mill in East Webster, Mass. In 1822, Mr. Slater was led to examine the water power capabilities at Amoskeag Falls. He purchased the property controlling the falls and began the plant which in its extensions constituted the city of Manchester, New Hampshire. Appreciating the value of education, secular and religious, to the workers in his mills, Mr. Slater established a Sunday school at Pawtucket for children and adults, and encouraged schools and churches as true builders of society. Rhode Island may justly claim to be the home of the first successful cotton mill in America, and its adopted and eminent citizen, Samuel Slater, as the founder of cotton manufactures in America. Mr. Slater died in Webster, Massachusetts, in 1835, in the sixty-seventh year of his age. With the name of Samuel Slater will always be associated that of Moses Brown, the distinguished Quaker capitalist, who first financed the new enterprise.

The honor of introducing calico printing in Rhode Island belongs to William Sprague of Cranston, a descendant of Jonathan Sprague, of note in State history in 1681. Mr. Sprague early engaged in the manufacture of cotton cloth, spinning the yarn and giving the weaving to families in all parts of the State. Mr. Sprague began with printing "Indigo Blues," erecting cotton mills in Cranston, Johnston and Warwick, for the yarns, and later for making the cloth. His sons, Amasa and William, succeeded their father in the strong firm of A. & W. Sprague, Amasa studying chemicals and dyes and the mixing of colors, and William devoting his energies to machinery and the products of the mills, which used all the water power at Natick, Arctic and Quidnick. William Sprague second was a



public man as well as mill man, was speaker of the House of Representatives from October, 1832, to May, 1835; a Representative in Congress, 1835 to 1837; Governor, 1838 to 1839, and United States Senator from 1842 to 1844. In 1856, William Sprague, 3rd, son of Amasa, entered and rose to be the leader of the firm, which had extended its mills in Rhode Island and Connecticut and in a few years became the largest calico printing company in the world, running nine mammoth mills, capable of weaving eight hundred thousand yards of cloth and of printing one million four hundred thousand yards of calico per week. In 1873, the great firm was seriously disturbed by the general financial reactions and the immense estate of A. & W. Sprague passed into a trusteeship and out of existence, with very serious results to the manufacturing and financial interests of the State and of New England.

The Harris family, descendants of the founders of Rhode Island, has been active in promoting the cloth industries of the State. Elisha Harris, born in 1791, built a factory in an unbroken wilderness in the town of Burrillville, using power of the Branch river and founding the village of Harrisville. He was a successful manufacturer, and by his nobility of character was elected as Governor of the State, 1847-49. In 1824, William Harris, his brother Samuel, with the Wilkinsons, were making woolen cloths at Albion, Rhode Island. Thither came Edward Harris to learn the trade, becoming superintendent of the factory. In 1831, with a capital of \$3500, he bought a small woolen mill at Woonsocket, and began to make satinets. In 1842, Mr. Harris built mill "No. 2," in which he made all-wool fabrics, known as "Harris Cassimeres." Before his death, Mr. Harris had six mills, in which he made over 250 styles of cassimeres a year, having for his standard, "Make the best goods possible," the business transactions of his vast estate amounting to \$3,000,000 annually.

Robert Knight and his brother, Benjamin B., have won a commanding place among the great cloth makers of Rhode Island and Massachusetts, under the firm name of B. B. and R. Knight. Among their products was the celebrated cloth, "Fruit of the Loom," of which over fifty million yards were made annually.

In the bleachery business, the Sayles family has held leadership in Rhode Island for a half century. William F. Sayles, founder of the Moshassuck Bleachery and the village of Saylesville, began bleaching cotton cloth in 1847, turning out about a ton of cloth a day. The Sayles bleachery is now the largest and best in the world, in part due to the quality of the water, and in larger part to the industry and enterprise of the owners, still of the Sayles family, Mr. Frank A. Sayles being the president of the company.

The initial act of Slater at Pawtucket led to the creation of cotton mills in other sections of the State in the early years of the nineteenth century. The Cumberland mills started in 1801; the Branch River mills in 1806; the Anthony mills started in 1806 and enlarged in 1811; the Crompton "stone jug" was erected in 1807; the "Natick Reel Mill" went up the same year; the mill at Hope village, Scituate, dates from 1806, at Lippitt 1809, at Phenix 1810, and at Riverpoint, by the Greenes, in 1812. At that date, there were no less than 38 cotton mills in Rhode Island operating 30,669 spindles. Warwick had 9, North Providence and Coventry 5 each, Cranston 4, Smithfield and Scituate 3 each, Johnston, Cumberland and Glocester 2 each, Providence, Exeter and South Kingstown 1 each. The Slater mill at Pawtucket, then North Providence, was then the largest and best-equipped mill in the country. By the census of 1810 the value of cotton goods made in the State was \$3,079,556.

As late as 1815, all cloth was made by hand weavers, although the Arkwright power loom was invented in 1784. Judge Daniel Lyman and others worked on plans for a power loom, but before their successful completion, one Gilmour, of Scotland, brought patterns of a power loom and dresser to New England, was invited by Judge Lyman to come to North Providence, where he built twelve looms. The Lymansville mills, which were operated early in 1817, two years after the power loom, invented by Mr. F. C. Lowell, of Boston, had been set up and operated at Waltham, Massachusetts. Before the introduction of mule spinning, the spinners could not keep pace with the weavers. Mule spinning gave hand weavers an excess of yarn. The power loom of 1815 soon drove the hand weavers from their homes to the mills for employment as spinners or weavers—a change of great importance, for the factories wanted skilled workers and the workers at power spinning and weaving got better pay in their new places. At the close of the war with England in 1814, Great Britain started an industrial war by the invasion of cheap factory products on long credits. Coarse cotton and cheap calicoes from India closed Rhode Island mills and Congress was called upon to protect our manufactures by a prohibitory tariff on goods east of the Cape of Good Hope and increased duties on all other importations. An assessment of one cent on each spindle was made in 1815 to employ an agent, and Hon. James Burrill, of Providence, was employed to go to Washington to advocate a high tariff. There were then 99 mills in Rhode Island with 75,768 spindles, 57 in Massachusetts with 45,650 spindles, and 14 in Connecticut with 12,886 spindles, about one-third of the spindles then in the United States. In 1816, Congress fixed a duty of twenty-five per cent. *ad valorem* upon all imports of cotton and woolen goods. A tariff war followed between England and America, which brought great financial dis-

tress to Rhode Island as well as to the whole country. Henry Clay advocated a higher protective tariff, while Daniel Webster of Massachusetts, and Job Durfee, a member of Congress from Rhode Island, opposed an increase.

In 1826, there were 110 cotton factories in the State, with more than one-fourth of the spindles in the whole country. Pawtucket ranked fifth in New England, Slatersville eighth and Pawtuxet tenth, in cotton cloth products. One-third of the mills had power looms, one-third had hand looms, while the others spun yarn and twist for Western hand looms. Calico printing was begun at Pawtucket in 1824, at Cranston by the Spragues in 1825, by Philip Allen at Providence in 1830, and at the Clyde Works in Warwick in 1833. At the inauguration of James Madison as President in 1809, he wore a suit of American cloth from a Pawtucket factory, and his example was followed by President Monroe in 1817. Cotton factories grew rapidly. In 1829 there were no less than 139 in our small State, with 20 each in Warwick and Smithfield. In 1826, a lace dress was made in Pawtucket—which was sold to President Adams. A lace school at Newport employed 500 young women. Tristram Burgess, a Representative of Rhode Island in the National House from 1825 to 1835 was the staunch and eloquent supporter of the tariff of 1828, which was of considerable advantage to the makers of coarse goods. The subsequent history of cotton manufactures is one of varied conditions and results, and may be studied in the State and National census reports. The United States Census of 1910 is the latest authority to which we can refer our readers not only as to the status of cotton manufactures, but as to all other industries in the State. These statistics cover the number of manufacturing establishments in Rhode Island, the amount of capital invested, the total number of wage earners, wages paid, value of products, value added by manufacture, etc., etc. To avoid repetition and an enlargement of this chapter to unreasonable bounds, reference is made to the several decennial censuses since 1790, and the State industrial censuses.

The South Country had one or more factories which turned out a product, the demand for which still exists in some quarters. These factories, seldom quoted in historic annals, had a local as well as a general value in producing snuff for the old time snuff takers of the Colony and world. The best known was the Stuart snuff factory at the head of the Pettaquamscutt river, in North Kingstown. The Stuart house and factory near it were built by the father of Gilbert Stuart, exact date not known. Here Mr. Stuart manufactured snuff, in quantity and of qualities of which we have little knowledge. The son, Gilbert, the eminent portrait painter, was born in the Stuart home in the year 1756. Another snuff factory was built and operated at the village of Hamilton in North Kingstown.

The site of this factory was occupied about the middle of the nineteenth century for a cotton factory, by the Sanford brothers, Joseph and Ezbon. It is reported that other mill sites in the South Country were occupied by snuff factories.

Sheep were introduced early into the Colonies, furnishing their flesh for food and their wool and skins for clothing. Woolen cloth preceded cotton cloth for centuries, both in the old world and the new. At first, wool was washed, carded by hand, spun on spinning wheels and knit into stockings and mittens or woven into cloth. Except the heavier work of weaving, women did the carding, spinning and knitting in the manufacture of wool. Almost every town or neighborhood had its professional weaver. In 1674, Moses Lippitt, with the consent of his father-in-law and mother-in-law, Edward and Anna Searle, was apprenticed to William Austin for fifteen and one-half years and two months to learn the "art and trade of a weaver," and at his majority to have his freedom. In 1700, John Smith was granted three acres of land near Waushuck for a weaver's shop. In 1753, linen was woven at seven shillings a yard, and ticking at the same price, the latter being used for feather beds. Newport had a noted weaver in Martin Reed, "a remarkable man," who served an apprenticeship of fourteen years, with one-quarter's schooling. He married Mary Dixon, a linen weaver, and the two became the linen and wool weavers of the town for the leading families, and won a name and competence. Reed could weave "calamanco," a glossy woolen, satin twilled stuff, brocaded in the warp, showing the pattern on one side. This was the height of the weaver's art in the eighteenth century. In January, 1789, Mr. John Brown, one of the wealthiest merchants of Rhode Island, appeared in public, dressed in clothing made from the wool of his own sheep, the yarn having been spun by a woman 88 years old.

In 1761, "linnen yarn" was sold at six shillings the skein, the same linen was woven into diaper at ten shillings per yard. A pair of stockings cost 35 shillings and a "linning handkerchief" 22 shillings. Every farmer raised enough of flax and kept a number of sheep sufficient to clothe his own family, and other larger producers raised flax and wool for the non-producing classes. The products of the farmer thus fed and clothed the people. Prior to the entrance of the factory in Rhode Island, outside of household fabrics, hats were made—three hat factories being located in East Greenwich and others in Providence and Newport.

The first woolen cloth made in this State by machinery was produced at Peacedale, Rhode Island, in 1814 or 1815. It seems that Joseph Congdon, John W. Knowles and Rowland Hazard set up a carder in 1804. The business fell into Mr. Hazard's hands, which he continued, adding to his wool carders, four power looms, invented by Thomas R.

Williams of Newport. It is claimed that these looms were the first successfully operated in America and two years in advance of Judge Lyman's power looms in North Providence. A century of woolen manufactures, conducted and owned by the Hazard family of five generations, has made Peacedale one of the great manufacturing centers of New England, noted alike for the thoroughness of its development, the integrity of its products, the harmony of its operations and the nobility of its management. Its history is worthy of the study and emulation of American industrialists.

The Providence Woolen Manufacturing Company, founded by Sullivan Dorr, Samuel G. Arnold and others came into being in 1812, but continued only three years, being driven out of the market by foreign broad-cloths of a superior quality. This was the largest woolen mill of its day. In 1822, Zachariah Allen built a mill at Allendale for making broad-cloths, using the first power loom for this class of goods. In 1839, this mill was converted into a cotton factory. In 1840 there were 41 woolen mills in the State with a capital of \$685,350, employing 961 workers, and producing goods valued at \$845,572 annually. The last census (1910) shows 88 factories making woolen, worsted and felt goods and wool hats, employing 24,924 persons, producing goods valued at \$74,600,000, at an increase of value by manufacture of \$23,575,000. Woonsocket led in the production of woolen goods, while the lower Blackstone, including Pawtucket led in other textiles. Rhode Island ranks fourth among the States in the total production of cotton goods, third in woolen and worsted goods, sixth in silk and silk goods and eleventh in hosiery and knit goods. The production and manufacture of silk has occasionally occupied the attention of a few Rhode Islanders. Silk was raised and sold as far back as 1758. In 1823, Dr. Benjamin Dyer appeared at a fair in Providence dressed in a suit of silk made from materials produced and manufactured by the labor of his own family. The first silk mill in the State was set up about 1789. In 1909, 483,380 pounds of raw silk were bought at a cost of \$2,173,458 and 73,816 pounds of spun silk at a cost of \$175,118. There had been an increase of 221,218 pounds of silk material at an increased cost of \$994,011, since 1904. This industry now leads hosiery and knit goods.

In 1728, the Colony paid a bounty for hemp and flax, nine pence a pound for hemp and four pence for flax. In 1733, bounties were paid on 1,589 pounds of hemp and 19,013 of flax. The largest growers were Nicholas Sheldon, Pardon Tillinghast and Benjamin Greene. As late as 1791, 25,265 yards of linen were made in this State.

The making of hats was begun in Providence in 1730 and as late as 1810, 50,000 hats worth \$5 apiece, exclusive of felt hats, were made in the State. In 1790, the census shows the making of 121 beavers worth \$8

apiece, 1,327 castor hats at \$18 to \$48 a dozen, and 4,564 felts at \$5 to \$12 a dozen. Col. William Barton, the captor of Gen. Prescott, was a hatter by trade, before the Revolutionary War.

Judge Staples tells us that the making of straw hats and bonnets was begun in Providence, in 1798, by Miss Betsey Metcalf at the age of twelve. She made a bonnet of seven braids of oat straw, smoothed with her scissors and split with her thumb nail. The bonnet was lined with pink, like the fashionable and high-priced English straws. It was bleached in sulphur vapor, and was not only admired for its beauty but it took the market as it was sold at half the price of imported goods. Young lady apprentices were taught, without a fee, by the inventor, and soon straw bonnet making was the household knowledge of the women of southern New England.

Rhode Island has always held the first rank in the manufacture of iron and steel. Reference has already been made to some of the pioneer manufacturers and their products. Cannon were made for the Revolutionary army by the Greenes at Coventry and the Hope foundry in Scituate. Small arms were made by Stephen Jenckes at Pawtucket, and at other gun forges. Nathan Miller of East Greenwich made bayonets, Jeremiah Sheffield and George Tefft of the "Kingstown Reds" made guns. Elisha Peck of Providence made gun stocks, and Edward Martin, Stephen Jenckes, Thomas Bicknell, Prince Keene and others made gun barrels, bayonets and ramrods for Providence. In 1777, the Colony set a bounty of £60 a ton for steel, "as good as German steel," but none was made. The fame of the Hope Furnace won for it, through the efforts of John Brown, of Providence, large orders for cannon for frigates, built during Washington's presidency. Brown used the Cranston and Cumberland iron ores and before 1795, 76 cannon of large calibre had been turned out at Hope for United States ships and forts. They were cast solid, bored by water power and ornamented with the American Eagle. It is probable that the frigates "Constitution,"—"Old Ironsides," "Constitution," "United States" and "President," were armed with Rhode Island guns. The old cannon that were used as posts at corners of Providence streets were defective castings of the Hope foundry.

Factory machinery as well as cannon and small arms were made in the foundries of the Jenckes, the Browns, the Greenes and the Wilkinsons. There was a forge at Saxonville in 1773. A furnace to cast hollow household ware was erected near the Blackstone river, between Cumberland Mills and Abbots Run, between 1660 and 1685. A foundry and smelting works was built in 1736, a half mile south of East Cumberland, where cannon were forged for the capture of Louisburg, 1745. The Tower family made nails on the west side of Diamond Hill before the Revolu-



tion. Stephen Jenckes made scythes and other edged tools at Central Falls, in 1763. Brand's Iron Works at Hopkinton were noted before 1776, and there were iron works at Kenyon's in Richmond in 1772 and in Hope Valley in 1778. The "Old Forge" at Woonsocket was built by Quakers in 1720. The blacksmith and the iron master were at their jobs early and late in Rhode Island history.

The story of Robert Fulton and his steamboat enterprises, on the Seine in France and on the Hudson, is fascinating, but it is easy to trace his successes to the steamboat, built at Pawtucket, in 1794, by David Wilkinson and Elijah Ormsbee, which made the trip from Winsor's Cove to Providence and was then dismantled, in the belief that the scheme had no value. But the Wilkinsons and Jenckes iron forge mills made Pawtucket a lively place and their successors, Pitcher and Gay, J. S. White & Company, James S. Brown, the W. H. Haskell Company and J. & P. Coates have in and another line maintained the reputation of this city of the iron trades. Providence also had its iron manufactures of scythes, axes, spades, shovels, cotton machinery, etc., etc. The Builders Iron Foundry, established prior to 1820, cast hundreds of cannon of the largest calibre for the Civil War and the World War. The American Screw Company, started in 1838, has made more and better screws than all other screw makers in America. The Nicholson File Company has no rival; the Brown & Sharpe Company, established in 1833, is now a colossus in its magnitude, and has reached an artistic perfection in production and a leadership in the world's iron and steel industries.

The census of 1910 gives the returns for the year 1909 of foundry and machine shop products: 141 establishments; 10,957 wage earners; value of products \$20,612,000; value added by manufacture \$12,508,000; jewelry added 206 establishments, with 9,511 wage earners, a total output of \$20,685,000 on a base value of material of \$10,000,000. The total values of the products in silver and gold refining and manufacturing, in 1905, were \$31,325,000 turned out by 11,887 wage earners. At that census, Rhode Island led all other States in the manufacture of jewelry.

The first jewelry artisan of record in Rhode Island was Cyril Dodge of Providence, whose shop was two doors north of the Baptist Meeting House. He made silver shoe buckles for women, about 1776. His successors in making buckles were Calvin Wheaton, Ezekiel and William Burr, Caleb Wheaton, Edward Spaulding, John Gibbs, David Vinton and William Hamlin. The real pioneer jewelry manufacturer of Providence was Nehemiah Dodge, who opened a shop, as "a goldsmith, jeweler, watch and clock maker," near the Roger Williams Spring on North Main street, in 1794. Prior to this, all gold jewelry was made eighteen carats fine, but Dodge made gold necklaces, knobs and twists, gold rings and

miniature cases of a lower grade, which sold well. Some Attleboro men stole his secret and won the trade. In 1805, John C. Jenckes, Ezekiel Burr and Pitman and Dorrance set up shops for making breast-pins, earrings, watch keys, etc., employing thirty hands. The growth of the business is shown by the following facts:

1810—100 workmen; product.....	\$100,000
1815—175 workmen; product.....	300,000
1820—... workmen; product.....	600,000
1832—383 workmen; product.....	228,253
1840—172 workmen; product.....	277,900
1850—729 workmen; product.....	.....
1860— 86 establishments; product.....	3,006,678
1870— 71 establishments; product.....	3,043,846
1880—148 establishments; product.....	5,444,092
1890—170 establishments; product.....	7,933,000
1895—188 establishments; product.....	8,641,451
1899—249 establishments; product.....	19,445,327
1910—206 establishments; product.....	20,685,000

The oldest jewelry firm is that of Palmer and Capron on Eddy street. As early as 1850, the jewelry business crossed to the west side of the city, locating on Broad, Pine, Friendship, Orange, Eddy and Page streets, where it is now permanently and luxuriously housed. Men and women are employed at good wages, though somewhat irregular work, for this business fluctuates with the financial "ups and downs" of the home and foreign markets. Most of the leading jewelers have come up to leadership from the benches, where they learned the details of the factory. Brain work and skill are essentials to success. Providence has the great distinction of leading in the production of silverware for the world's markets. The Gorham Manufacturing Company, founded by Jabez Gorham, holds this worthy rank. Mr. Gorham began as a jeweler, at the corner of North Main and Steeple streets, in 1813. In 1831, Gorham and Webster began to make silver spoons. From this beginning the firm has advanced to the manufacture of gold, silver and bronze products unequalled in artistic form and finish. In 1900, eight firms, workers in silverware, employed 1,549 workers, who produced goods valued at \$3,834,038, at a cost for wages of \$978,198.

Extensive rubber manufactories are in operation in Providence; Woonsocket and Bristol, most of them being under the control of the United States Rubber Company, of which Col. Samuel P. Colt, of Bristol, is president. The census of 1910 shows five establishments in rubber goods, employing 835 workers, men and women, with a capital of \$1,905,000, expenses, \$2,656,000, products \$3,148,000. In 1910 the products of rubber boots and shoes were valued at \$8,034,417 exclusive of \$2,518,000 for rubber and elastic goods.

The Rumford Chemical Works in East Providence, established by George F. Wilson and Prof. E. N. Horsford, of Cambridge, has no important competitor in State or Nation.

Brick making is carried on by the New England Brick Company in Barrington. The Herreshoffs at Bristol have been for half a century the boat and ship builders of Rhode Island. This firm has built the yachts that have defended the American cup.

The following comparative summary of all Rhode Island industries for 1899 and 1909 is taken from the last national census:

Estab.	Workers.	Capital.	Products.	Wages.
1899—1,678	104,000	\$165,550,000	\$280,340,000	\$36,000,000
1909—1,951	122,000	176,000,000	291,000,000	55,234,000

These figures show the remarkable growth of industrialism in the State in a decade. Establishments increased over 16 per cent., workers 17 per cent., capital over 60 per cent., products 70 per cent., and wages over 50 per cent. The decade from 1909 to 1919 will undoubtedly reveal a greater per cent. of increase on all lines, revealing an interesting development of industry and the harmonious relations of capitalists and wage earners.

Providence is the center of the manufacturing and industrial interests of the State, it being the depot of departure of great quantities of the manufactured goods and the receiving station of large quantities of raw material for manufacture. Greater Providence includes Pawtucket, Central Falls, North Providence, Valley Falls, Cranston and Johnston, with a population of more than 400,000 people—the second commercial city of New England. Providence necessarily becomes the banker of the large productive industries, and its banks and trust companies are the guardians of active and income bearing wealth.

The most efficient and progressive organization for strong coöperative aid in industrialism in Rhode Island is the Providence Chamber of Commerce—formerly the Providence Board of Trade. The membership of the Chamber is large and includes the active men and minds of the trades, businesses, factories, transportation, exchange, and leading professions, and domestic and foreign traders. While Providence is traditionally a conservative city, the Chamber represents one of the most prosperous industrial districts in the whole world, as it is estimated that one-twentieth of the total wealth of the United States is within fifty miles of Providence.

The headquarters of the Chamber is a valuable exchange as to markets, stocks, and the general trade of all productive lines. Under the lead of the Committee of One Hundred, new industries are encouraged and inquiries instituted as to raw material, cost and amount of production,

transportation and consumption, tariffs, foreign trade, etc., etc. The Chamber thus becomes an exchange and clearing house of propaganda for healthy and profitable conditions of production and trade.

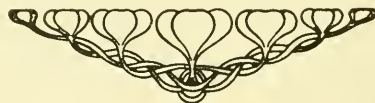
In addition to its concern for and protection of legitimate business, the Chamber of Commerce has shown a deep interest in civic improvements and its members are keenly alive to all plans that make for the growth and prosperity of the city and State. The proposed city auditorium had its origin in the minds of the executives of the Chamber.

#### RHODE ISLAND.

Population (1915).....	585,986
Valuation (Assessed) .....	\$701,861,946.00
Per capita wealth.....	1,197.23

#### Approximate Yearly Product of Leading Industries.

Woolen goods and worsteds.....	\$75,000,000
Cotton goods .....	60,000,000
Machine shops .....	25,000,000
Jewelry .....	25,000,000
Electrical machinery .....	7,500,000
Silverware and plated goods.....	6,500,000
Silk and silk goods.....	5,000,000
Hosiery and knit goods.....	4,000,000
Printing and publishing.....	4,000,000
Hay .....	1,300,000
Eggs .....	1,000,000
Potatoes .....	500,000
Fowl .....	500,000
Manufacturing establishments .....	2,200
People employed in manufacturing establishments.....	125,000
Yearly wages of people employed.....	\$60,000,000
Total yearly product of manufacturing establishments.....	\$285,000,000



## CHAPTER XXXIX

---

MEDICINE AND SURGERY



## CHAPTER XXXIX.

### MEDICINE AND SURGERY.

Providence was founded by a Puritan Congregational minister. Newport was founded by a Puritan Congregational doctor. Rev. Roger Williams and Dr. John Clarke were of the same religious cult, the one a teacher of soul truths, the other a practitioner for the salvation of men's lives and health. Dr. Armitage offers the belief that Dr. Clarke came to Boston to practice medicine, and finding Boston in the midst of a social and religious revolution, joined the party of revolt against the established order and became the leader of the party that founded the two towns, Portsmouth and Newport on Aquidneck. Although small public record has been made of Dr. Clarke's labors as a doctor of medicine, it is probable that he practiced in that profession all his life not only at Aquidneck, but also at London, where he spent twelve years from 1651 to 1663. In a legal paper signed by him, May 12, 1656, he styles himself "*John Clarke, Physician of London.*" It is understood that Dr. Clarke supported himself, while absent in London, and his family at Newport, by his medical practice in that city. In addition to his professional duties as a doctor of medicine, he assumed a heavy load of labors in organizing, developing and carrying on the town and colony governments of Aquidneck, the construction and administration of a code of laws and later, the great achievement of writing and securing the Royal Charter, under which he served in many important offices.

To Dr. John Clarke's honors as leader, founder, organizer, diplomatist, statesman, minister, we may add the distinction of being the first physician in the Colony, serving the people from 1638 to 1676.

All the physicians were apothecaries in early Rhode Island days and made up their own prescriptions. Shopkeepers often kept drugs, herbs and medicines in common use. Roger Williams advised remedies to sick friends and sent his daughter to Boston for a doctor's treatment. The first physician of record in Providence was Dr. John Jones, 1720, who was voted £1 10s. by the town for the cure of Richard Collins. Soon after, Dr. Jabez Bowen came to Providence from Rehoboth, where he found a field of great usefulness not only as a physician but as a man of public affairs, serving the town and colony in many important official positions. Captain John Jenckes, a small shopkeeper, sold roots and herbs and drugs, while the inventory shows £60 in "apoticary drugs," £5 in "cheriorgiry instruments," £1 15s. in books, £2 in 14 "Roles salve gallepots and drigs." Chief of all the goods was the first recorded toothbrush,

there being one dozen with 600 needles, valued at £1 10s. Here was a real health home missionary in Providence.

The views of our ancestors of the old New England days as to life and health were reverentially fatalistic. They believed that the life and death of every individual were under God's special attention and direction. So minute was this Providential care that God counted and numbered each hair of the head and that even as the fall of a sparrow from the air to the ground was noted by the Heavenly Father, so every event of every human life was under the especial notice of the Heavenly note-keeper and care-taker. The Puritan Bible taught this, the Puritan ministry taught it, human experience taught it and all, priest and people, accepted life and death as decreed minutely, personally, for every human copulation, conception, birth, good or bad health, sickness, early or late death, were outside the limit of man's control. All that man could do was to alleviate the suffering, consequent upon a Heaven-sent disease, and perchance avert the Divine displeasure, by an attempt at averting the pangs and penalties of disease. This philosophy was not logical but it was operative. Three score and ten years was the normal limit of life and four score were added years, "full of labor and sorrow," much to be dreaded, but to be accepted, if the Divine Will so ordered. Such a hard and fast doctrine took away much of the humanity in contriving and striving for human betterment and the saving and prolonging of life. All that nursing, medicines, doctors, could do was to postpone, if possible, the date of death, or to make as easy as possible the descent to the narrow house.

The normal average of human life in English communities was about thirty-three years. This fact was a fixture of fate or in other words of a Divine Providence. As a rule, the early settlers of New England were blessed with fertility. Nature had decreed offspring for man and beast and this law was obeyed in the begetting of large families. The birth-rate seems to have followed a biennial succession of children. The family of Gov. Benedict Arnold illustrates the action of vital forces. Benedict (2), son of William (1), was born December 21, 1615, and, at the age of 25, married Damaris Westcott (2), daughter of Stukeley Westcott (1), December 17, 1640. Children: Benedict, born February 10, 1642; Caleb, born December 19, 1644; Josiah, December 22, 1646; Damaris, February 23, 1648; William, October 21, 1651; Penelope, February 10, 1653; Oliver, July 25, 1655; Godsgift, August 27, 1658; Freelove, July 20, 1661—nine children in all. These nine children had 61 children—Benedict (3), being the father of nine and Josiah (3), the father of eighteen children. The total product of the family of William Arnold was four children, thirty-two grandchildren and about two hundred great-grandchildren.



Jeremiah Clarke (1), brother of Dr. John Clarke, had seven children born to him between 1640 and 1652, and these in turn gave him fifty-six grandchildren—Mary (2) and Weston (3), being the parents of twelve children each.

William Allin (1) of Prudence and Barrington had four sons and three daughters, six of whom were the parents of forty-seven children—one daughter Mercy, who married Thomas Barnes of Swansea, January 1, 1702, being the mother of fourteen children, born 1703, 1704, 1706, 1708, 1710, 1712, 1713, 1716 (twins), 1718, 1720, 1722, 1725, 1726. Austin's "Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island Families before 1690," reveals the remarkable productivity of the early settlers of our State, and the clock-work precision of successive births in each family. It is quite possible that reason, conscience and a fair regard for family unity and integrity had some control of vital functions and acts.

During pregnancy, the expectant mother attended to all the work of the household, often to the day of delivery. The process of birth seems to have been easy and almost painless to the early New England mother. The midwife was her assistant at the birth of a child and usually attended for several days until the mother was able to resume her household duties. Doctors were not available, or if at service, not in demand, unless in cases of peril. The midwife was usually competent and her services had been a matter of family care for weeks in advance. Mrs. Anne Hutchinson, mother of a large family, was a Boston midwife for several years.

The ancestral mother fed her baby with mother's milk, from her own breasts, to her a mental satisfaction as well as a physical pleasure and delight. In this act of personal conservation of food and the healthy growth of the baby, motherhood found the full expression of the term maternity. For nearly two years, more or less, the mother supplied the main sustenance, contributing thereby to her own health as well as that of her baby. In some cases the nursing habit was continued into the third year to the advantage of the child, if not to the mother. This act was a deterrent of menstruation and of too frequent births.

The foods of the early days were plain and easily obtainable. Corn and rye were the most substantial grains and easily converted into meal for breadstuffs. The gristmill was the first power-house. Forest soils converted into garden gave the usual English stock of vegetables. Fish and game were plenty, clams, quahogs, scallops and oysters were easily got by digging. Swine and goats ran at large in the woods and on the commons. Butter was bought at 6d. per pound; peas at 3s. 6d. a bushel. The wood fire, on the open hearth, was the daily family cookery, while the brick or stone oven in the broad chimney was the depository of the week-

end baking of bread, beans, pies and puddings, as well as meats. Health was the chief product of the ancient Rhode Island cuisine. The food materials were health-giving and the cooking made "good digestion wait on appetite and health on both." Then the sound of mind and body could "throw physic to the dogs; I'll none of it." Dr. Joshua Babcock, of Westerly, born in 1707, son of Captain James Babcock, the owner of a 2000-acre farm, with horses, stock and slaves to fit his farm, was brought up in the good old way in the South Country. He was a graduate of Yale, completing his medical education in Boston and in England. He took to old Rhode Island health habits, was up with the birds, spent an early morning hour on the farm, then had his first meal of a bowl of brown bread and milk, with apple pie or fruit. A silver porringer and spoon had been his breakfast companions for forty years. At dinner, at a well furnished table the Doctor ate of one dish only, flesh, fish or fowl. At supper he returned to his porringer of bread and milk. He refused coffee, but at tea drank "exactly three cups." Cider and wine were frequent drinks. The November inventory of a Rhode Island cellar of the seventeenth century and later would furnish a text for a sermon on ancestral health, endurance and longevity. A full barrel of farm-raised pork stood in the corner, and nearly a barrel of home-made beef. Two or three barrels of cider waited the farmer's taps. Twenty barrels of apples supplied the demands for fresh fruits, while dried apples, berries, etc., were stored in the cellar pantry with bottles of grape juice and other temperance drinks, vegetables of all sorts from garden and field, with a pile of golden pumpkins and squashes, filled the store house to the doors. Add to the stores of the cellar, the riches of the corn-cribs, chockfull of oats, rye, barley, buckwheat and Indian corn, and you have the fountains of good health full to overflowing under every roof-tree in Rhode Island. Both the mouth and the meat were God's gifts—"Man makes a death which nature never made."

In the early days physicians were not in great demand, except in extremities of sickness or the approach of death. In most cases, the housewife had the wisdom and skill to use simple remedies, the knowledge of which was an heirloom of great value, and transmitted from mother to daughter. The Indians were nature doctors and many of their methods of treating the sick were adopted by the Colonists, especially their constant use of medicinal or nutritive roots and herbs and sweating processes as applied to colds, fevers and inflammations. The early physicians were not educated men in book knowledge or in scientific results, for books and science had little of practical value for the practitioner. A fair share of good sense in guessing the facts as to sickness and an equally fair share of good luck in the use of remedies made the successful old-time doctor.

His saddle-bags carried the stock of pharmacy goods in common use, as the apothecary had few stores to furnish and the apothecary himself was only found in a few of the largest towns. Blood-letting was a common practice and a wicked one, for it was a common theory that the blood was the holder and carrier of the sick-devils and that a drawing of blood relieved the patient of the devils. Instead of purifying the fountain of life, the ancient doctor aimed to draw the springs of life as nearly dry as the life of the patient would allow. The process was actually one of slow murder, and continued in use till a late day.

Doctor's fees were very low. In Boston, prior to the Revolution, an ordinary visit was charged at a shilling and a half or two shillings. People "in high life" paid a half dollar for a call and, in 1782, a club of influential doctors fixed the fee for common folks at fifty cents, and consultations at one dollar. Night visits were one dollar and midwife's services were eight dollars. Medicines were an extra charge and capital surgical operations cost £5 in lawful money. Poor people were treated without cost, at least doctor's bills were seldom paid by them.

John Greene, one of the founders of Warwick and the ancestor of the Warwick Greenes, was a surgeon in practice in Salisbury, England, before coming to New England, with a wife and six children. He arrived in Boston with his family June 3, 1635, spent a short time at Salem and was in Providence, August 1, 1637, being under sentence in Massachusetts "for speaking contemptuously of Magistrates" and fined £20. He seems to have been industrious in affairs of town and Colony, and there is no public record of his practicing as a physician or surgeon.

Robert Jeffreys seems to be the first licensed surgeon in Rhode Island. He came to Boston with his family in 1635, and was an inhabitant at Newport in 1638. In 1641, it was ordered by the General Court of Aquidneck Colony "that Mr. Robert Jeffreys shall be authorized to exercise the functions of chirurgie." As he was treasurer of Portsmouth and Newport, 1641-42-43-44, and then disappears from our Colonial records, it is not probable that he "exercised the function of chirurgie" very extensively or profitably.

When we consider the many exposures and liabilities to disease and accident of the early settlers, it is quite strange that the family records and inventories contain so few references to aids and comforts in sickness. William Harris's will, dated 1678, refers "not only (to) ye mortallitye of all men, but also at this time ye great mortallity yt is among our neighbors (not far off) many being sick of ye smallpox & fevers and many dieing thereby." In a long itemized inventory of ten pages, the only article that could be possibly interpreted as a medicine is "2 barrills of winter sidar," and "2 barrills of summer sidar," and the catalogue of

"Bookes" includes "ye Method of Phissick," "1 Dixonarey," "The London Despencettorey," "The Chururgions Mate," "1 Bible" and "Contemplations, Morall & devine," "3 Alkemie spoones," "A warming pann," "The Touchstone of Wills;" "A pewter bed pann," and "1 square glasse bottle," may have been accessories of the nursery department of the richest family in Providence.

A careful examination of the inventories of the properties of Resolved Waterman, 1670, Thomas Walling, 1682, Thomas Olney, 1682, John Smith, miller, 1682, John Whipple, 1685, Ephraim Carpenter, 1698, Thomas Angell, 1695, Arthur Fenner, 1703, Samuel Winsor, 1705, John Wilkinson, 1708, Captain Richard Arnold, 1710, Daniel Brown, James Angell and Samuel Whipple, 1711, and Thomas Mann, 1694, among the richest citizens of Providence, reveals no drugs, medicines, tools or implements to give relief to the sick, wounded or disabled, and not one book relating to disease or care of the sick, only three razors appear, one belonging to Thomas Mann, and two to Captain Richard Arnold. Looking glasses were found in a few families, but no form of timepieces. Only a few had the comforts of an English Bible. Some of these inventories mention parts of old Bibles. The catechism is not mentioned among sick comforts or restoratives.

Mr. Williams writing to Gov. John Winthrop, Jr., at Pequot, 1645, said, "I have been very sick of cold and fever, but God hath been gracious to me. I am not yet resolved of a course for my daughter, of youre powder, with directions, might be sent without trouble, I should first wait upon God in that way; however 'tis best to wait upon Him. If the ingredients be costly, I shall thankfully account. I have books that prescribe powders, &c., but yours is probatum in this country."

1644, March 1. "Whereas the Court have taken notice of the great blessing of God on the good endeavors of Capt. John Cranston of Newport, both in physick and chirurgery to the great comfort of such as have had occasion to use his skill and practice," they style him Doctor in these two branches and commission him to practice throughout the Colony.

When doctors were few, and long distances to travel on foot or on horse-back made doctors' visits difficult, it was the habit of the sick to send to the doctor a written "description of the operation of the sickness." The following is an instance: "Sumtimes I have a strange knowing and fretting in my stomak; and sids which seems both hot and cold with a sour rising in my stomak and also a sour taste in my mouth and oftentimes a trembling at heart and sumtimes my heart beeteing very quick and sumtimes makeing of stops and then fetch a leep and sumtimes sumthing rising up and coming over me like a fright which makes it seem as if I should die presently, and sumtimes my breath going away

just as I am going into sleepe, and also many other faintly feels to tedious for me to relate but one thing more I shall relate; that is I am very much troubled with wind in my stomak and if I take that which is of a hot nature it is apt to make me faint, and much sweete makes me fainte and sour or tart things fret my stomak." The doctor called it *dyspepsia*.

The Rodmans for three generations dealt in pills and powders for the health of the South Country farmers. A patient wrote asking if Dr. Rodman "hath any such Cordiall pills as Benjamin Newbuery did formerly make which said pil was also to cause rest and sleep, and if he have such pill and accounts it good for me then I do desire a littel of it with directions how to use it."

Rheumatism is "as old as the hills." Even the Greeks and Romans had it and we know not that the whole world since Adam and Eve has had a touch of it. Here is the recipe of a sovereign remedy. "A Receipt for the Gout or Rumatick Disorder. Take a Pound of Bittersweet Root and a Pound of Saxapiriller Root ye Bark of ye Root of Each and a Pound of Sweetfirn Boughs one Pound of Black Birch Bark Pound them well in a Marter Let it Soak'all night in Eight Quarts of Water then Boil it away to two Quarts then strain it out put in a Pound of Sugar Just Boil and Skim it then take it off and put in a Quart of West India Rum. Take three jills of it in a day (viz.) a jill at a time one hour before Eating for thirty Days."

Here is an old time recipe for Rickets: "Take a handful of harts-horn & a handful of Shepard's pouch and a handful of agramony & a handful of Gorden Hyssup & a handful of balm and a handful of maiden hair & a handful of yellow Solomon seal and make Syrup of all these and give the Child three spoons full a day at morning, noon & night & let ye child's blood twice a week." The conceit of "blood letting" was an old-time idea and practice and held a place in medical practice in New England until recent years.

Children's ailments were treated by the mothers from the domestic pharmacy. Colds, stomach troubles, mumps, measles, whooping cough, worms, itch, etc., etc., seldom caused anxiety to the home-nurse. Many of modern diseases were unknown a century ago, and some, then, alas, too common and fatal, have been practically exterminated or so far under scientific control that they have lost their terrors. The smallpox and yellow fever, fatal to the Indians, were equally destructive of the lives of white men. It is supposed that one or both of these epidemics had swept over the seaboard tribes, before the settlement at Plymouth, Massachusetts, in 1620. In October, 1690, the smallpox broke out with great violence in Aquidneck. No remedy was then known and a writer says: "Rhode Island is almost destroyed by the smallpox." Newport was aban-

done by the General Assembly for nearly a year. The Secretary of the Colony and his family were all ill with this disease and the whole affairs of the Colony were deranged, little business done in legislation, and trade was neglected. In 1712, a quarantine act was passed, and in 1716, a hospital was ordered built on Coaster's Harbor Island. In 1732, Bristol provided a house for smallpox patients. Providence had no hospital for smallpox until 1751. Inoculation, which met with violent opposition, was introduced into the Colony in 1772, but all legislation was defeated, until 1776, when army conditions compelled the General Assembly to establish hospitals or pest houses in the five counties.

Dr. Benjamin Waterhouse, born at Newport, 1754, whose medical studies were pursued in Newport for several years, continued in London, under Dr. Fothergill, graduating at Leyden University, in 1780, introduced vaccination for smallpox into this country, in 1800. Dr. Waterhouse was then a professor of the Theory and Practice of Medicine at Harvard College, when as yet there was but one medical school in America, that in Philadelphia. Jenner's great discovery was thus introduced here by a Rhode Island doctor who, on becoming acquainted with this great method of deliverance from a dreadful scourge, gave himself to the propagation of the relief. It seems that Jenner was led to the discovery by the local rustic tradition in England that the dairy-maids who contracted cowpox were exempt from smallpox. To test the value of the saying, on May 14, 1796, he vaccinated a boy of eight with lymph from the hand of a dairy-maid, and on July 1 inoculated the same boy with smallpox. The experiment was a success and was published in 1798, with the result that gradually this treatment came into general use and thereby the dread disease lost its terrors and victims, although the method was at first vigorously opposed. In 1810, the town of Providence employed one Sylvanus Fansher to vaccinate the townspeople, to the total of 4,305 persons, at a cost of \$233.25. Since the adoption of the principle of vaccination not a thousand deaths have occurred from this disease and since 1880 the people have had little to fear from smallpox. One of the most noted Rhode Island men who fell a victim to the smallpox was Ex-Governor Samuel Ward, who died at Philadelphia, March 26, 1776, while an active member of the Continental Congress.

A fearful epidemic, known as the "Throat Distemper," appeared in 1735, and continued for more than a year, afflicting the people from New Hampshire as far South as Carolina. It is described as a swelled throat, with white or ash-colored specks, an efflorescence of the skin, great debility of the whole system, and a strong tendency to putridity." It was called the greatest scourge ever known in the country and especially fatal to children. It is probable that this disease was the fore-runner of modern



diphtheria. Gabriel Bernon, of Providence, died during the prevalence of this distemper.

The yellow fever first visited Providence in 1791, and Dr. William Bowen, the leading physician, attended the early cases. For five years few deaths occurred from this disease, but in 1797 midsummer it returned with increased virulence in the State and in the surrounding country. Dr. Isaac Senter, the leading doctor of Newport, contended that yellow fever was not contagious, but was caused by unsanitary conditions. Other physicians disagreed. A committee of the town of Providence, appointed to examine for nuisances at "the north end of Providence," reported, "Wherefore we consider that we cannot impute the prevailing sickness to no less cause than the works of Providence." The ascription of a deadly curse to a Divine Source seems to have acted as a deliverance from its ravages and, at the end of a century, it has passed—it is hoped forever.

Asiatic cholera made its first appearance in the United States in 1832. In June Drs. Levi Wheaton, Joseph Mauran and Thomas H. Webb were chosen a committee of safety to report such measures as they deemed expedient to stay the coming of the scourge to Rhode Island. On the 25th of July two persons died at Newport and on the 31st two persons were seized with the malady at Providence and died August 1. In September and October, twenty-nine cases of cholera were reported in Providence, making a total of thirty-six, twenty-five of whom died and eleven recovered. Dr. Edwin M. Snow was health officer of the city in 1849, when cholera again appeared and of fifty cases reported by city physicians, two-thirds died. Dr. Snow laid the disease to "local filth" and "atmospheric influence." In the summer and autumn months of 1854, one hundred and fifty-nine cases were reported, of whom only one-half were fatal. Dr. Snow reported that nine-tenths of deaths were of foreign parentage, living near the canal and near Fox Point, and that a great proportion of deaths among foreigners was due to bad housing and bad habits of life.

In 1880, an intermittent fever known as "malaria" was endemic in Providence, about Mashapaug Pond, at Nayatt in Barrington and other places, in all about three hundred cases; not one death occurred in Providence.

Diphtheria first appeared in 1858, and has made occasional visits to different parts of the State. In 1877, there were two hundred and ninety-five deaths in Providence and in 1878 two hundred and forty-six from this disease. During the winter of 1889-90, the State was visited by an epidemic of influenza, by which at least one-third of the people were attacked and many died.

In 1877, a State Board of Health was created by the General Assembly. The first Board was made up of Dr. David King, of Newport county, Elisha Dyer, Jr., Washington county, Drs. Charles H. Fisher and George W. Jenckes of Providence county, W. T. C. Wardwell of Bristol county, and Dr. Albert G. Sprague of Kent county. Dr. Charles H. Fisher was elected secretary of the Board and the registration of vital statistics and the study of sanitation was at once entered on. Subjects discussed in the early reports were causes of typhoid fever, schoolhouse ventilation, local conditions producing disease, contagious diseases among domestic animals, composition and properties of milk, the disposal of sewage, pollution of Providence river, tuberculosis in cattle, etc., etc. In 1893, on the death of Dr. Fisher, Dr. Gardner T. Swarts was chosen secretary of the Board of Health. Under his direction the sources of water supply were studied, sources of river pollution examined, and the free examination of sputum for the diagnosis of tuberculosis begun (1894). This was the first State Board of Health to undertake this work. In January, 1895, the Board was authorized to examine all applicants for the practice of medicine, to issue certificates of qualification and revocation. In 1896, over four hundred and fifty men and women applied for examination for certificates. In May, 1900, a chemical laboratory was established to make proper study of all matters, subjects and conditions, affecting the public health. The results of these studies and scientific tests have been brought to the knowledge of the people through reports and the press, thereby educating authorities as well as citizens at large on methods of improving public health and personal efficiency throughout the State. Dr. Joseph Mauran, born in Barrington, in 1796, is credited with the plan of registration of birth, marriages and deaths, adopted by the State in 1853, under the direction of Hon. Asa Potter, Secretary of State. The office of Superintendent of Health was created in Providence in 1856, and was ably filled by Dr. Edwin M. Snow, until his death in 1884, since which time, Dr. Charles V. Chapin has been chief health officer of Providence. In most of the towns of the State, the councils act as boards of health.

Physic and physician were originally applied to natural philosophy and its studies. Science in the early day was the wise use of the rule of thumb, out of which grew in due time scholarship based on knowledge and its laws. The procession of knowledge and skill ran from father to son until coördinated knowledge became the basis of modern science. Disease, the common destructive agent of human life, was the first to demand physic at the hands of a physician. Chaucer, the poet of the Dawn, tells us:

"With us ther was a Doctour of Phisik,  
In al this world ne was ther non him ilk  
To spoke of phisik and of surgerye."



Sir R. Guilforde tells us that in his day, "the nombre of *doctoures* of Cyuyle and physyk was gret excedyngly." Mandeville says that "Seynt Luke the Evangelist was a Disciple of Seynt Paul for to learne Phisik and many others." In fact the healing and curative arts came in with Christianity as a part of its service of love to mankind.

The records of the Bay Colony relate that a "Frenchman being a phisitian and otherwise well qualified," giving "good Commendations of his sufficiency & of his Godly lyfe & conversation," applied to join the Puritan Colony. The fact is that the New England settlers were a healthy body of people, in the prime of life, well fitted to endure the privations and hardships of the wilderness, and that, barring the lesser ailments of colds, fever, etc., they were well qualified to care for one another in the stress of ordinary family sicknesses, for which the neighborhood nurses were well equipped to cope, with experience and bags of home-made remedies, always at command. Indeed it is within the memories of men and women now living that the attics of many New England homes were well stored with thoroughwort, motherwort, elecampane, hardhack, lungwort, pennyroyal, sassafras-roots, ginseng (to which the Chinese ascribe almost miraculous powers), wormwood, liverwort and various other roots and dried herbs, and were requisitioned in cases of need.

Surgical operations were seldom performed, for medical skill was limited to pulling diseased teeth, the relief of various abscesses, the setting of dislocated or broken bones, for which the female nurse was not prepared to minister, and the doctor was called. His education was limited but experience and latent genius made up for deficiencies in learning. Confidence, born of acquaintance, and the efficient bounties of nature's restoratives gave to the provincial doctor a standing far in excess of his real merits. A brown bread pill was often found to be an excellent remedy in the last resorts of medical science.

Schools of medicine and surgery were late in their appearance in the American Colonies, as were professional schools of all kinds. The old minister taught the young candidate, the old lawyer the younger "sprig of the law," the old physician, his successor, son or neighbor. The practice and the saddle-bags became a personal asset of considerable value to the possessor and the foundation of the fortune of the aspirant for medical honors. Next to the law, medicine gradually grew to the position of distinction in scientific acquirement and lucrative returns.

The first medical school in the Colonies was founded in Philadelphia, in 1762; the second in New York, in 1768; the third, at Harvard College, in 1780, and a fourth at Dartmouth College, Hanover, New Hampshire, in 1798. It is of local interest to state that the school at Hanover owes its existence to the efforts of Dr. Nathan Smith, of Rehoboth, Massachu-

setts, born in 1762. Self-educated, with the exception of study at Harvard Medical School, seeing the low standards of medical learning and practice, Dr. Smith instituted the school at Dartmouth College and was its first professor. Dr. Smith attained great distinction in his profession, was a great organizer and very eminent as a medical teacher and writer.

Brown University became interested in medical studies in 1810, and in 1811, three medical professors were chosen: Dr. William Ingalls of anatomy and surgery, Dr. Solomon Droune of materia medica and botany, and Dr. William C. Bowen of "chymistry." The degree of M. D., in course, was first given in 1814. From 1814 to 1828, ninety-three men received the degree of M. D., in course. Four became distinguished physicians in Rhode Island, Dr. Lewis J. Miller, class 1820, Dr. George Capron, 1823, Dr. Hiram Allen, 1825, and Dr. Francis L. Wheaton, 1828. Dr. J. V. C. Smith, class 1818, was editor of the "Boston Medical and Surgical Journal," and mayor of Boston, 1854. Dr. Alden March, class 1820, was founder, president and for many years instructor of the Albany Medical College and president and one of the founders of the American Medical Association. Dr. Elisha Barttell, class 1826, was a professor of Dartmouth College and later of the College of Physicians and Surgeons of New York.

On the advent of Dr. Francis Wayland to the presidency, Brown University, at the president's suggestion, cut off all accessories not housed in the college buildings and whose teachers did not live on college grounds. This rule cut off the doctors as teachers and a star against the names of Droune, Wheaton, DeWolf and Parsons in the catalogue indicated that these men were no longer a part of the faculty of Brown. For fifty years Brown University had no one on its faculty holding a medical degree. Prof. George I. Chase became professor of chemistry in 1834, and Dr. Charles W. Parsons lecturer on physiology in 1874, Dr. C. V. Chapin in 1886, and Dr. A. S. Packard of zoölogy in 1878.

The biological department of Brown was instituted in 1890, with Prof. H. C. Bumpus as director, starting with a single course in comparative anatomy with a dozen students, the department at the end of fifteen years had six instructors and an enrolment of four hundred and twenty-four undergraduates and fifteen graduates. This department is one of the most useful of the University courses in providing a broad biological training in the principles of life and health, in a sound primary training for the medical profession, and the development of a body of health officers and experts for the towns and cities of the States and nation. The Biological Department is affiliated with the Health Department of Providence, the State Board of Health, the Rhode Island Hospital, the Providence City Hospital, the State Sanatorium, the State and Federal

Fish Commissions, the Federal Bureau of Chemistry, and the Providence Milk Department.

The new chemical laboratory, built with funds contributed by Dr. Oliver Henry Arnold, B. A., 1865, is now well equipped for work, and the University is fitted for advancing every form of laboratory diagnosis and study for improving the health and life of the people. A medical school seems to be the reasonable and logical outcome of scientific conditions and provisions at Brown University.

One of the earliest physicians of Providence was Dr. David Vandelight, a graduate of Leyden, who was an apothecary and a lecturer on anatomy, having a few students at his house, on South Main street. He was skilled in the chemistry of his day and introduced the Dutch method of separating spermaceti from its oil, a process which brought much wealth to the doctor and the business people of the town. At his death, February 14, 1755, the value of his drugs and instruments was inventoried at over £4,000. The doctor married the sister of Moses Brown, and his house is still standing between College street and Hopkins street, Providence. He was the importer or maker of the figure known as the Turk's Head.

Dr. Sylvester Gardiner, born in South Kingstown in 1717, studied under Dr. McSparran, in Boston, afterwards spending eight years in France and England in medical studies. He won a high reputation at Boston as an accomplished physician and surgeon, and by his professional success and the importation and sale of drugs won a large fortune, purchasing large tracts of land in Maine. The town of Gardiner bears his name. Dr. Gardiner was a Tory during the Revolution, and left the country. After the war he returned to Newport, where he practiced until his death, August 14, 1786.

Dr. William Hunter, a Scotch physician, settled in Newport, in 1752. Dr. Hunter delivered the first course of lectures in anatomy ever given in America. In 1758, he was appointed physician and Surgeon-General of the Rhode Island troops. He died at Newport of fever, from attending sick soldiers, in 1777.

Dr. Peter Turner, born 1751, served as surgeon of Col. Greene's Rhode Island regiment. At the close of the War, he settled in East Greenwich, the first surgeon of any note in that section. He had office students preparing for physicians, among whom was the eminent Dr. William Turner.

Dr. William Bowen, son of Dr. Ephraim Bowen and brother of Dr. Pardon Bowen, was born in Providence in 1747 and died in 1832. Dr. Bowen won a distinguished position in professional and social life in

Providence. "His person and manners were most felicitously adapted to the career of a physician."

Dr. Pardon Bowen became eminent as a physician in Providence and added to the reputation already attained by members of this distinguished family of medical men. He held the presidency of the Providence Medical Society.

Reference has already been made to Dr. Benjamin Waterhouse, born at Newport, 1754, who introduced inoculation for the prevention of smallpox.

Dr. Caleb Fiske, born in Scituate, in 1753, became the instructor of physicians, as well as a most worthy practitioner.

The great awakening in medical science in the middle of the eighteenth century found an ardent votary in Solomon Drowne, born in Providence in 1753. Graduating from Brown University in 1773, he studied under Dr. William Drowne, later receiving degrees from the University of Pennsylvania and Dartmouth. He served as surgeon in the American army during the Revolution, and in 1784 studied medical science in England, Holland, France and Belgium. His practice, botanical studies, writings, medical organization work and teaching placed him at the head of his profession. Dr. Drowne was one of the most useful and influential men of his time and his home, at Mount Hygeia, in Foster, is still visited for its historic association.

Dr. Stephen Randall, a medical student of Dr. Jonathan Arnold, became an eminent physician and surgeon during and after the Revolution.

Dr. Levi Wheaton, born in Providence, in 1761, acted as surgeon in the War, was a pupil of Dr. Bowen, was chosen professor of the Theory and Practice of the Physics in the College Medical School and for many years was physician of the port of Providence. He was an eminent practitioner and a man of general learning.

Dr. Charles Eldridge, of East Greenwich, served as surgeon in the Revolution and was distinguished in his conservation of the limbs of his patients, as opposed to the policy of amputations.

Dr. Edward T. Waring, born in the South, came to Newport to pursue medical studies under Dr. Senter. Dr. Waring was the physician of the United States Marine Hospital for nearly thirty years, and gained an excellent rank for his skill in general practice. "He lived universally beloved and died universally lamented."

Dr. William Turner, nephew of Dr. Peter Turner of East Greenwich, born 1775, won an enviable reputation at Newport as a general practitioner and an operative surgeon. Dr. Usher Parson says, "As an operator and dresser, Dr. Turner was remarkable for neatness and dexterity, and would lead a spectator to think he had been trained in Euro-

pean hospitals. His judgment was clear and correct, his conversational powers of a high order, and remarkable for logical precision and elegant language." Born 1775, died 1837.

Dr. Joseph Mauran, son of Joseph Carlo and Olive (Bicknell) Mauran, was born in Barrington, 1796. Young Mauran graduated at Brown in 1816, studied medicine with Dr. Pardon Bowen, attended medical lectures at Brown and finished his studies at the College of Physicians and Surgeons in New York, graduating in 1819. He became the associate of Dr. Bowen and assumed his practice at his death. For thirty-six years he devoted himself with great fidelity and zeal to the manifold duties of his profession and won the confidence and patronage of the Providence people. He was a consulting physician of Butler Hospital for the Insane and a medical attendant at Dexter Asylum from their founding until his death. Twice he was chosen president of the Rhode Island Medical Society, and he held many other offices of trust in medical organizations. To Dr. Mauran belongs the credit for the present State System of Births, Marriages and Deaths, and the office of Superintendent of Health of Providence. He also took an active part in the founding of the Rhode Island Hospital, at Providence. Dr. Mauran ranks among the first if not the very highest of Rhode Island-born medical practitioners, investigators and organizers. Withal, he was a gentleman. His life enriched his profession. He died in 1873.

Dr. Lewis L. Miller, born in 1798, graduated at Brown, 1817, and pursued medical studies with his father, Dr. Nathaniel Miller of Franklin, Massachusetts, and at the Harvard Medical School. For forty years, 1827-1867, he practiced in Providence and is remembered for firmness of nerve, calmness and great gentleness. His patients yielded to his advice and control, confiding in his skill. He devoted much attention to the suffering poor and won the hearts of the people by his sympathy and gratuitous services. He died in 1870.

Dr. Otis Bullock, graduating from the Harvard Medical School in 1832, located in Warren, succeeding Dr. Williams. He had a large and successful practice, was president of the Rhode Island Medical Society, 1866-67, censor of that Society from 1840, and prominent in other medical organizations.

Among men of the nineteenth century who have rendered valuable services as practitioners and students should be named Dr. Daniel Watson of South Kingstown and Newport; Dr. Ira Barrows, of Attleboro and Providence, one of the first to study and apply the principles and agencies of homoeopathy; Dr. George Capron, a devoted student, a fine professional career, in which a desire to heal the sick prevailed over the love of money; a strict temperance man, he believed what he practiced and prac-

ticed his conscientious beliefs; Dr. Capron was for many years the friend and physician of Thomas Wilson Dorr.

Dr. Seth Arnold, a descendant of William Arnold, who came to Providence in advance of Roger Williams in the spring of 1636, and settled at Pawtuxet Falls, was a self-made physician. While seeking a remedy for his own poor health, he found a cure for chronic diarrhoea, the recipe for which he sold in Boston for \$12,500. He also invented "Arnold's Cough Killer," "Arnold's Bilious Pills," both of which he manufactured and sold. In 1849, the Town Council of Cumberland chose him as "Cholera Physician."

Dr. William T. Thurston, born 1805, practiced at Westerly and at St. Christopher, West Indies, served as a surgeon in the Civil War, had supervision of hospitals and in 1876 was made superintendent and admitting physician of the Rhode Island Hospital at Providence.

Dr. Samuel West, born in Tiverton in 1806, graduated from Brown, 1828, studied medicine at Harvard and for forty years practiced at Tiverton, following the practice of his father and grandfather—nearly one hundred years hereditary and consecutive medical service in that community by one family.

Dr. Joshua Bicknell Chapin, son of Seth and Mary (Bicknell) Chapin, born 1814, graduated at Brown, 1835, studied under Dr. Joshua Mauran, at Harvard and at Pittsfield was a talented and learned practitioner, from which he was obliged to separate on account of deafness. He won two prizes for essays before the Rhode Island Medical Society, the first on Asthma in 1843, and the second in 1844. In 1849, he with Mr. George Thurber, established the first scientific apothecary store in Providence. Later he joined with Mr. Geo. E. Manchester in high-class photography, aided by Mrs. Louise Value Chapin, his wife, as a distinguished artist and portrait painter. Dr. Chapin filled the office of Commissioner of Public Schools with great ability and his decisions were never reversed.

Dr. Charles V. Chapin, son of Dr. Joshua B. Chapin, graduated at Brown in 1876, from Bellevue Hospital Medical College in 1879, and succeeded Dr. Snow as Superintendent of Health in 1884. His abilities are so varied and exceptional and his labors so abundant that he stands alone in distinction, in scientific and medical knowledge, in diagnosis of disease conditions, endemic and epidemic, in prophylactics and in all matters for safeguarding public health. He holds high rank in the Harvard Medical School and is looked to as an authoritative advisor and referee in health and life conservation. Author of Fiske fund prize essays, 31, 32, 33, 35, 38, 39 and 44, Index of Births, Marriages and Deaths, Providence, 1894, Municipal Sanitation in United States, 1901, and many articles on public health.



Dr Sylvanus Clapp of Pawtucket was a physician of singularly fine abilities and generous service, and ranked among the best of his profession. As visiting surgeon at Rhode Island Hospital, he won high esteem for unselfish work.

Reference has already been made to Dr. Charles H. Fisher, of Scituate. He had a large practice in his own and surrounding towns and served as surgeon during the Civil War. In 1878, he was made State Registrar of Vital Statistics and Commissioner of Public Health.

Other physicians of distinction in Rhode Island have been Dr. Fenner H. Peckham, Dr. Charles W. Parsons, Dr. James L. Wheaton, Dr. J. W. C. Ely, Dr. George Wheaton Carr, Dr. Jeremiah Whipple, and Dr. John C. Budlong. With the living physicians and surgeons, the future historian must deal.

Dr. Usher Parsons, 1788-1868, was one of the most interesting men of his profession in Providence. A Maine farmer's son, he spent his early years on the farm, a clerk in stores and at Berwick Academy, ambitious to become a medical student. At the age of twenty-four, he had studied at home and in Boston and in 1812 was admitted to practice in the Navy, with the rank of surgeon's mate. In June, 1813, he was chosen by Captain Oliver Hazard Perry to take care of the sick on his small fleet, on Lake Erie. The famous naval battle took place on September 10, 1813, and in that celebrated fight, Dr. Parsons was the only surgeon entrusted with the treatment of the wounded. Of his skill and services on that memorable day, Commodore Perry wrote to the Secretary of the Navy: "*Of Dr. Usher Parsons, surgeon's mate, I cannot say too much. In consequence of the disability of both the other surgeons, Drs. Horsley and Barton, the whole duty of operating, dressing, and attending near a hundred wounded and as many sick devolved on him; and it must be pleasing to you, Sir, to reflect, that of the whole number wounded, only three have died. I can only say that, in the event of my having another command, I should consider my self fortunate in having him with me as a surgeon.*" His commission as a surgeon was dated April 15, 1814, and on December 2 of that year, he was attached to the frigate "Java," under Commodore Perry and remained in the Mediterranean service three years, returning to Newport, in 1817. In March, 1818, Surgeon Parsons received the degree of M. D. from Harvard Medical College, after which he visited medical men and hospitals in Europe, returning in 1822, to receive the appointment of Professor of Anatomy and Surgery in the Dartmouth Medical School, and later he held the same title at Brown. As a consulting physician his services were in general and constant command. He was president of the Providence Medical Society in 1837, 1838 and 1839, and in 1843 again visited medical men, schools and hospitals in

Europe to perfect his knowledge and enrich his experience in the treatment of the sick.

He aided in organizing the American Medical Association in 1847, and was first vice-president in 1853, and at the meeting in 1854, at St. Louis, he gave the opening address. He was a prime mover in the Rhode Island Hospital, to which he devoted time and funds, and was the founder of the Rhode Island Natural History Society and its first president. His mind and pen were always active and his writings on medical topics would make volumes. In the Civil War, he offered his services to the governor, but did not see active service. Few men of the medical profession in Rhode Island were so well equipped with professional knowledge, few so well stored with general learning, few if any had the privilege of foreign studies and observation, few the experiences of naval and domestic surgery and very few the enthusiasms of a high idealism, which distinguished his whole life. Dr. Usher Parsons won a name truly great in the annals of his profession.

Perry Davis, though not a physician, was a benefactor to the suffering public, in the invention and lucrative manufacture of "Davis' Pain Killer." His name will be kindly remembered and treasured by a multitude whose sufferings his remedy relieved.

The Sweet family of "bone setters," though not professional surgeons, have won a high reputation for skill in setting dislocated limbs. An intuitive genius for adjustment of disjointed members seems to have been an inheritable gift of the Sweets from father to son, through several generations. Elisha W. Sweet possessed the ability of bone setting to a remarkable degree and was in constant practice in southern New England. This power was transmitted to his son, Thomas, born in 1834 and died in Barrington in 1886.

In 1812, the General Assembly incorporated the Rhode Island Medical Society, composed of physicians and surgeons, then prominent in city and State. The members were styled Fellows, the original list including sixty-four names. The charter conferred on the society full power to examine all candidates for the practice of physic and surgery and authority to issue certificates to all found qualified. This power was valuable in determining standards of qualifications, but acted as a hindrance to progressive development of the profession, as conservative men held the power. The first officers were Dr. Amos Throop, president, Dr. John Mackie, secretary, and Dr. Thomas Barrows, as treasurer. The law for registration of births, marriages and deaths, originated in this Society, through Dr. Mauran. The State Board of Pharmacy was urged by this society and was created in 1870. The Fiske fund, begun by Dr. Caleb



Fiske of Scituate, encourages original studies and investigation. The Society now owns its home on Francis street, Providence.

The Providence Medical Society was organized in 1848 and incorporated in 1887. The Newport Society was incorporated in 1883, and the Washington County Society in 1886. The Pawtucket Medical Society was organized in 1895. Woonsocket physicians have an active medical society. All are active organizations, are liberal and progressive in purpose and action, rapidly furthering human health and efficiency. The "Medical Journal" was first published by the Providence Medical Society, but is now maintained by the State Society. The library of the State Society is now (1918) 25,000 volumes.

In 1725, the mainland towns were empowered to build a House of Correction for vagrants, and "to keep mad persons in." This was the first provision made for the care of vagrancy and insanity in our Colony, and the first step towards the institutions for reform and for the imbecile and insane. In 1742, the General Assembly gave the care of insane and imbecile persons to the town councils, with power to appoint guardians of their estates. In 1748, paupers were authorized to be supported by the towns of their last residence or of their birth. In 1753 the towns of Providence county were empowered to built a workhouse, to be paid by proportionate taxation, and each town was to support its paupers therein. The poorhouse in Providence was the outcome. In 1755, a law was passed, requiring poor and disabled persons to be supported by their relatives, when able to do so. When the British occupied Newport, in 1776, the State passed a law whereby the poor of the Island towns removing to other towns were to be supported by the State. This law was repealed at the close of the War.

Prior to the founding of private or State hospitals, the insane and paupers were cared for by the towns, usually those of each town under the same roof. The care of paupers and the insane was let at auction to the lowest bidder, a custom quite common in the country towns of New England, "More honored in the breach than in the observance." Mr. F. R. Hazard, reporting on the Poor and Insane in Rhode Island, in 1851, stated that "men and women, innocent of crime, were chained in dens, and caves, and cells, and there left for years, shut from the light of day, without clothes or fire to shield or warm them."

In 1841, Nicholas Brown, of Providence, left a bequest of \$30,000 for establishing a hospital for the insane. Cyrus Butler added \$40,000 to the gift under the condition that an equal amount be raised by other subscriptions. A charter was obtained in 1844, Grotto Farm of 114 acres was bought and the first building for 100 patients was opened December

1, 1847, under Dr. Isaac Ray, the first superintendent. Sixteen patients were sent to the hospital from the State at the opening. It was called Butler Hospital and has maintained for seventy years a reputation for wise and skillful conduct.

Rhode Island Hospital came into being as the result of the urgent needs of the people for a place where suffering persons, with or without money, could find treatment and relief. Efforts and subscriptions, beginning in 1863, culminated in the opening of the hospital October 1, 1868, with nineteen permanent free beds and ten annuals. The total of subscriptions at that time was \$305,605, including \$40,000 from Moses Brown Ives, Capt. Thomas P. Ives \$60,000 and 89,424 feet of land, the site of the main building, Dr. Usher Parsons \$1,000, Dr. Tobey \$2,000, Dr. Lewis L. Miller \$500. Robert H. Ives, the first president, was succeeded by Amos D. Smith, and he by President Alexis Caswell, of Brown. Since 1877, departments for treating diseases of women and children, for gynecology, for out-patients, for nurses, orthopedics, neurology, and an ophthalmic department, under specialists of the highest qualifications. In 1869, 247 patients were treated at an expense of \$17,142.04, in 1879, 425 patients at an expense of \$24,062.81, in 1889, 902 patients at a cost of \$48,424.19, in 1899, 2,750 patients at a cost of \$87,238.28.

#### STATE HOSPITAL FOR MENTAL DISEASES, HOWARD, RHODE ISLAND.

The history of the State Hospital for Mental Diseases is practically the history of the public care of the insane in Rhode Island from the time of the inception of the institution.

The development of the public care of the insane in this State is involved with provisions for the care or custody of the State's poor and the reformatory and penal classes. On account of the relationship here of the institutional care of all these classes, the history of what is now known as the State Hospital for Mental Diseases cannot be treated as a segregate topic, at least during the earlier years when the State was actually entering upon an organized plan for the care of the insane. Even to-day the line of cleavage between the insane and the other classes named, as relates to institutional care, is obscured by the form of organized control and also by the propinquity of these institutions; because the State's dependents, the poor and the maimed in body, the afflicted in mind, as well as offenders of the law—all are located at Howard, upon a State reservation, and all have also been, with a brief exception, under a single controlling body during all of these years since the establishment of the various institutions at Howard.

The condition of the insane and such provisions as were made for them in Rhode Island previous to their institutional care by the State is

not under discussion, yet it seems appropriate to record here that until 1870 the insane chargeable to State, cities and towns, were cared for at Butler Hospital, in almshouses, in hospitals in other States, and in some cases the care of these unfortunates was intrusted to the lowest bidders.

At a session of the General Assembly of the year 1867 a resolution was adopted appointing a committee to inquire into the expediency of erecting a State asylum for the insane. The committee presented their report to the General Assembly of 1868, which led to the appointment of a commission instructed to select and make report to the General Assembly of a suitable location for the erection of an asylum and also to examine into and report upon the whole subject "of the care of the insane, paupers, and criminals, and helpless," and to suggest a plan for State action over the whole.

By the adoption of various resolutions, extending through the legislative sessions of 1867-1869, the William A. Howard farm, so-called, on Sockanosset Hill, in the town of Cranston, was purchased "for the location thereon of a house of correction, a State asylum for the insane, and for such other purposes as the General Assembly may direct." There was also created at the same time a board to carry out the purposes of these resolutions, to be known as the Board of State Charities and Corrections. Since the original purchase of the William A. Howard farm, several purchases of adjoining lands have been made. Upon these lands there have been constructed and added to from time to time groups of buildings known collectively and popularly as "State Institutions."

From the time of the appointment of the members of the Board of State Charities and Corrections, May 27, 1869, this body was the sole controlling board until July 1, 1912. Since the latter date certain changes in administrative control have been brought about by legislative action, as will appear subsequently in this history.

The following is the list of institutions as they exist to-day, 1918, which have been developed at Howard under the direction and administration of the Board of State Charities and Corrections: State Workhouse and House of Correction, State Reform School with its two divisions of the Sockanosset School for Boys and the Oaklawn School for Girls, State Prison and Providence County Jail, State Infirmary, State Hospital for Mental Diseases.

The first meeting of the duly appointed members of the Board of State Charities and Corrections was held June 1, 1869. Thomas A. Doyle was chosen chairman, Edwin M. Snow, M. D., secretary. The other members of the board were Henry W. Lathrop, Jonathan Brayton, James M. Pendleton, Samuel W. Church and Henry H. Fay.

The form of organization of the Board of State Charities and Corrections has remained practically the same as that which was adopted at the time the board was established in 1869. The secretary at first was a paid member of the board and the only member who received compensation. Later the position of secretary was made a salaried office under the board, the incumbent being no longer a member. The secretary became the purchasing agent for the board and until July 1, 1912, purchased the supplies for all the institutions under the charge of the board.

The board was also authorized to appoint a paid officer, known at first as Superintendent of State Charities and Corrections. Later this title was changed to Agent of State Charities and Corrections. Among the duties of this officer were those of visiting and inspecting all places in the State where insane were confined, determining the settlements of all who became charges upon the State and arranging for the transportation of deporting aliens. The first incumbent of the office last mentioned was the late George W. Wightman, who held the position from the first organization of the board until his death, February 24, 1893. His name deserves notice in this connection, because during this long period, as the authorized inspector of the board and by virtue of the authority of his office, he was the personal agent in disclosing and bringing to an end abuses which existed in some of the almshouses and domiciles in the State where insane persons were confined. He was so closely in touch with all the interests of the insane that during his years of office he is said to have had a personal knowledge of every insane patient under State supervision.

Mr. Wightman was succeeded in office by his son, Walter R. Wightman, who has continued to the present time, 1918, to fill the position with distinguished merit.

The first important action of the board which has a bearing upon the history of the State Hospital for Mental Diseases was taken at a meeting held July 30, 1869, at which the chairman was authorized to procure specifications and estimates for one-story wooden buildings for the "incurable pauper insane." The buildings were opened for the reception of the patients November 7, 1870. Sixty-five "insane paupers" were received from Butler Hospital, twenty-two from the Asylum at Brattleboro, Vermont, six from hospitals in Massachusetts and twenty-five from town almshouses in this State.

The official title given to the department for the insane was "Asylum for the Incurable Insane." The sole object of the department at the start was to care only for such cases as were regarded as non-recoverable. The statutes limited the admission furthermore to State and town charges. This asylum was conducted upon this basis until March 1, 1885, when laws went into effect which relieved the cities and towns of the expense of

the support of their insane charges. Thus Rhode Island was one of the first States in the Union to adopt the principle of State care of the insane as distinguished from city, town or county care.

Another radical feature which was brought about by change in the statute at this time was the organization of the reception, care and treatment of new and acute cases, thus changing the original status of the institution from an asylum for incurable insane to an institution for the care of all forms of mental disease, acute as well as chronic; thus placing upon the State the duty of providing a modern institution and one which should keep abreast of the times in approved and advanced methods in the care of the insane. No preparation had been made by the board for such changes, and in fact the board officially advised that the character of the asylum should not be changed from an institution for the chronic insane to one which should become a receiving hospital for all forms of mental disease. The board advised that provision for acute forms of mental disease and for a receiving hospital should be made in some other locality in the State, rather than at Howard. The institution, however, has remained at Howard; and with the growth in numbers of the patients, the physical plant of the institution has necessarily grown and efforts have been made in the line of medical development and scientific advancement to keep apace with the progress in these respects in other States.

The history of State institutional care of the insane in Rhode Island from the opening of the State Asylum for the Incurable Insane, November 7, 1870, to the present day can be set forth best by dividing this time into two periods; the first we will designate as the period of

*General and Deputy Superintendencies.*—This first period extends from the opening of the asylum to May 21, 1897. During this period a portion of the reservation of the State lands at Howard was known as "State Farm." On this section were located the State Workhouse and House of Correction, the State Almshouse and the Asylum for the Incurable Insane. The State Farm, with these named institutions, was under one general superintendent, with a deputy, so-called, at each department. During the whole of this period these superintendents, with one exception, were laymen. The following is the list of the superintendents who belonged to this first period: Burnham Wardwell, official title, Superintendent of the State Farm, previously the warden of the penitentiary in Richmond, Va., held the office from June 16, 1870, to December 22, 1870. Oliver S. Lovejoy, M. D., the only physician elected to the superintendency during this period, held office from May 10, 1871, till the autumn of 1873. Hugh B. Brockaway, previously connected with the Detroit House of Correction, held office from the fall of 1873 to December 31, 1875. Norman W. Eayers held office from January, 1876, to May 22, 1876.

Samuel L. Blaisdell held office from May 22, 1876, till the autumn of 1880. The official title of the superintendent was changed in 1877 to Superintendent of State Institutions in Cranston. At the same time the Board of Charities and Corrections was "reconstituted" by legislative enactment, which placed upon the board the "oversight, management, and control of the State Prison and Providence County Jail." The next superintendent in order was Charles H. Hunt, who came from the office of the Chief of Police of the city of Providence. He held office from November 1, 1880, until early in 1886. May 28, 1880, an act was passed by the General Assembly directing the Board of State Charities and Corrections to locate and construct accommodations for the State Reform School, the government of which was added to the duties of the board. The next in order of the superintendents was James H. Eastman, who came from the position of superintendent of the male department of the State Reform School. He held office from 1886 until his death August 22, 1907. During his term of office he had under his charge, all at the same time, the State Workhouse and House of Correction, the State Almshouse, the State Reform School and the Asylum for the Chronic Insane. His superintendency over the latter department, however, ceased in 1897, as will develop later in this history.

During the early part of the period of lay-superintendencies the medical work of the asylum was at first carried on by visiting physicians. These in the order of their service were William H. Palmer, M. D., Charles H. Leonard, M. D., George T. Perry, M. D., George F. Keene, M. D. To the latter physician the following acted at times as non-resident assistants: George E. Simpson, M. D., Harry W. Kimball, M. D., J. W. MacCaw, M. D., and George S. Machan, M. D.

The first deputy superintendent of the State Asylum was Frederick W. Perry, a layman, who held office for over ten years. From 1881, however, the resident deputies were physicians and in the order of their service were Leon C. Vinal, M. D., Edward P. Stimson, M. D., Herbert J. Pomroy, M. D., George F. Keene, M. D.

During this period the asylum had continued to grow to over seven hundred patients. At this time it was felt by the medical profession of the State, without reflecting in any manner upon the conduct of the institution by lay-superintendents, that the head of the institution should be a physician. In 1894 accordingly the General Assembly was memorialized by the Rhode Island Medical Society, through a committee appointed for the purpose, urging legislation which should authorize the placing of the institution under the charge of a physician and also separating it in local management from the other institutions of the State Farm. This resulted in an act of the General Assembly of the session of 1897, changing the



name to State Hospital for the Insane, at the same time making it "A separate institution," settling 150 acres apart for the State Hospital, and authorizing the Board of State Charities and Corrections to appoint a superintendent who should be a physician.

The second period, or that of medical superintendencies, begins with the appointment of Dr. George F. Keene as the first medical superintendent, who entered upon his duties May 21, 1897. Dr. Keene died in office, March 13, 1905. Dr. Keene had spent his whole professional life in this community, upon which he had made a deep impression on account of his distinguished abilities as a physician. As the superintendent of the State Hospital for the Insane, his untiring labors in the service of the State won the appreciation of officials, the respect of friends, of patients, and the gratitude of his charges. His whole official connection with the institutions, including his time as a visiting physician, covered a period of twenty-two consecutive years, for ten and one-half of which he was the deputy superintendent of the asylum department and for nearly eight years the superintendent of the department under its name of State Hospital for the Insane.

Dr. Keene was succeeded by Fred B. Jewett, M. D., June 16, 1905, who resigned his position April 5, 1907, and entered upon private practice in Providence. He was succeeded by Arthur H. Harrington, M. D., August 1, 1907, who still holds office (1918).

At the present time (1918) the State Hospital has a daily average of about 1,450 patients. Under the medical superintendencies a large amount of construction has been accomplished. The original wooden buildings have been replaced by architecture of a simple colonial style. Since 1897 there has been authorized by the General Assembly and also by popular vote various sums for improvement and construction which amount to over \$1,000,000. The structures which have been built are an attractive congregate dining hall, with a seating capacity for 800 patients, service buildings, capable of caring for and preparing food supplies for the institution even should the numbers of patients materially increase. A laundry building, 200 feet by 80 feet, has been erected and equipped, which will provide for the laundry work of the institution for an indefinite future.

A building known as the Reception Hospital in plan and in purpose for the reception of new and acute cases was erected and occupied May 28, 1912. This building is a separate unit of the group of hospital buildings and occupies a commanding outlook. It is 463 feet in length and has accommodations for 218 patients and 40 officers, including physicians, nurses, and domestic help. The object of this structure is to provide a department for the reception of new and acute cases of mental disease which shall be in every feature as much like a general hospital as it is possible to make such a department for mental cases. With this end in

view the building contains operating rooms, with an equipment where any major surgical operation can be performed. There is a complete hydro-therapeutic outfit for the treatment of special conditions which are met in mental cases. A training school for nurses has been established. The course in this school is three years, twenty-six months of which the pupil nurse spends at this hospital and ten months in a large general hospital with which the institution is affiliated. The school is registered and its graduates are eligible for registration.

Other constructive work has been the erection of substantial fire-proof buildings and the renovation of some of the older structures, the walls of which originally were built substantially of stone and brick. The actual capacity of the institution at the present time without crowding is 1,385 patients.

*Administrative Boards.*—The Board of State Charities and Correction was in sole administrative control until July 1, 1912. In this year the General Assembly created a board known as the Board of Control and Supply. The general functions of the latter were the purchase of all supplies and materials for the institution and the handling of all matters relating to repairs and construction. The duties which were left to the Board of State Charities and Corrections, which still remained in office, were those which related to social aspects of the work of caring for the inmates of the public institutions of the State. These two boards continued until the legislative session of 1917, when there was created a body known as the Penal and Charitable Commission. The Board of State Charities and Corrections and the Board of Control and Supply were abolished and all their functions were turned over to the Penal and Charitable Commission. At the same time the official title of this hospital was changed to that of State Hospital for Mental Diseases.

Thus for forty-eight years the Board of State Charities and Corrections carried on the work of administering the public institutions of the State, one of their important interests of which was the institution which cared for those afflicted with mental diseases. Many distinguished citizens have given their services without compensation to this work. The list is a long one and it will have to suffice here to name the chairmen of this Board in the order of their succession. The first chairman was Thomas A. Doyle; his successors were Edward D. Pearce, Thomas Coggeshall, J. C. B. Woods, James F. McCusker, Walter A. Read and George R. Lawton.

The chairman of the Board of Control and Supply during the existence of this board was William A. Schofield.

The chairman of the Penal and Charitable Commission is Jesse H. Metcalf. This commission has practically retained all of the features of organization which existed in the two boards which it succeeded.



CHAPTER XL

---

FINANCE AND BANKING







PROVIDENCE BANK

## CHAPTER XL.

### FINANCE AND BANKING.

At the founding of settlements at Portsmouth, Pawtuxet, Providence and Newport in 1638 and 1639, the Colonists were poor. The settlers on Aquidneck, however, were nominally rich as compared with those at Pawtuxet and Providence, but most of their estates had been left behind them, at Boston and in the adjoining towns, where they had acquired lands, built houses and engaged in trade. The Island settlers brought their household goods with them and had some money with which to pay for land, build houses and furnish them. They had learned, at Boston, that Indian barter for furs was a source of easy wealth and that the curing of fish, that found a ready market, was a source of fair gains, and these industries were entered upon at once. They also had a deep alluvial soil, easily enriched by the products of the sea, which brought them quick and ample rewards for their industry. The early introduction of cows, horses, goats, sheep and hogs was a source of values in table foods, and in the increase of comfortable properties, as well as the enrichment of the land. Hereby, the Island communities were laying the foundations of commerce, in the excess of production over consumption, and in the accretion of money, available for building small vessels for an infant commerce with the Indians and neighbor Colonies. Industry was thus early coining capital in the Island towns at the mouth of the Narragansett. A fair amount of money and a comfortable home were the possessions of the people of Portsmouth and Newport from their founding. The men and women were obliged to pay per acre for their lands—a restraint on land avarice and on large farm acreage. This money, paid for lands, was at once converted into the building of roads and bridges, school houses, meeting houses and other public utilities, such as they had enjoyed in the home land; and in a lesser degree at Boston, in their eight years of sojourn in the Bay Colony.

Poverty was supreme at Providence. The settlers were poor and the lands were unproductive. Land was the main asset of the people for two generations and this was not of great value, when land on the east side of the town was sold at one shilling an acre, and outside lands at six pence. The settlers were outcasts from Massachusetts Bay Colony, mostly young adventurers in a new land. The Colony whence they came treated them as banished offenders and refused them even the relations of traders. Boston would not sell tools, household furnishings, or nails and other materials for domestic uses to Providence men. The Providence men had

no money and no credit with the men of the other Colonies. They had nothing to sell and little with which to buy. They were land poor, without productive industries, sustaining no commercial, social, financial or political relations with Plymouth or Boston or Hartford, and the least possible with Newport, their nearest neighbor. One might easily suppose that Roger Williams was capable of self-support, with money to spare, but it is recorded that when Governor Winslow of Plymouth called at the Williams home, he was moved to give Mrs. Williams a pound note to meet household necessities. While Providence had a good harbor, the townsmen had nothing to sell or export.

As late as January, 1764, the General Assembly of the Colony, in a protest to the English Board of Trade, declared that "a great part is a barren soil, not worth the expense of cultivation," that the Colony hath no staple commodity for exportation, and does not raise provisions sufficient for its own consumption;" that the only articles suitable for trade with England were "some flaxseed and oil and some few ships built for sale. The total value of these exports did not exceed £5,000 sterling per annum, while our imports from Great Britain amounted to £120,000 sterling annually. At the same time it was shown that in the year 1763, 184 vessels had cleared from the port of Newport to Europe, Africa and the West Indies, and 352 were employed in the coasting trade between Georgia and Newfoundland. Thirty distilleries were engaged in converting molasses from the English or French West Indies into rum, and our commercial fleet transported it to Africa for slaves, gold dust, ivory and canewood.

Providence did have one article of import, which beginning with its earliest history, is still a source of wealth to a certain class of the people—at the outset a very respectable class—the importation of rum, brandy and wine. These consumptive articles attracted Indian barter as well as satisfied the taste of the home consumer. Rum seems to have been a staple article of commerce between the settlers and the Indians. In 1645, at Providence, it was ordered by the Proprietors that any person selling "wine or strong liquors, in *his house*," should "entertain strangers to bed and board," but any person could sell out of doors. In 1655, an order fixed the price of wine at forty-four cents a quart at retail, and all liquors, rum and brandy, at three shillings per quart. The town records of Providence give us a glimpse of the liquor trade of the town in 1655. Between June 13 and November 13 of that year, forty-four ankers of "strong waters," about 440 gallons, were brought into Providence. Partial records of liquor imports continue until 1664. In 1649 Mr. Williams was licensed "to sell a little wine or strong water to some natives in theare sickness."

The closing years of the seventeenth century and the entrance of the eighteenth introduced a new financial era in Rhode Island, at Providence and Newport. The Wanton brothers, William and John, led the way in the building and command of vessels and the lower Narragansett was lively with a young and thriving commerce. At this time the population of Aquidneck was 2,831, while that of Providence was 1,446. Between 1698 and 1708, 103 sloops, brigantines and ships had been built in the Colony, manned by 140 seamen of Rhode Island. At this time, wealth came through coasting and the West India trade by exchanging lumber, corn, butter, cheese, onions, horses, and rum, for English goods, rice, salt, molasses, flour, wines, etc., etc. Navigation was the dependence of the people and the chief source of wealth. The total population of the Colony to be fed and clothed was 7,181, of whom 1,015 were freemen with votes, and 480 black and white servants.

In 1710 Providence was under the complete control of a close corporation of one hundred and one Proprietors, the full limit of this select body. Pardon Tillinghast and others owned a few warehouse lots and wharf privileges on the east side. In 1711, Nathaniel Brown, a shipwright from Seekonk, fleeing from ecclesiastical trials, removed to Providence and began to build small ships on Weybosset Neck, a few hundred feet south of the old post office. Ships called for seamen and navigators to operate them and invited men of enterprise to engage in barter, the basis of commercial fortunes, while commerce created the merchant class which opened stores for the sale of important goods and received in return the farm products for export. Gideon Crawford was one of the pioneer merchants of Providence, settling in the town in 1687, when he was taxed 7s. 9d. Twenty years later the inventory of his estate was £1,556 1s. 2d., while his lands and houses may have exceeded this sum. His sons, William and John, succeeded to their father's business, William dying in 1720 and John in 1719. The estates of both brothers amounted to £6,831 2s. 9d. In the inventory appear three hogsheads of tobacco, two and one-half hogsheads of sugar and fourteen hogsheads of rum. The Crawfords were the first great merchants and commercial men of the town. In 1711, William Crawford and Nicholas Power were chosen to build a bridge at the Weybosset Narrows. The first shopkeeper of record at Providence was Elder Pardon Tillinghast, the inventory of whose personal estate, at his death in 1817, was £1,542 4s. 3d.

As the commercial character of Providence began to show strong features, an estrangement took place between the agricultural and the mercantile classes. The hill country of northwestern Rhode Island had drawn from Providence a body of strong, freedom loving, land loving people. Their business was in levelling forests and in cultivating the

alluvial valleys. Needing money, they flocked to the General Assembly for credits, but the Colony had no money to loan, nor had the merchants, who saw greater profits in trade than in farm mortgages in the forests of doubtful values. These people then asked for separation from Providence, and in 1731, three new towns were created, Smithfield, Gloucester and Scituate, taking from the mother town three-fourths of her territory and half of her population.

In 1710, Rhode Island had issued bills of credit for war purposes to the amount of £5,000. From that issue until 1751, the Colony had floated nine "banks," as the loans upon land security were called. The merchants of Providence and Newport stood by Governor Joseph Jenckes in his veto of a bank of £60,000, ordered by the General Assembly, but his veto was overruled by the King. In 1740, Captain Richard Arnold of Newport, in an address to the Lords of Trade, defended the issuance of paper money, confessed to outstanding bills of £340,000 and declared "if the Colony be in any respect happy and flourishing, it is paper money and a right application of it that hath rendered it so." At that very moment, the trade of the Colony, which was represented by one hundred and twenty sail, was dealing with solid materials of barter, not subject to the inflated or depleted values of paper currency. In 1750, a revolution occurred in which the merchants of Newport and Providence issued a petition to the King, that his Majesty would forbid the Colony "from emitting any more bills of credit upon loan." The occasion was the ordering of a new "bank" of £50,000 by the Lower House of the Assembly. The voice of the seventy-two merchants prevailed and Parliament forbade all bills of credit except for current expenses and the expenses of war, the liquidation of which must be met by direct tax. In 1763, at the close of the French War, gold and silver were made the only lawful money in the Colony, and a sane and safe financial policy directed by the commercial classes continued until the close of the Revolutionary War.

In 1786, again the agriculturists controlled legislation, there being at this time thirty towns represented in the two Houses of the Assembly, only two of which, Providence and Newport, were distinctly governed by the merchants. In 1785, the cry for money to relieve public and private debts was silenced by the creditor class, but in the spring of 1786, repudiation ran riot, and a General Assembly was chosen, pledged to the issuance of another batch of unprotected money. A new "bank" was created for £100,000 and it was enacted that should any creditor refuse to accept its bills in payment for debts, the debtor might secure a discharge of his obligations by depositing bills of credit, to the amount of his debt, with one of the judges of the Superior Court or the Court of Common Pleas. A panic instantly ensued among the debtor class, for the



Assembly had destroyed the values of debtor claims, by reducing them to the variable and depreciated standards of the paper currency. At the June session of the Assembly a penalty of £100 was imposed upon any one who should refuse to accept the new paper bills at their face value for articles of merchandise in the stores and markets of the towns. As a result merchants closed their stores and some left the State. Good money was scarce and food could not be bought. The commercial class in the large towns protested in vain against the injustice of the laws for the enforcement of the circulation of paper currency.

John Weeden, a poor butcher of Newport, refused a piece of paper money tendered him by John Trevett, in payment for a piece of meat. Trevett brought suit and Hon. Henry Merchant of Newport and Gen. James M. Varnum of East Greenwich, were Weeden's counsel. The contention involved the supremacy of the Supreme Court over the General Assembly. The judges who heard the case were Paul Mumford, Joseph Hazard, Thomas Tillinghast, Gilbert Devol and David Howell. The whole question of the scope and power of the two bodies, the General Assembly and the Supreme Court, was debated at length, with the result that the Court dismissed the case for want of jurisdiction. This decision was equivalent to a declaration of illegality of the paper edict and in 1789, the "bank" statute was repealed and Rhode Island took its place among the sound money States of the Confederation. The Trevett vs. Weeden case is among the celebrated causes in American jurisprudence and is treated fully in the chapter on THE JUDICIARY.

In another connection we have shown that the first ship-building and commercial operations began at Newport and that our early Colonial commerce brought the sweets of sugar cane of the West Indies to be distilled into New England rum at Newport first, and afterwards at Providence and that the rum, in its turn, was greedily sought in the African slave and Gold Coast trades. In this triangular profiteering, the South Country was a joint partner with the two larger towns of the Colony. The Brown shipyard at Providence and the associated enterprise and mercantile ability of the Crawfords brought Providence into intimate business relations with the Colonial coast-wise trade and gave promise of the utility of a new centre of trade at the north end of a great natural waterway—Providence river and Narragansett Bay. From 1734, the Colony was free from dependence on Boston for foreign goods, and then had 120 vessels of all sizes—eight in foreign trade. From the compound exploitation of New England rum and the proceeds of that profitable but iniquitous trade, a class of men sprang up in Providence, who saw in the East Indian trade a satisfactory profit and a more soul-satisfying mode of business. The people ceased to discuss their local troubles over toddy

bowls at the Mowry and Whipple taverns, or to plan political schemes at the John Smith gristmill, and now busied themselves at the wharves and warehouses on South Water street, where the Tillinghasts and Crawfords had set a new pace and a new way of financial venture. The leading family of merchants was the Brown Brothers, John, Joseph, Nicholas and Moses. Associated with them were Stephen Hopkins, Nicholas Cooke, Darius Sessions, Jebez Brown, John Jenckes, Samuel Nightingale, William Earle, Nicholas Power, Paul Allen, who directed and engaged actively in the growing trade of the town and country.

Prior to and during the period of the Revolution, the merchants of Providence took vigorous means to control the shipment of goods, the confiscation of contraband, and the adjustment of retail prices. Patriotic enterprise advanced and shaped the commercial and financial affairs of the town. In December, 1787, the Browns sent out the ship "George Washington," Captain Jonathan Donison, to Canton, with an assorted cargo, returning to Providence at the end of nineteen months and a few days with tea, silks and other oriental goods. This was the first China voyage made from this State. These goods were sold at the Brown warehouses, south of Market Square, and China silks and teas were retailed from a store in the basement of the Lieut.-Governor Elisha Brown brick mansion, one-half of which is now standing on the east side of North Main street, north of Olney street, Providence.

In 1790, it was stated that "there is a greater number of vessels belonging to this port (Providence) than to New York," and that "it is a place of more navigation than any of its size in the Union." At this date, the shipping of Providence consisted of 95 ships, 36 brigs, 45 sloops, and 20 schooners, 110 in all, of 10,590 tons, exclusive of smaller river craft. The population of this town was then 6,380 and that of the State was 68,825. Prior to this, every merchant was his own banker, credits were allowed to stand and overcrowded wallets were the possession universal of the moneyed class. Boston had experimented with a solitary bank and had found it to be a convenience to trade and a source of income to the managers. Providence is advised to establish a bank, but before touching what has become our present excellent banking system, I will say something of a singular freak financial scheme which had its day, styled the Rhode Island lottery.

A lottery was a scheme for raising money by selling tickets as chances to share in a distribution of prizes in money or other valuables. The tickets were numbered as were slips or lots on which the values of the prizes were written. A large number of the slips were blanks, having no value. The balance of the slips had the statement of the amount of money credited to each slip, some more, some less. The day of drawing of the

slips was announced and the parties holding tickets came to the drawing of the slips from a box by a person who was blindfolded, or from a wheel. Ticket number one would draw slip one, and so on down the list of tickets sold, and surprises and disappointments ruled the hour, as gains or losses were announced by the slip-crier.

The first lottery in the Colony was introduced by private persons in January, 1732-33, and was suppressed at once by the General Assembly, on the ground that by these "unlawful games, called lotteries, many people have been led into a foolish expense of money." A penalty of £500 was set against a lottery and a fine of £10 against a person holding a ticket. At that period and later, most of the governments of Europe had raised money for public purposes by lotteries, and during the Revolution a lottery was authorized by the Continental Congress to raise money for war purposes.

Eleven years after the passage of the law forbidding lotteries, public opinion as to games of chance had so changed that a lottery for the raising of £15,000 was allowed for raising funds to build Weybosset bridge at Providence. There were 5,000 tickets at £3 each, and a thousand prizes, amounting to £12,000. At the winter session of the Assembly, February, 1747-48, a lottery was granted for paving the streets of Newport. The first lottery granted was for the relief of Joseph Fox, a prisoner for debt in Newport jail, and was urged by the leading merchants of the town. In 1753, another lottery was granted to raise money for paving Newport streets, the Parade then called Queen street and Thomas street to be done first. In 1756, a lottery of £10,000 was granted to repair Fort George. In June, 1759, a lottery was granted to raise £2,000, one-half for rebuilding the Court House on Benefit street, destroyed by fire December, 1758, and the other half for restoring the books of the Public Library Company of Providence. In June, 1759, the Masonic society of "Free and Accepted Masons," of Newport, was incorporated and a lottery to raise \$2,400 was granted the society to erect the Masons' Hall, and the first public celebration of this order ever held in Rhode Island took place that year, with religious services at Trinity Church, Newport. In 1761, lotteries were granted for street paving at Newport and to commence paving, north, south and west from Weybosset bridge. In 1761, a lottery was granted for building a meeting-house in Johnston and another for raising £1,500, old tenor, to make a fishway around Pawtucket Falls, "so that fish of almost every kind, who choose fresh water at certain seasons of the year, may pass with ease." It was urged that the people above the Falls would be greatly benefitted by the access of the fish up the Blackstone river. In 1762, a

fire destroyed all the stores on Long Wharf at Newport, and a lottery was granted for the benefit of the sufferers. Another was granted to raise \$1,000 to put a steeple on St. John's Church, Providence; another for opening the sand bar which closed the entrance to the Great Salt Pond, at Block Island, thereby spoiling an excellent harbor for the fishing fleet. In 1767, a lottery was granted to raise \$2,500 to put a new steeple on Trinity Church, Newport. In 1771, a lottery was granted for building the market-house, in Market Square, Providence, the cornerstone of which was laid on Tuesday, June 8, 1773, by Nicholas Brown. Between 1770 and 1777, lotteries were granted to build a meeting-house for Baptists in Cranston, to pave Main street, Providence, to repair road in Smithfield, to build a parsonage for a Presbyterian church, Providence, to pave King street, Newport, to repair bridges in Smithfield, to repair Congregational meeting-house, Barrington, to repair Baptist meeting-house in East Greenwich, to build wharf in Warwick harbor, to pave Pelham street, Newport, to build a Presbyterian meeting-house in East Greenwich, to build a bridge in Gloucester, to finish meeting-house in Johnston, to pay for steeple and clock for St. John's Church, Providence, to repair road from Providence to Uxbridge, to repair Presbyterian meeting-house, Providence, to build Baptist church, Coventry, to Abial Brown to buy furniture for his house, to build a school-house in East Greenwich, to aid in rebuilding Greene's forge in Coventry, to build Baptist parsonage at Pawtuxet, to raise £2,000 for the First Baptist Church, Providence, to buy a lot and build a house, "to enable the said Baptist Society to carry their pious designs into execution," to reimburse Gideon Almy for the loss of his sloop "Sally," to the value of \$2,000, "being the whole what he was worth and had scraped together, by his unwearied diligence and industry, and is deprived of the means of putting himself into any way of business, to support a wife and seven children;" to repair a dam at a grist mill on the Pawtuxet river; to aid Nathaniel Stoddard, who also had a wife and seven children, for his loss of \$1,000 in one-third of the sloop "Sally;" to Jeremiah Hopkins of Coventry, a gunsmith, \$200 for tools to make guns or small arms; to raise £800 to build a bridge over the Pawtucket river to connect the towns of Smithfield and Cumberland, and so the lottery scheming went on, to build and repair churches, establish academies, build roads and bridges, for a whole century till the revision of the public laws in 1844, when the system was legislated off the statute books, as contrary to honest finance and public morals. The last lottery that was granted by the General Assembly was in 1839, when some educational scheme was allowed to raise \$9,000 a year for five years. It is an interesting and most instructive fact that more than two-thirds of the lotteries were granted to aid religious organizations.

Banking, as a financial system, was begun in Rhode Island in October, 1791, by the incorporation of the stockholders of the Providence Bank, in the town of Providence. The purposes are thus stated in the charter: "Taught by the experience of Europe and America, that well regulated banks are highly useful to society, by promoting punctuality in the performance of contracts, increasing the medium of trade, facilitating the payment of taxes, preventing the exportation of specie, furnishing for it a safe deposit, and by discount, rendering easy and expeditious the anticipation of funds on lawful interest, advancing at the same time the interests of the proprietors."

The capital stock of the Providence Bank was \$250,000, in 625 shares of \$400 each, fifty shares being reserved for the State of Rhode Island and fifty shares for the United States Treasury. Two-fifths of the stock was to be paid in specie, silver or gold, and three-fifths in United States funded debt notes. This bank is now doing business at 50 South Main street, Providence, under the name of the Providence National Bank. It began business in house now standing, No. 10 Hopkins street, city.

The second bank in Rhode Island was incorporated at Newport, called the Bank of Rhode Island, October, 1795. In June, 1800, two banks were incorporated, the Bank of Bristol at Bristol, and Washington Bank, in Westerly. The Bristol bank closed out in 1865, the Westerly bank is now the Washington Trust Co. There have been 201 banks and trust companies incorporated in Rhode Island since 1791, although a number of them never engaged in business. In 1863, the United States government authorized State banks to become National banks for a term of 20 years, and in 1864, the National Bank Act authorized banks to take on the term National and thereby to circulate United States notes and the suspension of notes of their own issue. Several banks went into liquidation in 1865, and since 1867, several others have merged with trust companies.

The Rhode Island Hospital Trust Company was the first trust organization in Rhode Island, commencing business in an office on South Main street, Providence, January 1, 1868. There are now (1919) fourteen trust companies in the State. The largest is the Industrial Trust Company, with assets of \$72,205,764.14. The Rhode Island Hospital Trust has assets of \$59,846,827.50. The Providence Clearing House reported the total exchanges of Providence banks in 1917 to be \$547,800,000.00.

There are now only three State banks—High Street, Westminster and Columbus Exchange, Providence. Their total resources are \$4,542,839.05. There are fifteen savings banks, with 163,557 depositors and \$93,000,000 deposits, with an average of about \$600 to the credit of each

depositor. The Providence Institution for Savings has 54,000 depositors with deposits of \$30,387,000. Rhode Island has seventeen National banks, with a capital of \$5,670,000. The thirteen trust companies have a cash capital of \$8,522,000; a surplus of \$9,609,500; undivided earnings, \$1,208,153; deposits \$150,427,000 with total resources of \$174,070,458. The total resources of all the banking institutions, State, National and trust, amount to \$283,972,000.

In general, it may be stated that for a century from the first settlement, the founders of the towns of Providence Plantations were very poor, and their sole reliance was agriculture. For the same period, the founders of the towns in the south part of the Colony were well-to-do and prosperous, engaging in agriculture, ship-building and commerce.

From 1730 to 1800, the northern towns added to their agricultural operations the elements of commerce, ship-building and foreign trade, making Providence and Newport rivals in industries and commerce, especially in alcohol, distilleries and the African slave and gold trade. The nineteenth century witnessed the entrance and development of manufactures, to the advancement of which the water power of northern Rhode Island ministered. The increase of wealth and population stimulated agriculture and the tonnage of ship-building. Providence soon surpassed Newport in wealth and population and as a port of entry and departure. The construction of rail communication with Boston, Worcester and New York was the great motor of interchange in trade from 1840 onward, and the reduction of commerce to constantly decreasing values. Newport and the South Country had lost their financial leadership during the Revolutionary War, and have never recovered their supremacy. The great industries that advanced Providence to industrial and financial supremacy were the manufactures of cotton and woolen goods, iron and steel products and jewelry. Meanwhile, agriculture has been reduced to a minimum, as labor finds its best returns in the factories that produce the goods of world demand. The prompt utilization of steam and electric power, supplementary to our vast water-power, has made northern Rhode Island a vast machine shop, with such coördinate industries and occupations as minister to and protect its operations and products. A purely industrial State, its wealth aggregates in town and city valuations at least \$800,000,000, while the real estate indicates at least a fifty per cent. increase above that sum, giving to the 600,000 people of the State an average per capita wealth of \$2,000—the richest community of its size in the world. Meanwhile, Newport and the South Country, leaders in finance for a century and more, have become the homes of wealth, and of cosmopolitan culture and social functions.

## CHAPTER XLI

---

### SOME RHODE ISLAND LANDMARKS









IVES HOUSE, BUILT 1811



GOLDEN BALL INN, BENEFIT STREET; NOW MANSION HOUSE

## CHAPTER XLI.

### SOME RHODE ISLAND LANDMARKS.

Taverns, inns or ordinaries, were words used interchangeably in early New England to designate public houses where meals, liquors and lodgings could be obtained at reasonable prices. These places ranged from a single room with a bar, a chair and a hard board bed, to larger houses, with accommodations for a number of persons of both sexes, where meals and comfortable lodgings could be had, with a bar to supply all tastes with liquors of all grades. Taverns existed in England from the thirteenth century, and crossed the water with the Pilgrim and Puritan founders. The Colonies licensed tavern keepers and made laws as to the conduct of the business. Plymouth Colony forbade the tavern keeper or any of his patrons to "drinck drunck" themselves in the tavern, and allowed the customers only "an hower at one tyme" to stay at his drinks. The law defined drunkenness in a person, when he "lisps or falters in his speech, or that staggers in his going, or that vomits by reason of drinking." If fines were not paid, the guilty party was set in the town stocks. Children and servants were not allowed to drink at taverns, and tavern keepers were not allowed to draw any liquors on the Lord's Day, except for the sick. Profane singing, dancing and revelling were forbidden, and the keeper must not sell poor beer, nor could he sell at all to an Indian. Townsmen were appointed to see that the liquor laws were enforced. In the Bay Colony, the use of tobacco was forbidden.

By the statutes of 1647, Rhode Island Colony, "No Tavern, Alehouse or Victualling House shall be kept throwout the whole Colonie without license," on a penalty of 20 shillings, to be given to "the use of the poore." Each town had the right to give or refuse licenses as to the sale of liquor, forbidding absolutely in taverns such games as "Carding, Dicing, Slide, Groat, &c," and "not to suffer any Townsman to remeine tipling therein for one hours space." Drunkenness was forbidden throughout the Colony, at the expense of fines and the public stocks. An ordinance of 1650 allowed any one to sell liquor "with out doores," but "if any man sell wine or strong Liquors in his house, he shall also entertain strangers to bed and board." In 1655, at a town meeting in Providence, the sale of all liquors to Indians was absolutely forbidden under a penalty of £6, one-half to the informer.

The first tavern in Rhode Island was licensed to William Baulston, at Portsmouth, in 1638. The order reads that "Will Balston shall erect and sett up a howse of entertainment for Strangers, and also to brew Beare

and to sell wines and strong waters and such necessary provisions as may be useful in any kind." This is the first liquor law of Rhode Island. In 1654, "It was ordered that each Towne doe forthwith apoynt or license one or two howses for ye entertainment of strangers," to have the sole right to "retaille either wine, beere, or strong liquers." These places were styled "alehowses."

The first tavern in Providence was built by Roger Mowry, about 1653, at the north end of the town, on what is now Abbott street. In 1655, Mr. Mowry was appointed to keep a house of entertainment. It was used for town meetings and as a place for worship and religious services. This tavern was also the club house of the town, and all important social functions as well as political caucuses were held at Mowry's. It was the news centre, and the forum for debate of all local and Colonial issues. The tavern keeper was presumed to be a Solon in wisdom, a Machiavelli in politics, and a Sphinx in local scandals. The tavern signboard bore local notices of births, marriages and deaths, town meetings, courts, things lost or stolen, etc., etc., and a visit to the tavern for the news, a glass of toddy and a friendly meet, was a part of the daily routine.

John Whipple, Epenetus Olney and William Turpin were the chief tavern keepers of Providence, before the building of the county court house in 1729. Turpin was a schoolmaster for a brief day, the first of record in the town, and left teaching to become the leading landlord of Providence and a popular town official. The Turpin Inn, on the west side of the "Towne Streete," just north of Hewes street, was the largest house in town until the court house was built, and was the meeting place of the General Assembly and the county courts before 1730. This Inn had a high roof, heavy projecting eaves, dormer windows, and a huge stone chimney. The "great room" was used by the Assembly, the courts, and as a dance hall. Immense posts at each corner of the room supported the heavy oak beams around the room, and the summer, which supported the center of the ceiling. Later tavern keepers were Major Thomas Fenner, Wm. Smith, Jas. Olney, Wm. Smith, and Silvanus Scott, all of whom sold alcoholic drinks to the best men, and women, too, of the town. It can be easily seen that the Providence tavern of the early day was a most important institution in educating and directing the life of the people.

The occupations of the early settlers interest us. William Carpenter, the first comer at Providence and the first settler at Pawtuxet, was a house carpenter by trade, and built a house for William Harris before 1671, as Howlong (Harris) Fenner wrote, "Old mr William Carpenter built the house for my father by my father's meddow and my father settled down by his meddow." The tools of that trade of that day were a narrow axe, a broad axe, cross-cut saw, tennon saws, clevises, pins, sledge

hammer, augurs, chisels, gouges, drawing knives, spokeshaves, planes, wimble bits, adze.

In 1662, one Hackleton was allowed to burn lime from a limestone quarry at what is now Lime Rock, Indian *Scoakequanoisett*. Lime was made from shells as early as 1648.

John Smith, father and son, were the first millers to grind grain at Providence. Another John Smith was a mason, moving to Warwick about 1655; his son John and grandson John were also masons.

Pardon Tillinghast was a cooper by trade, and a shop keeper by business. He established the first wharf property at Providence, on the river, west of Transit street. His son John was a cooper.

Gregory Dexter was a printer in London, coming to Providence about 1644. Here he was a printer, a stationer, a preacher, and a town officer. In 1681, Dexter and Tillinghast disputed with Obadiah Holmes, of Newport, whether "repenting believing Baptized Disciples are visible members of Christ's body and have right to Fellowship, breaking of bread and prayer." Holmes affirmed, Dexter denied.

Stephen Harding of Providence, his two sons and a grandson, were blacksmiths. John Olney was a blacksmith, and some of his forge work is a marvel of the old-time artistic skill of iron-workers.

Eleazer Whipple was a house carpenter, and built the south end of the Whipple house at Louisquisset.

Thomas Olney, Jr., was a tanner, the business being carried on in the Moshassuck Valley, under Stampers hill.

Joseph Jenckes came to Pawtucket in 1655, built a house and forge to work an iron ore found near the Falls. He made iron tools and utensils needed in the towns nearby.

John Greene, Sen., was accounted a surgeon, both in England and in Rhode Island, but his inventory shows no evidence of that profession. His son, John Greene, Jr., had a grist mill, in which he ground corn at two quarts to a bushel. He called his home "Greene Hole," at Occupassua-tuxet. He was a commissioner twelve years, general recorder three, solicitor one, attorney-general four, warden one, an assistant twenty-five, deputy five, major for the Main seven, and deputy governor eleven years.

Nathaniel Browne, a grandson of John Browne, of Sowams, established a shipyard on the south side of Weybosset Neck in 1711. He had built small sloops in Bullock's Cove, Barrington, before coming to Providence.

In November, 1687, Gideon Crawford, a Scotchman, was given liberty to "reside and here to follow his way of dealing in goods." Mr. Crawford thus became the first merchant to open an orderly trade at Providence.

William Austin was a weaver, and in 1674, Moses Lippitt was apprenticed to him to learn the "art and trade."

Captain John Jenckes kept drugs in 1720, and Dr. John Jones was the first physician of record.

Prices of commodities in 1670, were as follows: Pork 3d. per lb.; peas 3s. 6d. per bush.; wheat 5s. per bush.; wool 12d. per lb.; butter 6d. per lb.; corn 3s. per bush.; oats, 2s. 3d. per bush.; and that 40s. of New England currency was equal to 30s. English sterling.

In 1650, land at Providence in the home shares was rated at 1 shilling an acre and outlands at 6 pence per acre. In 1668, a Colony tax was levied. Providence was taxed £10 and Aquidneck £208. Oxen were valued at £4, cows £3, horses £3, and sheep 4s. each.

In May, 1681, riding on a gallop on the "Towne Street," between the houses of John Whipple at Star street and Nicholas Tillinghast, Transit street, was forbidden.

At the June town meeting in Providence in 1693, a town sergeant and constable were elected, but refused to serve. Two later town meetings met, elected, and the men chosen declined office. The town then decided "to leave the matter to issue as it may."

The first jail in Providence, erected in 1699, stood on a lot facing the "Towne Street," on Stampers Hill, near the present junction of North Main and Benefit streets, and cost £21, 17. Its size was 10x12 feet. The next jail was built in Meeting street, then called Jail lane.

The North Burial Ground was set apart in 1700 "for a training field, burying ground and other public uses." Prior to this time family burial grounds were set apart in some part of the home lots, usually near the houses of the proprietors. The Pardon Tillinghast private burial ground is the only survivor of the burial places of the residents on the "Towne Streete," the Chad Browne, the Richard Waterman, and the Roger Williams grounds having been cleared of monuments and remnants since 1860. Rev. Dr. Ezra Stiles of Newport, was the greatest knowledge-hunter of America of his day, and in his "Diary" he tells of his search for the grave of Roger Williams. We quote:

1772. *April 30*: "Rode to Providence; visited the Grave of the famous Mr. Roger Williams (once Pastor at Salem)—there is no inscribed stone or Monument at the Grave. He was buried about ten rods back from the Spring in the main street, called Williams Spring to this day; nigh to which I saw the spot where his house stood. His Grave is on the side of the hill in the lot adjoining the 14 Acre Lot lately purchased by the Congregational Church for a parsonage; it is I should Judge 20 or 25 Rods South East from the Church of England.

1735. *Oct. 6*: At Providence Oct. 6, I visited the Place of Roger Williams Landing, House, Spring & Grave. There is some uncertainty



as to the last, altho' the grave may be ascertained within *ten* rods. Ten or a dozen years ago the To. of Prov. voted to erect a Monument upon his Grave and appointed a Committee, Gov. Hopkins, D. Gov. Sessions, Mr. Moses Brown & present Lt. Gov. Bowen, who examined the two places, traditions and Evidences. I now conversed with Gov. Bowen and Mr. Brown. All Tradition agrees that he was buried at his own Home Lot & near his own Dwelling house, whose cellar I saw. Gov. Hopkins was of the opinion it was the Grave at the North corner of the House within two paces; the others rather doubtful, whether it was not ten Rods S. E. on a lot afterwards Rev. Mr. Cottons. It has been the general idea that it was by the cellar, & Strangers & I myself years ago have been shewn these Graves and one as for Roger Williams; on the contrary an aged Mr. Brown, living out of Providence said to the Committee he well remembered R. Wms Death and Funeral & that he was buried under Arms; & that altho' the sd. Brown was not present at the Funeral yet he knew well that the Grave was in that part of the lot which is ten Rds. S. E. from Dwelling House on lot afterwards Mr. Cottons & afterwards Dr. Bowens. Old Dr. Bowen that lived on the Spot asserted the Grave in his Lot. He died phps ten years ago aet. 80 circa.

Roger Williams must have died about 1685 or 1686. Moses Brown, a very sensible man, told me that the only Evid. of Time of his Death was, that an entry in ye Records one year he was alive, and within a year after he is spoken of in the Records as deceased. Oliver Whipple Esq. formerly lived at Provid. & tells me (Oct. 4) that Dr. Bowen & others had often shewn him the place of the Grave on sd Dr's Lot. I viewed the spot;—there is no Appearance of a Grave. A Niece of R. Wms is buried by the House.

Ruins of R. Williams Dwellig House and Cellar grown over with Barbary Bushes in 1785. With five Graves near N. W. Corner, one of which only has Stones inscribed, viz., Patience Ashtons. (grand-daughter of R. W.).

The diet of the first century was limited to home products, fish, and wild game. Butter and cheese were luxuries. Fruit was not common, except the wild berries of the forests. Rum, brandy, wine, beer, and a little chocolate, were in use among the well-to-do. At a commencement dinner at Harvard, in 1703, four barrels of beer, one of cider and eighteen gallons of wine were served.

The white potato was introduced before 1700 from the Bermudas. Turnips, onions, carrots and parsnips were early in use. Honey was common. Apple and mince pies were popular, as were Indian puddings and baked beans with pork, all cooked in the old-style brick ovens, adjoining the great fireplace.

Tobacco was an Indian weed, was cultivated by men and was used to cure the toothache to which the natives were subject, and as a stimulant. Connecticut prohibited its use to any one under 21 years except on a physician's order. No one could use it in the street, or the fields or

the woods, except on a ten-mile journey or at dinner. Massachusetts also forbade the use of tobacco and little was used even in chewing or in snuff-taking. In 1698, Ephraim Carpenter had 313 pounds of tobacco at 3d. per pound. It is reported that a ton of tobacco was exported to Newfoundland by William Almy. Weeden writes that the farmers raised it in quantities of 100 to 400 pounds. In 1766, Rhode Island raised great quantities of tobacco for the West India trade. Nicholas Brown & Co. shipped 75,000 pounds, D. Jenckes & Son 45,000 pounds, and other parties 35,000 pounds, consigned to Esek Hopkins. In 1767 there was in store, in Providence, 266,000 pounds of tobacco, waiting a market. Prior to this date the father of Gilbert Stuart manufactured snuff and probably pressed tobacco for chewing at the mill that he built and operated in North Kingstown. The old snuff mill is still standing and the house in which the great portrait painter was born in 1756. In 1761, James Lucena, a Portuguese, was granted the right for ten years to manufacture soap, like that made in Castile, Spain.

The oldest streets of Providence still give currency to the names of the founders and early settlers. Wickenden street bears the name of William Wickenden, said to have been an associate of Chad Browne as a Baptist minister. Power street was named for Nicholas Power, and Williams street for Roger Williams. Arnold street preserves the surname of Christopher Arnold, and James street, the given name of James Arnold. John street takes its name from John Innes Clarke. Transit street recalls the first observation of Venus, made in Providence, June 3, 1769, by Mr. Joseph Brown, assisted by Governor Stephen Hopkins and Prof. Dr. Benjamin West. The result established the latitude of Providence to be  $41^{\circ} 50' 41''$  North. The longitude was fixed at  $71^{\circ} 16'$  West from Greenwich. Dr. Stiles arrived at the same results at Newport. Crawford street bears the name of the distinguished merchant, William Crawford. Charles Field was named for a grandson of Thomas Field. Hopkins street has the Governor Stephen Hopkins house as its chief attraction, with the house in which the first bank of Providence was established nearly opposite, in 1791. College street, originally Hanover street, connects the college with the town. Market Square took its name from the market-house, built by Joseph Brown, 1773. Waterman street takes its name from Richard Waterman, a founder. Angell street bears the name of Thomas Angell, a companion of Roger Williams, and Thomas street preserves his first name. Steeple street points to the lofty spire of the First Baptist Church. Meeting street, at first Jail Lane, locates the Friends Meeting House, 1725-1727. Bowen street bears the honored name of Bowens, of several generations. Church street adjoins St. John's Episcopal Church property. Benefit street opened up opportunities for



homes and the growth of the town in a most deservable section. Dexter's Lane, now Olney street, was named for Gregory Dexter, the first printer of Providence. It was changed to Olney street in honor of the many families of that name on Stampers Hill. Stampers street and Hill were named from the stamp mill on the hill on the Moshassuck river. Prospect street suggests the wide and fine horizons visible from its summit. Smith street bears the name of John Smith, father and son, the first millers of Providence. Camp street led the way to the French camp and Rochambeau avenue bears the name of the French commander, who with his troops wintered in Providence on the hill, east of North Main street, north of the avenue and west of Hope street. Canal street was named for the terminal of the Providence and Worcester canal.

On the west side of the Providence river, crossing the bridge at Market square we enter Westminster street, an *importation from England* to dignify the new town that was to be set up on the west side, in 1770. Failing to create a new town, the people preserved the name in the street. Weybosset street is pure Indian and has nothing in it of the call of kine at milking time. The word means "stepping stones." This street is a small section of "The Pequot Trail," which is easily traceable from Boston, through Attleboro, Pawtucket, Providence via Weybosset and Broad streets to Pawtuxet and thence through Old Warwick, Greenwich, the Kingstowns, Westerly and the Shore Road of Connecticut to New York. The wading place at Providence at low tide was from the foot of Steeple street to a point now covered by the new Hospital Trust Company building.

The Puritan of New England set his heart as a flint against the theatre and theatrical doings. He regarded it as a creature born of Satan—his birthplace Inferno. More than a century passed before the theatre or its managers dared to trespass on the free but sacred soil of Rhode Island. All sorts of isms could play their parts on our Colonial stage, but the drama was conscientiously excluded. The drama was first tried out in this Colony, at Newport, by a Virginia company, with David Douglass as manager, in the early summer of 1762.

After a few performances in Newport the company visited Providence, and opened a theatre in Meeting street, east of Benefit street, near the cadet gun-house and alarm-post. The edifice was little better than a barn, but it was visited by the *élite* of the town, and also by many visitors from Boston and other places, who expressed themselves highly pleased with the performances. The opening night was about the first of July. A printing-press was established in town just at this time, and the first articles printed were play-bills, and a hand-bill headed "Moro Castle taken by storm."

Mr. Douglass did not long enjoy unmolested the privilege of delivering "dissertations" at his "Histrionic Academy" in Providence. He had opened it without asking leave of the authorities, at which disrespectful conduct many of the citizens were offended, and, at a town-meeting on the 19th of July, 1762, specially called by warrant at the request of a number of freemen of the town, Daniel Jenckes, Esq., moderator, it was voted and resolved that the actors should not be permitted to exhibit stage-plays, and that the deputies of the town should be instructed to make application to the General Assembly at their next session to have an act made for suppressing all kinds of stage-plays, or theatrical shows within the colony. The actors disregarding the town vote, as in Newport, continued to perform regularly; which conduct so incensed the opponents of the drama that they drew up a petition to the General Assembly, praying the immediate suppression of all theatrical entertainments. The objections which these good people assigned for their hostility to the theatre may be learned from the original petition:

*To the Honourable General Assembly of the Colony of Rhode Island, now sitting at East Greenwich, Aug. 23d, 1762:*

The petition of us, the subscribers, inhabitants of the County of Providence, humbly sheweth that a number of stage-players have lately appeared, and a play-house has lately been built in the town of Providence, that the inhabitants of said town being legally called by warrant did, at their late town meeting, by a large majority, pass a vote that no stage-plays be acted in said town; yet the actors, in defiance of said vote, and in defiance of the public authority of said town have begun, and are now daily continuing to exhibit stage-plays and other theatrical performances, which has been, and still is, the occasion of great uneasiness to many people in this Colony, but most especially to your Honours' petitioners in this county, humbly conceiving that so expensive amusements and idle diversions cannot be of any good tendency among us, especially at this time, when this Colony as well as others is labouring under the grievous calamity of an uncommon drought, and very great scarcity of hay and provisions.

The population of Providence at that time was about 4,000, and the number of male petitioners was 405, including John Graves, Samuel Winsor, Joseph Snow, Edward Mitchell and Joseph Winsor, ministers and elders of the churches in town. The petition was presented to the General Assembly on the 24th of August, and a committee consisting of Captain Benjamin Groome and William Potter from the lower House, with Joseph Harris from the upper House, was appointed to prepare an act on the model of one which had passed the Massachusetts Legislature. It was reported the next day to the Assembly, who instantly adopted it.

At that time party politics ran high, and, the suppression of theatrical entertainments being made an issue, the dominant party advocated the

measure with so much violence that no opposition could withstand them. The act was pervaded by a rancorous spirit, and its severity contributed to make it inoperative in after years. The Massachusetts act imposed a penalty of £20 for each day's letting of a building for the representation of plays, and on the actor a penalty of £5 for playing when more than twenty persons were congregated together. The Rhode Island law imposed a penalty of £50 for each day's letting of a building for the representation of plays, and £100 on the actor who played. The facilities for procuring convictions were numerous. The prosecutor could use as witnesses the spectators, who incurred severe penalties if they should refuse to give evidence; and he also received half of the penalty after conviction. Thus if ten actors should perform in a play, the informer's share of the spoils would be £500.

After the passage of the act, Paul Tew, the sheriff of the county, brought a copy from the Assembly, and attended the theatre with it in his pocket; and, after the performance was finished, he drew it forth, and read it to the audience. Of course plays were now at an end in Providence and Newport, but the comedians continued to play in other colonies till Congress recommended the suspension of all amusements of a public nature. The business of the theatres throughout the country was at once destroyed, and the players were forced to betake themselves to the West Indies, or to remain in retirement until the end of the war.

Tradition recites that before the passage of the act by the Rhode Island Legislature, by which stage plays were declared unlawful, the enemies of the drama, impatient at the delay of the law, took upon themselves to abate the theatre as a nuisance; but their intentions were frustrated by the energetic conduct of John Brown, the most prominent citizen of the town, who, with the assistance of some friends, having drawn the cannon from the neighboring gun-house threatened to fire upon the trespassers if they should commit any violence. This timely action intimidated the fanatics, who withdrew without executing their purpose, although they soon afterwards enjoyed a triumph when the theatre was closed by the legislative enactment.

Before the Revolution there prevailed many customs which, if revived at the present day, would occasion surprise. The entrance to the boxes was always by the stage door, and gentlemen passing to them were in the habit of stopping upon the stage, mingling with the performers behind the scenes, obstructing the actors, and annoying the actresses with their attentions. In some theatres they actually had seats on the stage itself. On the 31st of December, 1761, there appeared in a New York newspaper this notice, inserted by Mr. Douglass: "Complaints have been made that a number of gentlemen crowd the stage, and very much interrupt the per-

formances; and, as it is impossible the actors should do that justice to their parts they otherwise would, it will be taken as a particular favour if no gentleman will be at the stage door unless he has previously secured himself a place in either the stage, or upper boxes."

About a fortnight later the manager, advertising the tragedy of "Romeo and Juliet," with the funeral procession of *Juliet* to the tomb of the Capulets, appends to the bill the following note: "That the procession may be conducted with necessary decorum, we must renew our application to the gentlemen to give us the entire use of the stage."

The close proximity of the boxes to the stage is indicated by an advertisement which appeared in the same paper on the 3d of May, 1762, directly after a benefit for a charity school:

A PISTOLE REWARD will be given to whoever can discover the person who was so very rude as to throw eggs from the gallery upon the stage last Monday, by which the clothes of some ladies and gentlemen in the boxes were spoiled, and the performance in some measure interrupted.

DAVID DOUGLASS.

Upon the return of the actors at the restoration of peace, but few attempts were made to renew the custom of passing upon the stage.

As the ladies used to complain of the partiality of the manager in the assignment of particular seats, the bills announced not only the hour of beginning the performances, but also the hour at which the doors would be opened for the admission of servants to secure seats for their masters. At about six o'clock on the nights of performance the servants purchased the tickets, chose the most desirable seats, and occupied them until the coming of their employers with their families, when they vacated them, and retired to their homes, or to the upper circle. Thus the theatre at the rising of the curtain usually presented a variegated appearance, with numerous black serving-men retaining seats for late comers, in close proximity to the belles of the day.

The actors played only twice a week, a season in a town of a few thousand inhabitants comprising generally twenty-four nights, at the conclusion of which each of the chief performers took a benefit, and performances were given for the benefit of two or three of the inferior actors collectively, and lastly for some public charity.

At the close of the Revolutionary War, the reaction came in favor of a classic theatre in Providence in a revival of the drama of Elizabeth's day. The families who had originally established the theatre in Providence were wealthy and influential, and felt bound to bestow a liberal patronage on those whom they had encouraged to come here, and who catered for their amusement, and consequently they frequently attended

the theatre. The proprietors owned boxes in which their families had regular seats. Many others, following the example of the leaders of fashion, often visited it, and thus it seldom presented an empty appearance. The price of admission being high, the rougher inhabitants of the town were in a measure excluded, and the audience was orderly, quiet and polite. Then the term "dress circle" was no unmeaning name. The ladies and gentlemen of the town, the Corlisses, the Nightingales, the Halseys, the Goddards, and others, came in their carriages, and entered the boxes with powdered heads, and dressed in the stately costume of the period. Between the acts their liveried servants entered the circles, bearing trays laden with wines and sherbets, and served them to their masters and mistresses. These refreshments were procured at a small bar or refectory attached to the theatre. Thus the theatre was made the scene of fashionable reunion, the place of full dress, of elegant demeanour, and of polite intercourse. In those days there were no concerts, no lectures, no panoramas, and no Ethiopian serenaders to rival the attractions of the drama, and, as the facilities for communication with the large cities were few, the citizens of the town were compelled to rely upon their own resources for recreation. Hence the theatre came to be the focus at which the beauty, fashion and intelligence of Providence regularly met.

Mr. and Mrs. Harper were the popular managers of the Providence theatre for several years after 1807. Drury Lane, London, contributed plays and artists. Certain occasions always brought good audiences to the theatre. These were Independence Day, Commencement Day, Training Day and, during Mr. Harper's residence in Providence, St. John's Day. The manager and several of his company were Freemasons, and on the occurrence of their benefits or of the annual festival of the order, the fraternity attended the performances in large numbers. The programmes then announced that the entertainments were "under the patronage of the most worshipful Grand Master of the most ancient and honourable fraternity of Free and Accepted Masons of the State of Rhode Island."

About the year 1805, the following notice was appended to the playbills: "It is earnestly requested that no person will carry a lighted cigar into any part of the theatre, or attempt to renew the very dangerous practice of smoking, either in the lobbies, or in the presence of the audience." The patrons were in the habit of leaving their seats during the intermissions to obtain refreshments, and of promenading the lobbies with lighted cigars. As the lobbies were small, and the doors to the auditorium were open, the smoke penetrated within, and annoyed the occupants of seats. Sometimes indeed lads would bring cigars into the gallery and other parts of the house, but that practice never prevailed to a great extent. At

this time there was much fear in the neighborhood that the theatre would take fire, and certain reports concerning the peril to which the building was exposed impelled the manager to take all the precautions requisite for its safety.

Similar requests in regard to smoking appeared about this time in other towns, and long afterwards formed a regular part of theatrical bills. The manners of Americans in general were then unpolished, and, at promiscuous public assemblies, indecorous to a disgraceful degree. Mr. Jansen, in his "Stranger in America," a very severe book on this country, published in 1807, reprobates in the strongest terms the behavior of the audiences in our theatres. His censure was applicable to those in southern cities.

Whenever the company was rather deficient in talent, or when from the caprice of the public, or from the excessive heat of the weather the audiences became very small, Mr. Harper would find himself unable to remunerate his company so well as he wished. During these disastrous periods they were sore pressed to make a subsistence, and it is said that some of them actually suffered from hunger. It is related that at one of these extremely severe times Kenney, the "first old man" of the company, went into Major McLane's Coffee House at about eleven o'clock in the forenoon, that being the hour at which it was the custom of the merchants to assemble for a lunch and a brief moment of conversation, and, approaching a group of gentlemen, addressed Col. Ephraim Bowen, who sat among them, and asked if he knew of any one who had need of a set of teeth. The Colonel expressing surprise at the inquiry, Mr. Kenney remarked that he had a very good set of his own to dispose of, having no use for them. The gentleman commiserating his necessitous condition, at once provided him with a dinner, and made him a substantial present. Kenney was very tall, and generally wore dove-colored clothes. He was liked by the public, who sometimes forgot that their favorites needed their attention, but when reminded of their claims, always endeavored to atone for the remissions of the past by increased liberality.

A death in any of the principal families would seriously affect the attendance at the theatre. On the 19th of September, 1808, the following notice was placarded in the town:

#### THEATRE POSTPONEMENT.

The much lamented death of the Hon. Judge Bourne, of Bristol, whose funeral is this day attended by his numerous friends and connections, imposes on Mr. and Mrs. Claude the painful necessity of postponing the Entertainments announced for this Evening, until Wednesday Evening, Sept. 21, when the performance will positively take place.

Monday, Sept. 19.



Paul Allen, the popular poet of Providence of a century ago, thus eulogized the drama of the day:

"All who, with cynical contempt, refuse  
And shun all commerce with the tragic muse,  
Have yet to learn (though many a comic scene  
On this eventful stage may intervene)  
That soon the hour of fond delusion's past,  
And life is but a tragedy at last.  
Search nature through, and tragedy appears  
In every shape; the husband's, widow's tears;  
The orphan of a mother's care bereft,  
To want, to pride, to griping guardians left;  
The wretched beggar, whose unsheltered head  
Is white with snows by seventy winters shed,  
Beholds the 'wildering tempest round him roar,  
And knocks at wealth's inhospitable door;—  
These dire examples show in nature's plan  
How deeply tragic is the life of man!  
We copy life, and show by transcript fair  
The melancholy picture, *what we are*.  
Whatever grief the drama has in store,  
The Earth, that stage of life, abounds with more.  
Not hoarding Av'rice, now with sordid views,  
Invokes assistance from the tragic muse  
To comfort those oppress'd with want or care,  
The many evils life is doomed to bear;  
To flush the cheek of sorrow with delight,  
This mimic tragedy appears to-night.  
Come then, ye noble souls, whose hearts can feel,  
O tender sympathy, thy holy zeal!  
Assist our common labours for relief,  
And kindle sunshine on the face of grief!  
Then, when returning from dramatic woes,  
Your heads shall press the pillows of repose—  
Soft as yon moonbeams slumbering on the cloud,  
Dreams of delight shall every sense enshroud."

The inventory of the estate of Adam Mott, of Aquidneck, 1661, interests us as it shows a farmer's possessions, indoors and out, of that day: four oxen, £28; five cows and one bull, £30; one horse, one mare and colt, £36; thirty-two ewes, two rams, £32; six swine, £4. Wearing clothes, books, two suits, two doublets and breeches, one gown of gray cloth, and every day clothes, £11; four yards Kersey, £1; eight pair stockings, £1 12s.; one feather bed and furniture, £6; various beds not included; one brass kettle, £1; six pewter dishes (14 pounds), one quart, two pint pots, £1 6s.; iron pots, pans, etc., £3 14s.; seven pair sheets, two tablecloths, six napkins, pillowbers, £4; two tables, one joint stool and chair, £1 14s.; one cart and plow, two chairs, £3 10s.; one hoe and axe and two scythes, 10s. And all this expresses the values in animals, tools, personal and household belongings of a comfortable Rhode Island farmer, two and a half centuries ago, amounting to £371 6s.



At Providence, John Smith (2), the miller, dying in 1682, leaves a personal estate, the inventory of which occupies three pages in Vol. VI., Early Records of Providence, and foots £90 1s. 9d.

The inventory is followed by that of the personal estate of William Harris of Pawtuxet, which occupies ten pages of the Early Records. Both are interesting as showing the particularity of the appraisors in itemizing and recording values of fourpence and sixpence, and in noting articles, which, in our day, would be thrown into the dump.

The Smith inventory rates his "Corne Mill with ye house over it," etc., at £40, and one-seventh part of "the Saw Mill adjoyneing to the Corne Mill with the old Millstone yt lyeth by" at £3 10s. "An old Bible Some lost and some torne" was valued at 9d.; "an old Bridle" 6d.; two guns are valued at £1 1s., while a brass kettle stands at £2 10s. Five horses are rated at £5 5s. at Providence, when three horses at Aquidneck stood at £36. We look in vain for the inventory of Roger Williams. He became very poor and spent his last years at the home of his son Daniel. His burial place was on his son's home lot, north of Bowen street and east of Benefit.

The Harris inventory is a study in household economy and prudent living. Among the many "Jts" are brass kettles, copper candlesticks and "Porenger," a "linn bath & ye worme belong to it," iron pots and "pott hookes," a "tramell," bellows, tongs, fire pan, a "curbine belt and hookes to it," basons, "old pottengers," "pewter pottle pot," "tankers pint pott without a lid," "a pewter siringe," "3 Alkemie spoons," "a pewter chamber pot," "an earthen pipkin," value 1 penny, "wooden bottles and bowles," a "New Kenmill," 6 trenchers, 2 "Chaires," a "payre of Stilliards & a poyse," "Shootooles," paid of pincers, a pair of nippers, a "Portmantium," a pistoll, "A Tinn Tunnill," "2 barrills of winter Sidar and 2 barrills of summer Sidar with ye barrills" valued at 28 shillings, a warming pan, "A Gray maare & a Coult running in Pawtuxet woodes," "a vallian," "Bucherrum," etc., etc. Mr. Harris had the most valuable collection of standard works of any one in the Colony, probably fifty volumes in all; among which were two Bibles, a Dictionary, several law books, Cookes Commentary on Littleton, medical and theological works of the day, including "Lambaths Preambulations." Eight volumes of law books loaned to John Whipple were rated at £2 10s. He was generous in the use of his library, as Mary Burden had one Bible, Howlong Harris had six, Francis Brinley of Newport, two, and John Whipple, six. Thomas Olney, Sen., tanner, had, in addition to household utensils, dry hides valued at £25, "All ye Kittchen, one Bible 4s., 3 old peeces of Bibles in ye Parlor 2s. and Att Tho. Olneys house 3 Bookes namely Ainsworth's Anotations, A Concordance, & fishers Ashford Dispute."

Resolved Waterman had no books, not even a Bible. John Whipple had none, neither did William Carpenter of Pawtuxet; in fact the absence of books and especially Bibles is noteworthy in the inventories up to and later than 1725. Epenetus Olney, who died in 1698, had an "old Bible a Testament & some other small bookes" valued at 4s. Abadiah Browne's long inventory includes "one bible and other books," 11s. 6d. Arthur Fenner who died in 1703, left a large personal estate of £160 8s. He was a farmer and had a yoke of oxen, five cows, steers, heifers, a bull, horses, one about 30 years old worth one shilling, 12 "barrills of Sider, 2 barrills of peach Jyce, one hive of bees 6s., 5 yards of saloome, a Cidar Mill & Press, 2 Spining Wheeles & Cards, 5 barrills of Beere, 29 loads of Hay, A Small Steele Trap, A Great Bible £1 18s., and A Booke called the Statuts and 7 small Bookes, 3 Great Chaires & 7 small ones." In twenty-one inventories prior to 1710, only eighty-three chairs are mentioned, many of them called "old." Six cradles are found in value from 5s. to £1 2s.

The following are the titles of books inventoried in Providence before 1710:

Bibles, eleven copies; Ainsworth's Annotations, 1612; Chirurgeon's Mate; Complete Clerk; Concordance, two copies; Contemplations, Moral and Divine, Sir Matthew Hale; Cokes Commentary on Littleton Tenures, 1628; Council; Dalton's Country Justice, 1618; Declarations and Pleadings; Dictionary, one copy; Effect of War; English Pilot; Office and Duty of Executors, 1676; Exposition of Terms of Law; Fisher's Ashford Dispute; Gentleman Jockey; Gospel Preacher; The Great Bible, Grafton's Version, 1539; Hodder's Arithmetic, 1661, one copy; Justice Restored; Lambarde's Perambulation of Kent, 1576; Law Concerning Jurors; Layman's Lawyer, 1656; General Dispensary, London; Mariners; Method of Physic; Nature's Explication; New England's Memorial, Morton; Norwood's Triangles; Fox's Book of Martyrs, 1534; Sermons; A Short Introduction of Grammar, 1577; Statute Book, Poulton; Story Book; Touchstone of Wills; Treatise of Faith, Peacock.

These volumes were a part of the William Harris collection of books. These with those of William Blackstone constitute almost all the books in the Providence Plantations prior to the eighteenth century.

The first bookshop in Providence was opened by Daniel Jenckes, at his place of mercantile business about 1768.

Surnames of our English ancestry make an interesting study. Their antiquity however renders it difficult and discouraging. Given names of later origin are both instructive and suggestive. The Hebrew nomenclature figured largely in the christenings of boys and girls of the Puritan period in England and America. Abel, Moses, Abraham, David, Josiah, Solomon, Isaiah, Ruth, Esther, Job, Ebenezer, Lot, Dinah, Bathsheba,

Matthew, Mark, Luke, John, Paul, Timothy, Dorcas, Titus and others appear, singly or in groups, in all families. A few of the Rhode Island families are worthy of notice in the distinction given their babies. Roger Williams calls the first-born child at Moshassuck, Providence. William Harris had a daughter, *Howlong*, indicating a wide distance of births, between her and her older sister, and a son Toleration, indicating long-suffering parents. Thomas Olney named a son Epenetus, the Greek for *praiseworthy*. Endcome Sanford died young, while his next son *Restcome* never married, and a son *Esbon*, whose life record was brief. Samuel, another son of John Sanford, was the father of sixteen children, naming the seventh *Restcome*, the tenth *Endcome*, and the eleventh *Esbon*, in memory of his brothers. Samuel Gorton, of Warwick, gave a daughter the euphonious and glib-flowing name of *Mahershallalhashbaz*, bringing to mind the trials and triumphs of Job, while Mary Dyer, the Quakeress, hung on Boston Common, gave a son the same significant title. Thomas Butts called a son Idido, and a daughter Hepzibah. John Tyler and wife had five girls and boys named *Lazarus*, *Miriam*, *Tamar*, *Question* and *Friendship*. The sex of the fourth child is fixed by the fact that she married John Inion. A foot-note suggests that the last born was of the feminine gender. Millicent Utter suggests eternity or an abbreviated immortality. Teddeman Hull was a physician and *Tourmet* Rose once owned one-sixteenth part of Block Island. Gov. Benedict Arnold had daughters *Damaris*, *Godsgift* and *Freelove*, and a son *Benedict*. His nine children gave him fifty-eight grandchildren, among whom were *Sion*, *Godsgift*, *Penelope*, *Damaris*, three, *Freelove*, three, with a *Jirek* and *Zachariah* and a *Malachi* at the end of the grand procession. John Inman had, among his *grands*, *Noah*, *Othniel*, *Peregrine*, *Nero*, *Oziel*, *Jemima*, *Michael*, *Israel*, *Priscilla*, *Aaron*, *Deborah*, and *Tabitha*, a mingling of sacred and heathen *grandees*. *Deliverance* was a common gift to grateful parents and *Temperance* was a feminine grace. *Timberlake*, *Longbottom*, *Unthank*, *Bull*, *Everden*, *Flounders*, *Salmon*, *Fry*, *Hefferman*, *Horsewell*, *Suckling*, smacked of the sea, the woods and domestic life. Michael and Elizabeth Spencer had *Ruth* and *Orpha* of eleven children, eight girls. Robert Spencer had wife and daughter *Thcodosia*, the gift of God, and a son *Thcophilus*, the friend of God. *Aminette* and *Dinah* were daughters of Peter Place. The *Sucklings* had no increase. Peter Tallman had ninety grandchildren, among whom *Grace*, *Comfort*, *Patience* and *Deliverance*. Jonathan and Sarah Thurston had eighteen children, with daughters *Hope* and *Content* and ending with *Job*. *Christopher* and *Auphillis* figure in one of the Smith families. Roger Williams and wife Mary had six children: Mary, born 1633, married John Sayles; Freeborn born 1635, married (first) Thomas Hart; married (second) Walter Clarke,

Providence, 1638, unmarried; Mercy, born 1640, married (first) Resolved Waterman, married (second) Samuel Winsor; Daniel, born 1642, married Rebecca Power; and Joseph, born 1643, married Lydia Olney. He had thirty-one grandchildren. *Phebe, Eleanor, Resolved, Wait, Benoni, Goliath* and *Meribath* were among his descendants. For the study of Rhode Island families and names, reference is made to Austin's "Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island."

Winterbottom, in his valuable history of America, in four volumes, published in London about 1795, and said to be written in the Tower of London while he was a political prisoner, adds the following: "The ministers of Rhode Island are dependent wholly on the integrity of the people for their support, since their salaries are not recoverable. It ought, however, to be observed, that ministers, in general, are liberally maintained, and none who merit it, have much reason to complain for want of support."

This William Winterbottom was a dissenting minister at Plymouth, England, and in 1793 he was sentenced to four years' imprisonment "for seditious words in his sermons." In the preface of his history of America he says "the glorious struggle which the United States sustained" in the revolution "did much to raise mankind from the state of abject slavery and degradation to which despotism, aided by superstition, had sunk them; from that period the rights of man began to be understood, and the principles of civil and religious liberty have been canvassed with a freedom before unknown, and their influence has extended itself from the palace to the cottage; in short, the revolution in the late British American colonies bids fair ultimately not only to occasion the emancipation of the other European colonies on that continent, but to accomplish a complete revolution in all the old governments of Europe."

Dr. Morse, on the other hand, a learned, aristocratic, conservative minister of the "standing order," at Charlestown, Massachusetts, had little sympathy with the followers or principles of Roger Williams, and never let slip an opportunity to show his contempt for the benighted settlers of this God-forsaken colony. Possibly he sometimes exhibited something of that spirit which so prevailed in the earlier time, and which occasioned that other non-conformist minister, William Blackstone, to leave Boston and make his settlement upon the banks of that beautiful river which now bears his name. Blackstone had "left England to get from under the power of the lords' bishops, but in America had fallen under the power of the lord brethren;" and so escaping them he was the first white settler of Rhode Island, which he found and left a land of "soul liberty." Under this head, "Curiosities," Dr. Morse gives the following description of our neighbor Pawtucket and her famous falls:

About four miles northeast of Providence is a small village called Pawtucket, a place of some trade, and famous for lamprey eels. Through this village runs Pawtucket river, which empties into Seekonk at this place. In this river is a beautiful fall of water, directly over which a bridge has been built, which divides the Commonwealth of Massachusetts from the State of Rhode Island. The fall, in its whole length, is upwards of fifty feet. The water passes through several chasms in a rock which runs diametrically across the bed of the stream and serves as a dam to the water. This is a busy place and the seat of various branches of manufacture. In the fall of 1796 there were on these falls, three anchor forges, one tanning mill, one flour mill, one slitting mill, one clothier's works, the shearing performed by water, three snuff mills, one oil mill, one cotton manufactory, three fulling mills, two machines for cutting nails. All these are moved by water. There are besides, a machine for cutting screws, a furnace for casting hollow ware, and various forges.

The only other "curiosity" here mentioned is "Purgatory, in the town of Middletown, on Rhode Island." Mr. Winterbottom gives the following account :

A hundred years ago the war of the revolution was substantially closed. The government of the new nation was in full operation—not the excellent system of the present time under the United States constitution, but the defective and inefficient government of the confederacy under the impotent "Articles of Confederation." There were no railroads at that time, and no steamboats, no telegraphs or telephones. Newport was then a larger and more important town than Providence. By the first census, taken in 1790, Newport had a total population of 6,716, while Providence had only 6,380. But the tide had already changed, and in 1800 Providence had 7,614, while Newport numbered but 6,739. The population of the entire state in 1790 was 68,825, and in 1800 it was 69,122. The increase in ten years had been only 297. This condition of stagnation was mainly due to the unsettled state of affairs growing out of the previous large issue of paper money, and because the state was so slow to adopt the federal constitution. This had for a time seriously crippled the mercantile and commercial business of the state.

Previous to this period, however, as well as subsequently to it, the growth of the state had been rapid. Its population had been in 1730, 17,985; 1748, 34,128; 1761, 40,636; 1774, 59,678; 1783, 51, 809. During the war, that is, between 1774 and 1783, the population of the state had thus fallen off 7,779. One striking feature of the change in population during the last century was the number of blacks (slaves), which was in 1730, 2,633; 1748, 4,373; 1761, 4, 697; 1774, 5,243; 1783, 3,361; 1790, 948.

Slavery was abolished, and soon the slave trade was prohibited, "which had been a great source of its wealth." Closing up this avenue of gain, just after the evils of the paper money and the devastations of a protracted war, altogether produced a complete stagnation of business, from which the state was a long time in rallying.

There was, however, one branch of business which compared favorably with the present time. In 1791 the number of vessels reported as

belonging to the port of Providence was as follows: 11 ships, containing 3,066 tons; 35 brigs, 4, 266 tons; 1 snow, 1,41 tons; 1 polaque, 101 tons; 25 schooners, 1,320 tons; 56 sloops, 3,047 tons; total, 129 sail, containing 11,942 tons. The tonnage of the State was reported as between 26,000 and 27,000 tons.

The exports at that time were stated to be flaxseed, lumber, horses, cattle, beef, pork, fish, poultry, onions, butter, cheese, barley, grain, spirits, and cotton and linen goods. The imports were of European and West India goods, and logwood from the bay of Honduras. In 1791 the amount of exports was reported as \$470,131.09; in 1793 it was \$616,416; in 1799 the amount was \$1,055,274; in 1804, \$1,735,671.

Dr. Morse, in his great "American Universal Geography," published in 1805, describes the condition of the people as follows:

In many towns in the western parts of the state, publick worship is almost entirely neglected. They pay no taxes for the support of ecclesiasticks of any denomination; and a peculiarity which distinguishes this state from every other protestant country in the known world, excepting Virginia, is, that no contract formed by the minister with his people for his salary is valid in law. So that ministers are dependent on the caprice of their people.

Before the war, merchants in Rhode Island imported from Great Britain dry goods; from Africa, slaves; from the West Indies, sugars, coffees and molasses, and from neighboring colonies, lumber and provisions. With the bills which they obtained in Surinam and other Dutch West India islands, they paid their merchants in England; their sugars they carried to Holland; the slaves from Africa they carried to the West Indies, together with the lumber and provisions procured from their neighbors; the rum, distilled from the molasses, was carried to Africa, to purchase negroes; with their dry goods from England they trafficked with the neighboring colonies. \* \* \* The slave trade which was a source of wealth to many of the people in Newport and in other parts of the state, has happily been abolished; the legislature has passed a law prohibiting ships from going to Africa for slaves, and selling them in the West India islands; and the oath of one seaman belonging to the ship is sufficient evidence of the fact; this law is, however, more favorable to the cause of humanity than to the temporal interests of the merchants who had been engaged in this inhuman traffic.

The manufactures of the state are given as follows: Tow and linen cloth, bar and sheet iron, steel, nail rods and nails, implements of husbandry, stoves, pots and other household utensils, the iron work of shipping, anchors, bells, &c. The other manufactures of the state are rum, corn, spirits, chocolate, paper, wool and cotton, cards, &c., besides, domestic manufactures for family use, which in this, in common with the other states, amount to a large sum, which cannot be ascertained.

The same author states that "throughout the whole of the late war with Great Britain, the inhabitants of the state manifested a patriotic spirit; their troops behaved gallantly, and they are honored in having produced the second general in the field."



A small geography, published in 1815, has the following, under the head of "Literature:" "The literature of this state is confined principally to the towns of Providence and Newport. No provision is made by law for the establishment of town schools. There are probably more people in Rhode Island who are unable to read and write, than in all the rest of New England."

Another geography, published in 1824, says: "Rhode Island, in proportion to its population, is the most considerable manufacturing state in the union. The principal article is cotton goods." Providence is now spoken of as "a handsome and flourishing town, has an extensive trade, and is distinguished for its manufactures." At this time Newport had a population of 7,300, while Providence had increased to 11,800.

From these early beginnings this city and this State have increased in population and in importance. Rhode Islanders cannot brag like Bostonians or Massachusetts people generally. It is not indigenous to the soil, and they are not so used to it. But the growth and increase in material wealth, in intellectual advancement and in true moral and religious worth, have been very decided and very rapid. In 1850 the population of this city was a little more than 40,000; in 1860 it was more than 50,000; in 1870 it was nearly 70,000, and in 1880, above 100,000. The State is now the most densely populated of any in the Union, excepting Massachusetts, and the richest in proportion to its number of inhabitants.

Exclusive of certain classes of foreigners, the proportional number now unable to read and write is very small. The opportunities in this city to-day for intellectual and moral improvement are surpassed by few cities in the country. But we have thus far only seen the beginning. Providence is now in a position to grow. Its business is so firmly established, its industries so well known, that it cannot but increase rapidly. It has passed its point of stagnation. Its growth must now be rapid. What are the elements that will conduce to its *best* and *truest* development? What counsel must its citizens and its government pursue in order to promote the most desirable and the most healthy growth and advancement?

#### SOME HISTORIC BUILDINGS.

*The First Baptist Church*—No one can deny or affirm that the Baptist Church at Providence, titled the First, by general consent, holds that rank among the churches of that order in America. So far as public or private records go, they afford us no basis of the least value as to the year of its founding. Providence Proprietary records are silent and dateless as to events of the early years of that settlement. The church records are of no value, as they give no sign as to its founding and the events for the century following. Elder John Stanford, minister at Providence, in

1789, bases the story of the early church on the writings of Winthrop and Backus. It is often stated that Mr. Williams was the first pastor of the church constituted at Providence. The venerable John Howland, of Providence, one of the founders of the Rhode Island Historical Society, and for many years its president, who, in his boyhood, knew men of the Roger Williams period, says: "On the question among the founders of Rhode Island College on what lot to place the building—University Hall—they decided as the present site because it was the home lot of Chad Brown, *the first minister of the Baptist Church.*"

Moses Brown, a descendant of Chad, born within sixty years of Mr. Williams' death, states that his ancestor, Chad Brown, was the first minister of the church at Providence, but the date of his coming to Providence is not known. We do know that he arrived at Boston, in July, 1638. John O. Austin states that Chad Brown was ordained pastor in 1642, but gives no authority for the statement. For the first sixty years of the Colony's existence there was no meeting-house for the church, and for over a century no salary was paid its ministers. Each pastor earned his own living in secular pursuits. When Brown University came to Providence the church had 118 members and there were 4,000 inhabitants in the town. The location of the college in the community meant a great deal to the church and led to the building in May, 1775, of the handsome meeting-house on North Main street that still impresses all who look upon it with its great dignity and stern beauty. The cost was \$25,000, and the "dedication came midway between the battles of Lexington and Bunker Hill."

Often has the church been called the Baptist Cathedral of America. Its plan was drawn by James Gibbs after plans which were executed for the Church of St. Martin's-in-the-Fields, London. Joseph Brown and James Sumner, architects, adapted the plans and put them into execution. The building is considered an excellent specimen of colonial architecture.

*Roger Williams' First House*—Roger Williams built his first log house near the northeast corner of North Main and Howland streets. Of this dwelling, which stood possibly eighty feet from the main thoroughfare, little is known. In 1906 a tablet was placed by the State of Rhode Island on the house at the northeast corner of the streets named, which was judged, after careful investigation, to be the point nearest the Williams homestead. Probably Mr. Williams' eldest son, said to be the first male child of English parents in Rhode Island, was born under its roof in the autumn of 1638. Roger Williams called his boy Providence. As the founder's declining years were passed in the midst of his children and grandchildren, "by the fireside" of Daniel, his son, who lived at the south end of the "towne street," it is assumed that the Williams house



had been burned or otherwise destroyed during one of the frequent Indian attacks on the colony.

*"The Town Spring"*—Under a house nearly opposite Howland street (242 North Main street) is a living spring, now called "Roger Williams' Spring." Mr. Williams never owned the spring, but the first houses were built near the spring and its water was used at first by all the people of the neighborhood. These shacks were probably crude, temporary shelters: for it was summer when the little colony was planted, and the people lived out of doors. As autumn approached and the foliage of the trees bordering the paths that led to the spring began to turn yellow and scarlet from the first tinge of frost, undoubtedly more substantial shelters were built,—log huts, perhaps of one room, with fireplace on the side.

*The Roger Mowry Tavern*—Roger Mowry came from Salem prior to 1650, and in May, 1655, he was granted a license to keep a house of entertainment in Providence. The "ordinarie's brew" may have been sipped too often or too long; for in the course of the next half-dozen years the Assembly decreed that "no howse of entertainment shall suffer any person to tiple after 9 of the clock at night, except they give a satisfactory reason to the Constable or magistrate." The penalty for disobeying this decree was a fine of five shillings for the tavern-keeper and two shillings and sixpence for the person who "tipped."

Events of interest cluster about the old tavern. When John Clawson, a Dutch carpenter, was found dying one cold December morning in 1661 from a blow dealt by a broad-axe, at once his murderer was sought, and finally Waumanitt, an Indian, was charged with the crime and taken prisoner. There was apparently much difficulty in disposing of him. The charge for irons which the local blacksmith forged was considerable for a colony where shillings were scarce, and there was no prison in Providence to hold the captive. So he was removed to Roger Mowry's tavern, and there kept until other disposition was made of him, though exactly what was done is not recorded. It is stated that he was sent to Newport, and that Landlord Mowry presented his bill for housing Waumanitt. The tale went that Clawson, the slain man, had quarreled violently with a neighbor, and that it was this neighbor, Hearndon by name, who killed Clawson, by whom he was recognized. It was said that Clawson roused sufficiently before he died to pronounce a curse against the Hearndons,—that he hoped they would bear split chins and be haunted for the rest of their natural lives by barberry-bushes (near a clump of these bushes Clawson was slain); and it is said that split chins for generations marked the Hearndons.

In the one-room house of Roger Mowry the town council met. "For this daies firing" and "for house roome" the town treasurer was directed,

January 27, 1657, to pay one shilling and sixpence. There is a tradition that Roger Williams held prayer-meetings at Mowry's.

Ample evidence remains to show that the house was built as early as 1653. It was a house of some size; but originally was very small with a huge stone chimney, having only the "fire roome," as did the other houses of the day, and like them it sloped toward the street. At the outer doorway was a big flat stone, which served for a doorstep. The "fire roome" was entered from the street, and was conspicuous for its chimney and great fireplace, occupying nearly one side of the house. Near this a steep staircase led to the loft above. There has been some conjecture as to why this old tavern was spared by the Indians during the attacks on the colony. What was spared by them was swept away by the growth of the city of Providence in 1900.

*The Betsey Williams Cottage*—This cottage, in Roger Williams Park, was built by Nathaniel Williams for his son James, the father of Betsey, about 1773. This house has been carefully preserved, and is one of the show-places of the city. The park of 432 acres which surrounds it is the largest in Providence. This property, situated in the southwestern part of the city, was originally owned by Joseph, the youngest son of Roger Williams, and remained in possession of the family until Miss Williams gave it to the city in 1871,—a period of more than two hundred years. Within its limits is the Williams burying-lot, and among the generations buried there are the remains of the family of Joseph Williams, the tombstone of Joseph bearing testimony to his service in the Indian wars. The home of Joseph Williams, built by him about 1680, formerly stood on Elmwood avenue, on land near the present park limits. The house was demolished in 1886.

Roger Williams speaks of Joseph in a letter written to Winthrop in 1660: "My youngest son, Joseph, was troubled with a spice of epilepsy: We used some remedies, but it hath pleased God, by his taking tobacco, perfectly, as we hope to cure him." The "cure" was evidently effective, for Joseph lived to a hale old age. He was a man prominent in public affairs, and held many offices of importance, among them that of deputy in the Colonial Assembly. He was also a member of the town council. His death occurred in 1724; and his estate consisted of some 730 acres, which with his dwelling-place and orchard he left to his son James, who was charged by his father "to provide for his Mother my said loving Wife Lidia Williams all things that shee shall have neede of and that are necessary for an antiant woman during the full term of her naturall Life." The "Wife Lidia" survived her husband but three weeks. She was buried by his side on the farm at Mashapaug,—which to-day is included among

the acres of Roger Williams Park,—bequeathed to the city of Providence by Betsey Williams.

*The Old Town House*—When College street was Rosemary lane, in 1720, and when Benefit street was little more than the proverbial calf-path, the Old Town House stood where the two streets intersect on a part of the land now occupied by the Providence County Court House. This historic edifice was built by the First Congregational Church of Providence in 1723, and was used for a meeting-house until 1795, when it was given the name by which it has ever since been known. The history of this part of Providence is made more interesting by the fact that the lot on which once stood the Old Town House has been occupied successively by a meeting-house, a town-house, and a court-house.

The first pastor of this church was Josiah Cotton, who had been graduated in the class of 1722 of Harvard College. This was his first parish, and he was installed, with much ceremony, October 23, 1728. After the services a dinner was served at the home of Captain Daniel Abbott. The church-roll at this time showed nine men and the young minister. The church as an organization passed through various vicissitudes. Just prior to the Revolutionary War the old steeple on the Benefit street end of the church building was in a dilapidated condition, and at the May session of the General Assembly there was passed a resolution that gave the church-members the right to raise £700 by lottery, the object of which was to procure funds to repair the steeple and also the church itself.

*The Turk's Head Corner*—Jacob Whitman was the first owner of the land and built a house about 1743 for his young family. The house has been described as a large, gambrel-roofed structure; and "his garden, which was extensive, was stocked with choice ornamental shade and fruit trees, shrubs and flowers, and was an attractive place of resort for the children of the neighborhood. In his garden stood a famous white mulberry tree, said to have been the largest of its kind in the State, and so large that six children with clasped hands could barely inclose its circumference. On the front and north side of Mr. Whitman's house was a piazza; on the roof of the piazza was a balustrade, and at the corner towards the bridge, probably upon a post, the renowned Turk's Head."

Whitman's Corner became one of the famous places in Providence; and the Turk's Head, which surmounted a corner of his house, won fame also. It was enormous in size and frightful in appearance. All children were afraid of it; some women were; and no doubt it had secret terrors for the late night prowler. Its eyes were large, also its nose and tongue. It has been described as having a beard of considerable size. Over this terrifying visage towered a great turban. Undoubtedly the Turk's Head was originally the figure-head of an East Indiaman.



TURK'S HEAD BUILDING



OLD TURK'S HEAD BUILDING



*The Sign of "Shakespear's Head" in Gaol Lane*—"Shakespear's Head" still stands at 21 Meeting street. Here lived John Carter, who for a time printed the "Providence Gazette," founded by William Goddard, its publisher and editor. The first issue of the paper occurred October 20, 1762. Mr. Goddard printed not only the first newspaper, but also the first handbill in Providence. "Morro Castle taken by Storm" was the heading of the latter. The office of the paper was several times changed, and finally the publication suspended on account of the Stamp Act. Prior to its suspension it had attained much influence, among the contributors being Stephen Hopkins, a signer of the Declaration of Independence. Mr. Goddard printed several pamphlets, among them "A Discourse addressed to the Sons of Liberty, At a solemn Assembly, near Liberty Tree in Providence, February 14, 1766." Later the publisher left Providence, and entered the editorial field in New York, Philadelphia, and Baltimore.

*The Old Sabin Tavern*—"The Gaspee Party" stood at the corner of South Main and Planet streets. It was built about 1763. The house was unfinished at the time the plot was formed. The lot on which it stood was owned, according to the grant of 1640, by William Burrows. Of Sabin's actual ownership there is no record, though it is known that under his management it was conducted as a "house of boarding and entertainment for gentlemen." In 1785 Welcome Arnold bought the estate, which was in what was then an excellent residential section of Providence.

Welcome Arnold lived in the house until his death in 1798, after which it became the home of his eldest son, Samuel G. Arnold, and subsequently the home of Col. Richard J. Arnold. During this time the house was enlarged and improved. In 1891, when it was proposed to tear down the stately edifice, Mrs. William Richmond Talbot, a granddaughter of Welcome Arnold, had the room in which was formed the *Gaspee* plot removed to her home on the southwest corner of Williams and East streets. "In this room," says an inscription above the old fireplace, "June 9, 1772, was formed the plan for the destruction of the British naval schooner, *Gaspee*."

*The Hopkins House*—Stephen Hopkins built his house in 1742, on Town street, near the water and the lumber yards,—a district very sparsely settled at the time. From its early location the house was moved to its present one in 1804, on Hopkins street.

About Hopkins's old house linger many memories. In 1776 Washington reached Providence. This visit followed closely the evacuation of Boston. Gen. Washington and his staff, and Gen. Gates, "were invited to an elegant entertainment at Hacker's Hall, provided by the gentlemen of the town, where, after dinner, a number of patriotic toasts were drunk." The town authorities considered, and decided that no place of entertain-

ment was so appropriate as Governor Hopkins' house. The master of the house was in Philadelphia, but his daughter Ruth was at home; and, when the town representatives brought Gen. Washington, Ruth calmly set herself about making her guest comfortable. Many were the suggestions, if tradition may be relied on, that were offered to Ruth Hopkins by her anxious neighbors. Silver was tendered, and linen, food, and china. But to all these overtures Ruth turned a deaf ear, asserting, with all respect to her distinguished guest, that what was good enough for her father was good enough for Gen. Washington. The room where Washington slept became from that day an historic place, and it was counted a great privilege to sleep in it.

The French troops in 1781 encamped in Newport, and Washington again visited Rhode Island. After a conference with Gen. Rochambeau, he left Newport, and on the 13th of March arrived in Providence. It was during his stay that Washington visited again the home of Stephen Hopkins. Moses Brown tells of his visit: "I was with him, sitting, when Gen. Washington by himself alone called to see him. I sat some time, viewing the simple, friendly and pleasant manner" in which "these two great men met and conversed with each other on various subjects." Some time afterward Mr. Brown spoke of again seeing Washington and of being impressed with his easy, simple manner—"very like that of Stephen Hopkins."

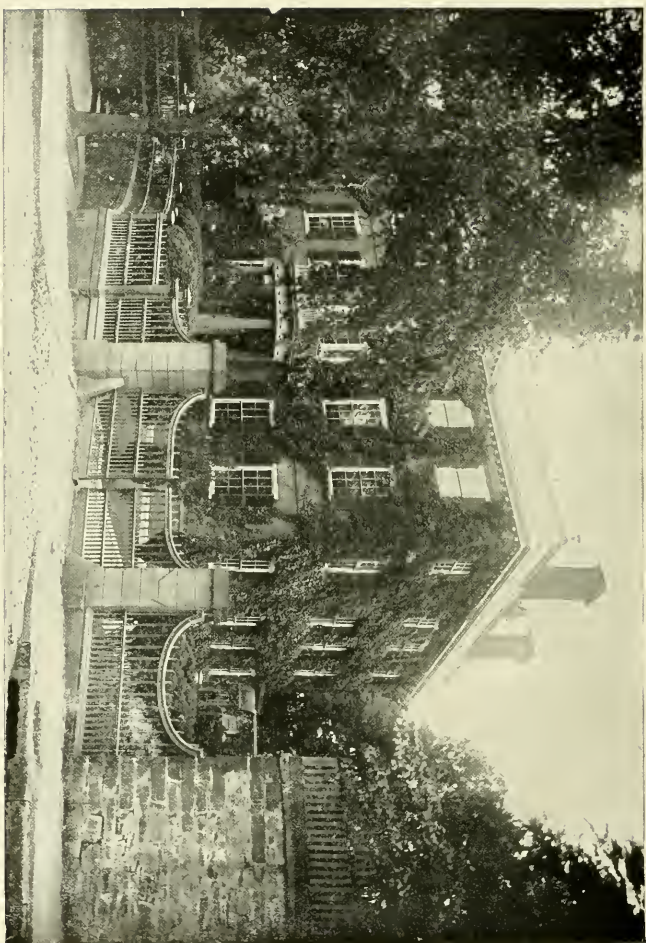
*University Hall*—The corner-stone of University Hall, one of the oldest and, historically, perhaps the most interesting in the State of Rhode Island, was laid by John Brown, May 14, 1770. Four thousand dollars had been raised by the people of Providence, and the lot on which University Hall was built was a part of the farm of Chad Brown. The money raised being insufficient to complete the structure, but two stories were built.

The house of James Manning, the first president of Brown University, was built in 1771 near Manning Hall. Here lived James Manning during the larger part of his life, and here also lived Maxey, Messer, and Wayland, his successors. When a new president's house was built in 1840, the old house of Manning was moved down the hill, where, after a second removal, it still stands, one of a number of old buildings similar to it in architecture.

University Hall is said to have been on the same plan as Nassau Hall at Princeton University, "built of brick, four stories high and 150 feet long." The bricks of which it was built are said to have been brought from Rehoboth. Extensive pasture-lands surrounded the hall, and it has been recalled that President Manning's cows grazed on the campus.







JOHN BROWN HOUSE

Twenty-five students were enrolled under Mr. Manning, and they were served "three good meals per day" for the sum of a dollar a week. In 1776, when Sir Peter Parker, the British commander, with eleven men-of-war and seventy transports landed in Newport, Providence was in a state of great excitement. Martial law was proclaimed. President Manning dismissed his students. He says: "The Country flew to Arms & marched for Providence, there, unprovided with Barracks they marched into the College & dispossessed the Students, about 40 in Number." "The town," says another writer, "exhibited the appearance of a camp. The college building was first used as quarters for the artillery and the grounds around it for parade, and afterwards for a hospital for sick soldiers." In the claim for damages presented by the college corporation to the United States government after the war, it is stated that University Hall was used by the American army as a barracks and hospital from December 10, 1776, to April 20, 1780, and then, following its evacuation by Washington's men, it was turned over to the French troops which had come to aid us, and was used by them as a hospital from June 26, 1780, to May 27, 1782. When the building was finally reoccupied by the college it was in a pretty bad condition, much damage having been done by the martial uses to which it had for so long been put, and in 1782 and 1792 the college corporation presented to the federal government bills amounting to a total of about \$7,660, for use of and damage to the hall.

*The John Brown Mansion*—For many years John Brown lived on South Main street, next to Nicholas, his eldest brother. The Power street house on which is inscribed, "This house founded by John Brown, Esq., 1786," was not formally opened until the first of January, 1788, when the merchant's eldest daughter was married. The announcement of the ceremony appeared in the *Providence Gazette*: "On Tuesday evening last was married, John Francis, Esq., merchant, to Miss Abby Brown, Daughter of John Brown, Esq.: a young Lady whose truly amiable Disposition and engaging manners cannot fail to adorn and dignify the connubial state."

Hospitality was freely given at the stately mansion, and many noted guests have been received there, among them Gen. Washington. Commencement dinners were notable affairs, and there is a tradition that at a party given for the alumni of Brown University, among whom were numerous clergymen, Obadiah Brown, son of Joseph, proposed the toast, "Here's to a short respite to the damned in hell!" The dead silence which ensued was broken by the host. "Truly," said he, "gentlemen, a most admirable sentiment in which we can all heartily join."

An interesting note is made by Staples in his "*Annals of the Town of Providence*" to the effect that "John Brown, one of the most worthy

merchants of Providence, or, in fact, of New England, appeared in January, 1789, dressed in cloth made from the fleeces of his own flocks." The newspaper from which Staples took his note adds that "the yarn was spun by a woman eighty-eight years of age." This was done by Mr. Brown to encourage home manufacture of clothing, since duties on imported goods were then high.

Mr. Brown strenuously supported the union of the States and served two years in Congress. His influence was largely instrumental in securing the tardy ratification by this State of the Constitution of the United States, his broad mind having always foreseen and urged the benefits of closer union when the feeble ties of the Confederacy failed.

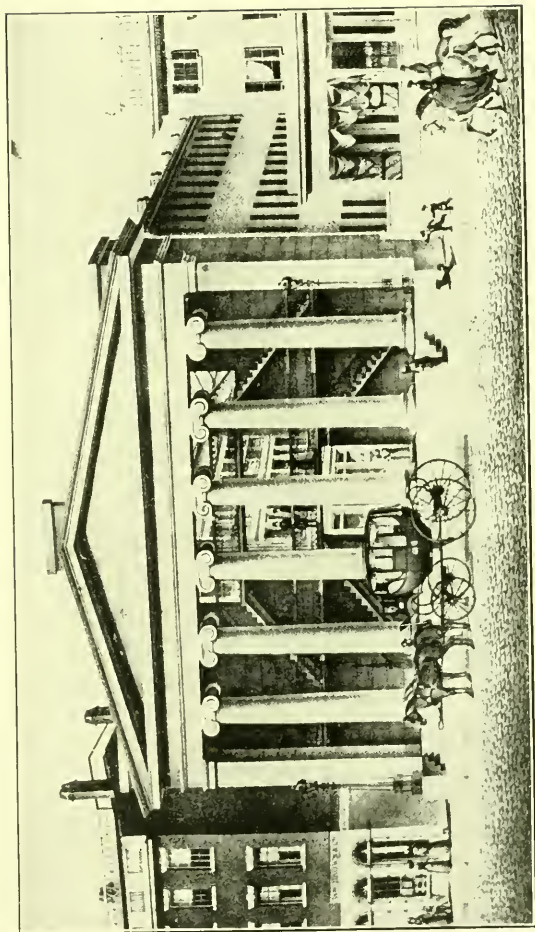
The house in which John Carter Brown's Americana were stored is on the corner of Power and Benefit streets. It was built by Joseph Nightingale about 1791, and in 1814 Nicholas Brown bought it. This house and the John Brown house opposite were the finest mansions in Providence at the time they were built, and they are to-day two of the finest colonial houses in this country.

*The Athenæum*—The real foundation of the Providence Athenæum was laid in 1753. The home of the old Providence Athenæum from 1831 to 1836 was in rooms 42 and 44 in the second story of the Arcade. This was also the home of the present institution from 1836 to 1838. Nicholas Brown, Moses B. Ives, and Robert H. Ives in 1836 gave the land on which the building now stands to the Athenæum; and they further offered \$6,000 for the erection of a building, provided \$10,000 was raised for the same purpose, with an additional \$4,000 for books, provided the same sum was raised by "societies" (then made up of the Athenæum, Historical, and Franklin Societies). On April 4, 1837, the ground was broken, and the following May the building was begun.

In the Athenæum is an interesting reminder of the days when Edgar Allan Poe visited Providence. Dr. H. L. Koopman, librarian of Brown University, who is deeply interested in Poe, had heard that Mrs. Whitman, to whom Poe was at that time engaged, had expressed admiration for an anonymous poem that appeared in the "American Review" in December, 1847. At the time she and Poe were in the Athenæum, and Mrs. Whitman asked Poe if he had read this poem "Ulalume" and if he knew the author. He answered her questions in the affirmative, and acknowledged that he had not only read the poem, but had written it. Before leaving the Athenæum, he signed the poem.

Malbone's "Hours," the most valuable miniature piece of art in America, is in the Athenæum.

*The Arcade*—The Arcade years ago was the House of Trade of Providence, boasted of by the citizens, and admired by strangers. At the



PROVIDENCE ARCADE, TAKEN 1850



time of its erection in 1827 and 1828 there was scarcely a shop or business place of any kind in its vicinity on Westminster street. The business section of the town was then on Water street and North and South Main streets, North Main being then known as Cheapside, where, among others, was the firm of Watson & Gladding (now B. H. Gladding & Co.) at their shop at "The Sign of the Bunch of Grapes." The Arcade is said to have been suggested by the Madeleine of Napoleon in Paris, and at the time when it was built several others were erected in the United States. The Providence Arcade is said to be the only one remaining. It is built of granite, and fronts on Westminster street on the north and Weybosset street on the south.

It is still a boast that one of the thirteen columns, each weighing twelve tons, and, with the exception of those in the Cathedral of St. John the Divine, the largest in America, was blasted out of the Bear Rock ledge on the borders of the town of Johnston, and completed by the workmen in thirty days. James Olney agreed to haul the monoliths to Providence; and, after constructing a special low gear and strengthening the bridge at Olneyville, he guided fifteen yoke of oxen, drawing their burden of twelve tons, through the woods. The Arcade cost \$145,000.

*The Greene Street School*—The most select and noted of all the private schools of Providence, was dedicated June 10, 1837, Ralph Waldo Emerson delivering the address. In this school Margaret Fuller taught, and it was by her that Ralph Waldo Emerson was persuaded to come to Providence. During the period in which she taught in Providence (1837-1839) glimpses of the life of this remarkable woman—who stimulated in this country the study of German literature, was the friend of Emerson, Lowell, and Hawthorne, and whose Memoirs after her tragic death were edited by Ralph Waldo Emerson, James Freeman Clarke, and William Ellery Channing—are caught from the letters she wrote to her friends and particularly to her sister. In June, 1837, she wrote to Mr. Emerson from Providence: "Concord, dear Concord, haven of repose, where headache, vertigo, and other sins that flesh is heir to, cannot long endure."

Miss Fuller taught geography, French, Latin, and possibly German to the advanced pupils. At the time when she decided to go to Providence, she speaks of preferring to write a Life of Goethe. "Yet," she adds, "when the thousand petty difficulties which surround us are considered, it seems unwise to relinquish immediate independence." This "independence" to her meant a salary of a thousand dollars a year.

*The Dorr Mansion* was built in 1809-10 by Sullivan Dorr, father of Thomas W. Dorr. John H. Greene was the designer. It is said to have been built on the model of Pope's villa at Twickenham. "The Sullivan Dorr house," says Miss Kimball, "has a remarkably beautiful staircase.



Its mural decorations are probably unique among the Rhode Island houses. They extend along the upper and lower halls, and the drawing-room, above the low wainscoting, and are the work of a Neapolitan artist, who visited Providence in 1810. At the rear of the Dorr mansion is a monument marking the grave of Williams and six members of his family, on the original home lot of the founder of Providence. The location of the grave from the time of Williams' death in 1683 until 1860 was unmarked, and for many years it was not known. When the grave was finally opened, neither the coffin nor the remains were found. The root of an apple tree had apparently twined itself around the body of Williams, following his backbone and branching off at his hips and legs until it reached the toes. The root was carefully dug up, and preserved.

Thomas W. Dorr, son of Sullivan Dorr, at the time of his efforts to reform suffrage in the State of Rhode Island was comparatively a young man, on the sunny side of forty. He had been elected Governor of Rhode Island under what was known as "the People's Constitution." The story of the Dorr rebellion is told in another chapter. He died December 27, 1854. A plain marble slab marks his grave at Swan Point Cemetery.







HOPE CLUB



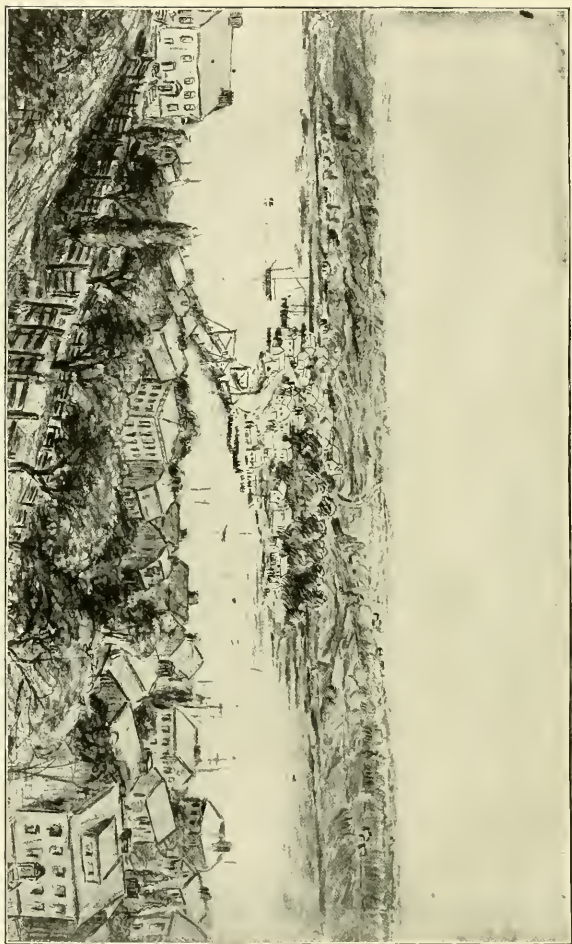
## CHAPTER XLII

---

### NORTHWESTERN RHODE ISLAND







PROVIDENCE VILLAGE A CENTURY AND A HALF AGO

## CHAPTER XLII.

### NORTHWESTERN RHODE ISLAND.

We have seen that the Moshassuck grant to Mr. Williams was bounded on the south by the Pawtuxet river, on the east by the Pawtucket river and "Old Fields," extending west to include Neutakonkanut Hill and northwest to include Absolute Swamp. The second concession of 1639, gave to the Moshassuck settlers certain rights to the river valleys of the Pawtuxet, the Pocasset and the Woonasquatucket. These rights in time terminated in territorial ownership and the bounds of Providence were limited to a north and south line, seven miles west of Fox Hill in Providence. The territory west of this seven mile line and north of Pawtucket Old Fields may be considered as the Northwest Rhode Island and will be so treated in this chapter. It was "the Great West" to early Providence.

This territory of over two hundred square miles is the hill country of the State—Durfee Hill the highest land in Rhode Island being 805 feet above Narragansett Bay. These hills were the feeders of the Pawtuxet, the Woonasquatucket, the Chepachet, the branch of the Moshassuck, and the Pawtucket rivers. The heights of other hills are Jerimoth 799, Pine 769, Chopmist 730, Beech 728, Hygeia 700, Pray 693, Tourtellot 684, Benson 794, Absalona 635, Woonsocket 588, Wyonkeag 557, and Sayles 460 feet. This hill country was well wooded and was full of all manner of wild game, constituting it a fine hunting ground, while the brooks and small streams were plentifully supplied with trout, pickerel, perch, and other fresh water fish.

At Caucaunjawatchuk, now Quinsnicket or Lincoln Woods, in the town of Lincoln, in the midst of the most romantic wilderness of forest life, tradition has it that the great council chamber of the Narragansetts was located, where matters of tribal and inter-tribal interests were deliberated and acted upon.

Of the Pawtucket river itself, much might be said as to its history as recorded in rocks and soils, hills, falls and water courses. The word Pawtucket means at "the great falls" and refers to the heavy drop of the stream at Pawtucket of about one hundred feet. The falls at Woonsocket constitute a tortuous and romantic water course, over and down blue mica-slate ledges, the total height of the falls being about one hundred and fifty feet. Before the construction of dams below Woonsocket, the river was a favorite stream for salmon, the fish forming an important article in the bill of fare of the Indians and the original settlers



of the valley. Trumbull, an excellent authority on Indian proper names, states that the word *Woonsocket* means "the place where the water comes down," or "the place of the falls." Newman derives *Woonsocket* from *Woone*—thunder, and *Suckete*—mist;—a poetic as well as a realistic meaning—*thundermist*. The original spelling was Wansokett, and was applied to the great hill, 588 feet high, about three miles to the southwest.

The most remarkable event in the history of the Pawtucket river was the change in its course, at Lonsdale, in the last geological age, about 100,000 years ago. Prior to that time the Pawtucket poured its waters into the bay along the valley of the present Moshassuck. While it is impossible to describe the actual conditions of this valley at that remote age, it is sufficient for our present purpose to state that a permanent dam was thrown across the old bed of the Pawtucket at Lonsdale and the stream, then a great ice river, was turned eastward, to form its new course and bed, where it flows to-day, forming the great falls at the city of Pawtucket.

The Nipmuc Indians were the owners and occupants of Northwest Rhode Island. These Indians were subject to the Narragansetts and occupied a portion of Massachusetts territory on the north and very likely of Connecticut on the west. There is no doubt of their loyalty to the Narragansetts and of their extinction in Philip's War. It is certain that they aided the superior tribe in the manufacture of peag and stone utensils and that much of their food was obtained from the sands and waters of the Bay. A hill, a brook and a village in Northwest Rhode Island still bear the name Nipmuc. All else has departed. Our modern roads follow the Nipmuc trails, and the Mendon road and other lines of modern travel were laid out by the red men, the forest and stream surveyors and travellers of Indian days.

The territory of north and east Woonsocket was originally and aboriginally a part of a large section owned and occupied by the Nipmucs, and constituted a portion of the grant of the English Crown to the Massachusetts Bay Colony, dated Westminster, England, March 4, 1628-29. A portion of the Nipmuc lands was bought of the Indians by Moses Paine, Peter Brackett and others of Braintree, Massachusetts, April 22, 1662, for £24, and was incorporated as *Mendon*, May 15, 1667. Mendon, Massachusetts, was therefore the mother town of that part of the city of Woonsocket north and east of the Pawtucket river.

Solitary family life in uncleared forests was not attractive to Moshassuck founders, nor was such a life safe in the midst of wild and savage beasts and possibly wild and savage men. Hence it was that Providence Plantation families are first found in their comfortable log cabin homes

at Providence and Pawtuxet where life was tolerably secure and where children could be born and reared in safety.

The planter's first duty was to select his home lot on the "Towne Streete," fell the forest, hew the timber for his cabin, build it as secure as possible, with its mammoth fireplace and blazing fire to insure against the zero winter weather. His next work was to select "The Outlands" for his clearings and future home, where the neighborly protection of several families could be secured. The women and children spent their days indoors or out on the banks of the Moshassuck, digging clams or catching fish, near the town. The men with the bell-muzzles slung across their backs went daily to their tasks of clearing the forests with axe and fire-brands. On Indian-cleared lands it was possible to plant Indian corn, oats, barley, beans, potatoes, etc., at once. On timber land the planter must usually wait a season and then plant in the stumpage of the forest land. The early homes of nearly all the first families who settled northwest Rhode Island are to be found in Austin's "Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island."

A brief study of a few of the original proprietors and settlers of this northland will enable us to understand the character and deeds of the founders of Northwest Rhode Island. Thomas Olney, the founder of this large and distinguished Rhode Island family, was among the first to take a title to "Outlands" on the lower reaches of the Moshassuck and Woonasquatucket rivers. He was one of the original members of the First Baptist Church, Providence, of which his son Thomas was minister in 1668. Father and son held town offices from town clerk to assistant to the Governor for one hundred and fourteen years. The family estates extended from "Observation Hill" on the east to "Round Hill," beyond the "Seven Mile Line," on the west, and included the section named Olneyville. The Olney name found its way into Smithfield and Glocester, with intermarriages with the Whipple, Sayles, Waterman and Williams families. In the fourth generation of this family, there were sixty of the name and blood.

The Arnold name has occupied a large place in Rhode Island history, Thomas and his descent in the north and William and his line at Pawtuxet and Newport. The home lot and house of Thomas Arnold were on the west side of North Main street, Providence, near the foot of Pleasant street, opposite the house of Maturin Ballou, the ancestor of the Ballou family.

Thomas Arnold was a wise prospector of lands, in choosing a large section of rich meadow and uplands in the Moshassuck, at "The World's End," on both banks of the river, north of "Observation Hill." The oldest son, Richard Arnold, inheriting his father's excellent judgment in

land values and business enterprises, left to his brother Eleazer the development of the Moshassuck estate, pressing on through the wilderness, over the hill country, northward to "Wansokett," where he took up lands on both sides of the Pawtucket river and the meadow called "The Island." By this act, Richard Arnold became the first settler in the present area of Woonsocket. Here at the falls, he built a sawmill prior to 1666, the first use of the water-power of record at the falls. In 1712, his son, John, built a corn and fulling mill on "The Island." From this date until 1731, the lands now occupied by the city of Woonsocket west of the river were owned by Richard Arnold and Samuel Comstock. Arnold was a man of great energy, ability and wisdom; was a deputy to the Assembly thirteen years, an assistant to the Governor nine years; speaker of the House of Deputies two years, and a member of the Council of Sir Edmund Andros in 1686.

Richard Arnold married Mary Angell, a daughter of Thomas, a founder of Providence with Roger Williams. Their children were Richard, John, Thomas and Mary. Richard married Mary Woodward. John married Mary Mowry, and Mary married Thomas Steere. By his will, Richard gave to his sons Richard and John all his lands at "Wansokett," including the territory now occupied by the Union and Globe villages. The later families and the lands they owned are set forth clearly in Richard-son's History of Woonsocket.

Eleazer Arnold, brother of Richard, built his first house at Sherman's Corner near Quinsnicket Park (Lincoln Woods) in 1687, on the old Mendon Road, a highway from Providence to the towns in Massachusetts Bay Colony on the northwest. At the time of its building it stood on the outer limit of the clearing, while on the north, the primeval forest shadowed its walls. To protect this exposed northerly side of the house from the Indian fire-arrows, it was built of stone and originally the roof was covered with shingles set in mortar. The Arnolds early espoused the religious faith and practice of the Quakers. As a result the Quaker Meeting House at Saylesville and that at Woonsocket were built by the Arnolds and their neighbors for the meetings of the early Friends of Northern Rhode Island, the former in 1703, and the latter in 1719.

The Sayles family has cut a large figure in the history of Northern Rhode Island. John, the first, born 1633, married Mary Williams, daughter of Roger. He held many offices of honor and trust in Providence, as town clerk, deputy, town treasurer, commissioner, etc., etc. His son, John, born 1654, migrated northward, along the "Old Mendon Road," climbed the eastern slope of Westquadomset Hill and, near the summit, bought lands and built the house which now stands as a monument to his

sagacity as a land surveyor, and to a memorial of his industry as a quarrier of stone for the huge chimney and fire-place. It is to be hoped that this ancient dwelling with its later additions will be preserved as a relic of our early pioneer life in Northwest Rhode Island.

John Sayles, the third, born 1692, married Elizabeth Comstock, daughter of Samuel and Elizabeth (Arnold) Comstock, thus forming an alliance with two of the strongest families in these parts. Children ten were born to them; four sons and six daughters. A brother, Richard, married (first) Mercy Phillips; (second) Alice Arnold, and (third) Susannah Inman—the first wife giving him six sons. Another brother, Thomas, married Esther Scott, who gave birth to six Sayles boys and three girls. From Austin's Records one might judge that John and Thomas Sayles "ran" the old mother town of Smithfield from 1731 for a long period and the family still lives, in lines direct and indirect, throughout the towns of Northwestern Rhode Island.

The Mowry family has been one of the virile and persistent stock in the life of Northern Rhode Island. It sprang from Roger Mowry, who built a house in Providence, moving there from Salem, Massachusetts, 1644. Roger Mowry kept a tavern, or "house of entertainment" in Providence from 1655 to 1669, and, in 1656, made entry of "ten ankers of liquors," plus "three ankers of rum and two barrels of sack." An "anker" was from nine to ten and one-half gallons. "Sack" was a strong white wine from Southern Europe. As Providence had at this time throughout the whole town only about one hundred freemen, this liquor supply is a token of the drink habit of the people at that time. The old "Roger Mowry tavern" stood on Abbott street, Providence, as a distinct monument of seventeenth century architecture, until about 1900, when it was demolished to make room for a three-decker tenement house, the modern *monster* of *Mammon*, a defiance to all architecture, unless of *Diabolism*. Two sons of Roger, Nathaniel (2) and John (2), the former marrying Joanna, daughter of Edward and Barbara (Phillips) Inman, with a title to lands on Westquadomset Hill, from William Mimion of Punkapaug, Massachusetts, filed up the old Mendon trail and settled on the summits of Westquadomset and Wyonkeag hills, building substantial houses and improving a grist and saw mill privilege in the Woonasquatucket Valley.

Of Roger Mowry's twelve children came forty-five grandchildren and one hundred and nineteen great-grandsons, born before 1713, the intermarriages being made with nearly every family name in ancient Providence, 1636-1731, the charge of race suicide could not be sustained against the Mowry family, which to-day has twenty-six names in the Providence Telephone Directory. In the city of Providence, over forty tax payers

spell their names Mowry, and the same is true of more than eighty persons in the Providence Directory.

Richard Scott was a lineal descendant of the Scotts of Buccleuch, of which Sir Walter Scott was born. The family line extends to Margaret, St. Margaret, Queen of Scotland, daughter of Edward and granddaughter of Edmund Ironside, 1038-1093. Through Margaret, tradition and history lead to Charlemagne, King of the Franks and Emperor of Rome, 742-814. Richard Scott, his wife Katharine (Mearbury, sister of Anne Hutchinson) and daughter Mary, arrived in Boston from England in the ship "Griffin" in 1634. In 1639 he was at Providence, evidence of which is the Providence Petition, written by him with his name at the head of the paper, over the signature of eleven others, declaring therein a democracy of government "*only in civil things.*" Scott's Providence home was near that of Roger Williams, on "the Towne Streete." His "outland" was at Saylesville, about the pond now bearing his name. Here the Scott home was later established and therein were nourished the first Quaker converts in Rhode Island—the whole family adopting the new faith, and suffering sad persecutions at Boston on that account. The wife, Katharine, "a mother of many children, of an unblamable conversation, and a grave, sober, ancient woman, and of good breeding," for her protest against the treatment of the Quakers, was committed to prison in Boston and given "ten cruel stripes with a three-fold corded knotted whip." Christopher Holden, who married Mary Scott, had his right ear cut off in Boston in 1658, and Mary, and Patience a daughter of eleven years, were both confined in a Boston jail for visiting Mr. Holden, at Boston.

Of such martyr stuff this family was made, which counted no trial too severe in the effort to plant in the wilderness of the Upper Moshassuck the principles of civil and religious liberty. It was the Quaker who bore the sharp sufferings of persecution and martyrdom in Massachusetts for the sake of liberty of conscience. It was the Quaker who wrote the first civil compact of Providence Plantations. It was the Quaker who pioneered the northern wilderness to establish a faith and worship, the most spiritual of the world's religions, and set in motion forces that are still actively leavening the warring elements of mankind.

Peter Ballou, grandson of Maturin Ballou, of Providence, 1646, settled on Observation Hill, later Stump Hill, later still Reservoir Hill. The house, built in 1714, is still standing on a site commanding a fine view of the Moshassuck river, and the south section of Quinsnicket Park. Peter was married to Rebecca Esten, in 1714. Their oldest son was Maturin, a devout Baptist preacher of early days, and from him has descended eleven Universalist ministers, among whom was the great Universalist

preacher and divine, Hosea Ballou, first, and Hosea Ballou, second, a distinguished Universalist minister, scholar and educator. "These," says Rev. Adin Ballou, "seem to be uncommonly rich findings for the Universalists from one Calvinistic mine."

The outlands farther north, in the Loquassuck Valley (now Louisquisset) attracted other Ballous, where clearings were made and homesteads established. Later generations migrated to the North Smithfield territory, now Woonsocket, where the Ballou family still continues to hold an honored place. Hon. Latimer W. Ballou, for many years a representative of Rhode Island in the United States Congress, was a noted citizen of Woonsocket. Major Sullivan Ballou, born in Smithfield in 1829, an excellent soldier, an able lawyer, a speaker of the Rhode Island House of Representatives, when under thirty years commissioned as major in the Second Rhode Island Regiment, 1861, fatally wounded on the battlefield of Bull Run, Virginia, July 21, 1861, dying July 26, buried on the field, his body exhumed and burned by Georgia soldiers, a portion of the ashes buried at Swan Point Cemetery with imposing military honors; this is the brief story of a life of one of the noblest, purest souls that has ever dwelt in mortal habitation, to whom as to Marco Bozzaris, Byron's lines so fitly apply:

"We tell thy doom without a sigh,  
For thou art Freedom's now and Fame's—  
One of the few, the immortal names,  
That were not born to die."

Major Ballou's last letter, written to his wife, in his tent, on Saturday evening before the battle, is one of the most tender and patriotic utterances ever penned.

The opening years of the eighteenth century witnessed a rapid migration from the east to Western Rhode Island and Eastern Connecticut. At this time, Providence included all the territory north of the Pawtuxet and west of the Pawtucket to the east line of the State of Connecticut. The river valleys, hill protection, ponds, rivers, water power, forests, game and fish foods and rich virgin soil attracted farmers and into the "Outlands" they migrated, settling on cheap lands, building log cabins, clearing forests and raising virile children of the wild, but not wild children in any true sense. So many families had taken up lands in the west that towns and town government were demanded and, in 1731, ancient Providence was divided into four parts, bearing the names Providence, Smithfield, Scituate and Glocester, the seven mile line separating Providence and Smithfield on the east from Scituate and Glocester on the west. Later, subdivisions were made as follows:



Cranston was taken from Providence in 1754.

Johnston was taken from Providence, March 6, 1759.

North Providence was incorporated in 1765.

August 24, 1781, Foster was taken from Scituate.

Burrillville was set off from Glocester in 1806.

A portion of North Providence was added to Pawtucket in 1874.

North Smithfield was taken from Smithfield in 1871.

Lincoln was taken from Smithfield, 1871, and named in honor of President Lincoln.

A portion of Smithfield was annexed to Woonsocket in 1871, the town of Woonsocket having been set off from Cumberland, Rhode Island, in 1867, and the whole territory was incorporated as a city in 1888.

The early settlers of Northwest Rhode Island were strong, brave, honest, industrious men and women. The romance of the wilderness inspired heroic action. New lands, homes, children, the varied occupations of farmers' lives, the outlook towards freedom under a fair self-control, were compelling motives to a great body of people who have, from first to last, constituted the brain, blood, sinew and backbone of Rhode Island independency. Among the leading families of the Northwest of the founders' period were the following:

Arnold, Aldrich, Scott, Steere, Sayles, Ballou, Capron, West, Owen, Balcom, Slocum, Inman, Mowry, Knowles, Malavery, Pray, Ralph, Rhodes, Smith, Stefford, Slater, Johnson, Burgess, Hunt, Winsor, Paine, Putnam, Waldron, Williams, Wilkinson, Hackleton, Tinkham, Wright, Saunders, Randall, Atwell, Eddy, Farnum, Hopkins, Drowne, Foster, Barnes, Browne, Blackmar, Evans, Cornell, Hearndon, Jenckes, Lockwood, Mann, Mathewson, Phetteplace, Phillips, Shippee, Sprague, Thornton, Tourtellott, Cooke, Walling, Whipple, Browing, Comstock, Dexter, Hawkins, Johnston, Page, Cooper, Waterman, Potter, Wickenden, Plummer, West, Knowlton, King, Smith, Harris, Olney, Burlingame, Ross, Cary, Keach, Angell, Edwards, Fiske, Tyler, Hall, Fish, Blackmore, Dorrance, Wade, Irons, Carey, Sweet, Staples, Rowse, Tucker, Marsh, Hicks, Ralph, Bennett, Hayward, Knight, Aylsworth, Farnum, Whitman, Place, Abbott, Jillson. The ancestry of most of these families may be found in the "Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island."

After the division of the "Outlands" of Providence into three towns, surveys made and bounds fixed, the first act of legislation by the Colony empowered these towns to lay out highways in the same manner as Providence, and in 1734 the town of Scituate was directed to lay out a new highway, through that town to Plainfield, Connecticut, the thoroughfare now known as the Plainfield Pike. This road became a well established route for stages on the trip from Boston to New York.

In 1774, an act passed the General Assembly establishing a company of light infantry in the town of Glocester. At the same session, the



Scituate Hunters were chartered. In September, 1774, Scituate sent aid to Boston, "now suffering in the glorious cause of liberty," in a contribution of fat sheep and chose a Committee of Correspondence to coöperate with other towns, "to insure to us our invaluable rights and privileges." The Train Band of Scituate was divided into two companies.

Scituate was the birthplace and early home of Stephen Hopkins, Governor, and later a great leader in the Revolution. Jonathan Arnold, the author of the Rhode Island Declaration of Independence, lived on the Outlands of Smithfield. Daniel Owen, Chief Justice of the Supreme Court from 1792 to 1795, was a native of Glocester. Nelson W. Aldrich, a representative in both houses of the United States Congress for many years and an expert in finance, was born in Foster.

A grouping of a body of State officials will more clearly show some of the intellectual, civil and political products of Northwestern Rhode Island:

*Governors*—Stephen Hopkins, of Scituate, and Aram J. Pothier, of Woonsocket. Geo. H. Browne, of Glocester, was a defeated candidate in 1864.

*Lieutenant-Governors*—William West, Scituate; Daniel Owen, of Glocester; Isaac Saunders, of Scituate; Oscar J. Rathbun, of Woonsocket; Aram J. Pothier, of Woonsocket; Adelaar Archambault, of Woonsocket.

*Attorney General*—Ziba O. Slocum, of Glocester.

*General Treasurers*—Samuel Clark, of Smithfield, and Walter A. Read, of Glocester.

*Speakers of House of Representatives*—Stephen Hopkins, of Scituate; Job Randall, of Scituate; Elisha Mathewson, of Scituate; Nathan B. Sprague, of Smithfield; Samuel Y. Atwell, of Glocester; Thomas Steere, of Smithfield; Sullivan Ballou, of Smithfield; F. G. Jillson, of Woonsocket; Adin B. Capron, of Smithfield; F. Powen, of Scituate; F. E. Holden, of Woonsocket; Clarke H. Johnson, of Foster; Ambrose Kennedy, of Woonsocket; Frank F. Davis, of Glocester.

*Continental Congress*—Peleg Arnold, of Smithfield; Ezekiel Cornell, of Scituate; Daniel Mowry, of Smithfield.

*Senators in U. S. Congress*—Elisha Mathewson, of Scituate; Nelson W. Aldrich, of Foster; Jonathan Chase, of Lincoln.

*Representatives in U. S. Congress*—George H. Browne, of Glocester; Nelson W. Aldrich, of Foster; Charles H. Page, of Scituate; Warren O. Arnold, of Glocester; Adin B. Capron, of Smithfield; Ambrose Kennedy, of Woonsocket.

For a century and a half Northwest Rhode Island lived by agriculture and its forest products of fuel and timber. Its water power was used to saw lumber and grind corn and other cereals. Orchards yielded apples and grapes, with cider and vinegar as by-products. Dr. Solomon Drowne, at Mount Hygeia, with his neighbor, Hon. Theodore Foster, drank wine

of their own vintage, while they read Homer, Virgil and Shakespeare under their arboreal vines and fig trees. An Eutopia of pastoral happiness existed in the heart of the hill country of the northwest, with "none to molest or make afraid." Bucolic idylls were inspired in sylvan groves, while the bells of the herds tinkled as tell-tales in the hill sides and the lambs bleated for the food of maternal udders. It was the day of honest toil, healthy babies, and freedom from the slavishness of modern society. "Thrice happy and ever to be envied corner of the world, without vain glory, without riches, without learning and all their train of carking cares." Pomona, Ceres and Flora held court in the sylvan shades of the ancient Nipmuc lands long before the birth of the farmers' granges that celebrate the mystic art of husbandry, behind sealed doors with forms, symbols and ceremonials that would compel Cincinnatus to flee to his forest home with his oxen in flight at his heels. Goldsmith's "Sweet Auburn" was typified and realized among the hills of the Ponegansett, the Chepasack and the Woonasquatuckett.

Stories abound of deeds of strength, of valor and of patriotism of the Northwest. Here is one. Reuben Hopkins, of the tribe of Stephen, lived under the shadow of Durfee Hill. He had a home, a farm, a wife and a family of eleven children—six sons and five daughters. The daughters were all married and four of the six sons had taken wives. The War of the Revolution was staged at Concord and Lexington, Massachusetts. Northwest Rhode Island was peopled with a race of fighting hunters. The men of Foster heard the British guns and they longed for a sight of a British gunner. The senior Hopkins had learned the story of the invaders and called his sons and sons-in-law together in war council—twelve in all. Reuben spoke: "Boys, see here, we've got a job to whip them Brits. I'm goin' for a lick at 'em. Corn and 'taters will grow while we are gone and the gals can take care of the critters and garden sarss. Let's all jine the Rangers and show our Yankee stuff. I'm going; come on." Twelve recruits came out of the Hopkins home to join the American army at Cambridge, Massachusetts, after a conference with the women as to home affairs. One of the two unmarried sons was engaged to a neighbor's daughter, but haste for war postponed the nuptials. On the march to Boston, the boy who had left his sweetheart at home, made an agreement with his unmarried brother, that if he was killed in the fight, his brother, if he lived, should marry the girl he had left, in hope, at home. The Battle of Bunker Hill was fought and one Hopkins boy was slain. The other, the younger, true to his promise, on his return assuaged the grief of the stricken maid, by an early marriage. Somewhere among the hills of Northwestern Rhode Island are the silent graves where the Hopkins heroes sleep.

Northwestern Rhode Island was the home of a hardy, resolute, independent yeomanry. The clearing of land of forests and rocks cost hard work and a constant industry, summer and winter. Agriculture was the sole dependence of the people, and a comfortable living and the raising of a family were the limits of the ambitions of the marriageable young men and women. The larger town life at Providence offered no special attractions to those born in the country and reared in its atmosphere of individualism and independency. The town had even but few holiday attractions to country-bred people. Still more, the dress and bearing of the towns-people did not comport with the manners and homespun of their country cousins. There was an air of superiority, of proud satisfaction of the townsman when he met his brother of the farm, that built a barrier between the two of separateness and aloofness. Society and politics were of two species—the country reserved, quiet, conservative, the town progressive, assertive, and tending towards a low-grade aristocracy. A great gulf of variations divided the town and country of Providence Plantations. Not only so, but hostilities, family, financial, political, made members of the same family name hateful to and hated by each other.

For instance, the fight over paper money and the several bank issues of the Colony were distressful evidences of the existence of the town and country hostilities. Providence merchants and their representatives in the General Assembly were to a man, hard money men. The farmers and their representatives advocated and voted paper issues. Party spirit ran wild among the people. "Farmers vs. Merchants" was the country slogan. "Hard money or no trade" was the town reply. "Starve the town" was the answer from Scituate, Gloucester and Smithfield, and the farmers refused to bring their products to town. Until a compromise was effected, Providence had to go to the twenty mile line at Connecticut to get meat, corn and potatoes.

At the close of the Revolution, the party in favor of paper money became the State's Rights party and controlled the State until the adoption of the Constitution of the United States by Rhode Island in 1790. In the State election of 1786, the triumph of the paper money men was complete, John Collins of Newport being elected Governor and Daniel Owen of Gloucester being elected deputy governor. The General Assembly, at the May session, controlled by the country towns of Providence and Washington counties, issued a paper money bank of £100,000. In this act, the paper party was opposed by Newport and Bristol counties and the towns of Westerly and Providence. The bills were to be loaned to the people according to the apportionment of the last tax, upon a pledge of real estate of double their value, and to be paid into the treasury at

the end of fourteen years. Any person who should refuse to receive the bills on the same terms as specie or in any way to discourage their circulation was subject to a penalty of £100 and the loss of a freeman's rights. Business now became stagnant in Providence and Newport. Merchants and traders closed their shops. Farmers refused to bring their produce to market. Providence county was the storm centre of the hard money and soft money parties. A town meeting was held at Providence to consult as to relief against famine, and in consequence a convention of the other towns of the county was held at Scituate to devise measures to carry out the bank act. Daniel Owen was the leading spirit in this body, which was firmly resolved on carrying out its revolutionary policy. The farmers were advised to withhold their produce from all who opposed the bank. Civil war seemed imminent. Shays' rebellion in Western Massachusetts had already taken shape and Northwestern Rhode Island was preparing to follow in the same disastrous way. In September, 1786, a convention of all the towns of Providence county met at Smithfield to mature plans to defeat the merchant class of the State, whom the leaders accused of exporting specie and thereby causing great distress. At this convention it was proposed that the State provide vessels and import goods; that produce, lumber and labor might take the place of money in the payment of taxes; thus furnishing cargoes in return for which specie and goods could be obtained. Interest certificates were no longer to be received in payment of duties, but importers must pay in money. Negotiable notes were to be repealed and the statute of limitations shortened to two years. Governor Collins refused to call a session of the Assembly to act on such rank socialism. The historic Trevett vs. Weeden case grew out of the legislation of the Assembly of May and June, 1786. Its history is given in the chapter relating to the Judiciary.

The independent yeomanry of the country towns thus made the first challenge of the proletariat of the State to the more progressive, the better educated, the more prosperous of the mercantile towns. Party feeling was very strong and neither cherished the spirit of compromise. The duel of financial ideas became a war of factions that compelled Rhode Island to stand out till the last against the Federal Union, entering the family of States on May 20, 1790, only by a majority of two, Barrington breaking the tie of the other towns by the votes of Samuel Allen and Gen. Thomas Allin, delegates to the Convention from that old Plymouth-Massachusetts town. Judge Rogers' discourse on the adoption of the Federal Constitution well reveals the attitude of the two parties in the final struggle between States Rights and Nationalism.

The incoming of machinery for the construction of cotton and woolen goods in 1790, proved a civilizer and unifier of the country and town

peoples of Northern Rhode Island. The vast water power of the Blackstone, the Woonasquatucket, the Pawtuxet, the Chepachet, and the Union rivers in Northwest Rhode Island and of Queens river in Southwest Rhode Island had hitherto been limited to grinding of grain and the sawing of lumber. The supreme test of the dynamic and commercial values of these streams now began to be made by the incoming of Samuel Slater, with efficient, workable machines for producing yarns and their conversion into cloth. Wherever a storage of power could be found, a mill was located, laborers gathered and villages were founded. At the same time agriculture took on new home markets in feeding the operative families of the mill neighborhoods. Still more came of it, for the thrifty farmer was solicited to put his surplus money into the factory and thereby secure the larger profits that flow from manufactures. With the slow increase of wealth, advancing in arithmetrical progression, the discomforts of farm life gradually disappeared and the farmer, his wife and children, lived better, dressed better, had some money to spend on the so-called luxuries of life and intercourse sprang up, more or less familiar, between Providence and the ancient dwellers of "The Outlands" now claiming right of recognition. It is easy to see that the process of unification had begun with the construction of the cloth mill and the mill dam above it, the consequent transformation of rural life and the reconstruction of social, financial and political relations between town and country in Providence Plantations, as evolved in the first half of the nineteenth century. Turnpikes and bridges were constructed for travel, meeting houses built for worship, stores established for trade, post offices for business and social uses, banks for the safeguarding of capital, public school houses for primary education and academies for the uplift of the ambitious and talented youth. All this and more came from harnessing the wild and wayward rivers of Northwest Rhode Island to a great driving wheel in the flume of a rocky cataract of the hill country of the little State. At the opening of the twentieth century more than a hundred factory villages with three cities now occupy the valleys of Northern Rhode Island, whose existence is easily traced to the storage of water in this former wilderness wild, the early home of savage beasts and red men, whom the world called savages in their fight for life and their ancient rights and liberties. Old feuds died with their possessors years ago. Industry has distributed its products quite equally to the large bodies of the population, and unity, prosperity and peace prevail between the valleys of the Pawtuxet and the Pawtucket.



## CHAPTER XLIII

---

### THE JUDICIARY









FEDERAL BUILDING

## CHAPTER XLIII. THE JUDICIARY.

WE WHOSE NAMES ARE UNDERWRITTEN DO HEREBY SOLEMNLY, IN THE PRESENCE OF JEHOVAH, INCORPORATE OURSELVES INTO A BODIE POLITICK AND, AS HE SHALL HELP, WILL SUBMIT OUR PERSONS, LIVES AND ESTATES UNTO OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST, THE KING OF KINGS AND LORD OF LORDS AND TO ALL THOSE PERFECT AND MOST ABSOLUTE LAWS OF HIS GIVEN IN HIS HOLY WORD OF TRUTH, TO BE GUIDED AND JUDGED THEREBY.

This declaration of the incorporation of "A Bodie Politick" or civil state was made on the 7th day of March, 1637-38, and was signed by twenty-three men, former citizens of Boston. This civil compact, the first of its kind in the New World, was adopted by the founders of the town of Portsmouth on the Island of Aquidneck as the foundation of their government. They declared "those perfect and most absolute laws of Jesus Christ, King of Kings and Lord of Lords," to be the basis of protection of individual and civil life in the new settlement. Divine laws as promulgated by a Divine Lawgiver were established as the standards of conduct in this new Pilgrim State. Under the supremacy of such statutes they proposed to "submit our persons and lives and estates." The practical application of the principle will appear as we proceed in the development of local and colonial government in the Colony of Rhode Island on Aquidneck.

On the day of the creation of the "Bodie Politick," the freemen elected and constituted William Coddington, Esquire, a judge amongst them, covenanting "to yield all due honor unto him, according to the lawes of God," and, in return, William Coddington accepted the office of "a Judge amongst them, covenanting to do justice and judgement impartially according to the lawes of God, and to maintain the Fundamental Rights and Privileges of this Bodie Politick." This is the first formal and solemn recognition of the status and duties of a judge of record in American History.

This "Bodie Politick" was not a voluntary association of individuals. The rather, it was a corporate body, each member covenanting with the others to accept authority and judgment as exercised by a majority of the freemen. It determined by vote the admission of members, the qualifications of voters, the choice of officers, the fixing of rules and laws regulating personal, social and property rights, and it chose and ordained ministers of justice and officers of government.

Judge Coddington was the chief officer of the town, presiding at its meetings, wherein public business was transacted in an orderly fashion, laws were made, orders passed, fines and punishments determined, and freemen admitted. In July, 1638, a prison was built, twelve feet long, ten wide, and ten high, for the detention of lawbreakers. A pair of stocks and a whipping-post were ordered the same month. Mr. Randall Holden was chosen marshal for a year. On August 15, 1638, legal warrants were issued for the arrest of George Willmore, George Parker, John Lutner, John Arnold, Samuel Smith, Robert Stanton, Anthony Robinson, and John Vahun for engaging in a drunken riot on the 13th. The trial took place on the 15th, each of the offenders was sentenced "to pay five shillings into the Town Treasury, one to sit one hour in the stocks, and two "to sett till the evening." This is the first trial of a punishable offence recorded in Rhode Island history. The court made the punishment of these offenders of the law quick and speedy—only two days between the drunken spree and fines and a free seat in the public stocks. One of the offenders, who sat in the stocks one hour, was a carpenter by trade, and soon "departed the Island without leave or license," leaving unpaid bills to vex the people.

On the second of the 11th month, 1638-39, the freemen of Portsmouth voted to make the elder an assistant to the Judge "in the execution of justice and judgment, for the regulating and ordering of all offenses and offenders, and for the drawing up and determining of all such Rules and Laws as shall be according to God, which may conduct to the Good and Welfare of the Common weale." It was further voted "that the Judge together with the Elders shall Rule and Govern according to the General Rule of the Word of God when they have no particular rule from God's Word." It was further voted that the Judge and Elders should report to the Assembly of freemen of the town, every three months, "all such cases, actions and Rules which have passed through their hands, by them to be scanned and weighed by the word of Christ." This town action conferred upon the Judge and Elders legislative as well as judicial authority, with the appendage of a referendum of their acts to the freemen, every quarter of the year. In case the Lord "dispensed light to the contrary of whatt by the Judge and Elders hath been determined, that then and there it should be repealed," otherwise their acts and judgments stood confirmed.

Here we have the recognition of the principle of absolute Democracy, that all power, legislative, executive and judicial, inheres in individual and corporate freemen, and that such power may be delegated to chosen representatives, to be exercised by them, subject to the revision or repeal of their acts and decisions by the body of freemen, orderly assembled and acting. This principle of the supremacy of the people over legislatures and

courts, as enumerated at Portsmouth in 1638, held sway in Colony and State for more than two centuries, until the adoption of the State Constitution in 1842, and, in a limited sense, in chancery cases until 1860.

At the election of 1638-39, Nicholas Easton, John Coggeshall and William Brenton were chosen Elders to assist Judge Coddington in legislative and judicial functions. We have then at the beginning of the settlement at Portsmouth, on Aquidneck, a "Bodie Politick," corporate, democratic, founded on the principles of equality and justice as laid down in the Bible and as expounded by the Great Teacher, Jesus the Christ. The chief officer of the new State was William Coddington, to whom the freemen gave the title of Judge, and with whom, in his legislative, executive and judicial functions, were associated the Elders of the new colony, distinguished for their known and tried character and ability. The judiciary of Rhode Island of the twentieth century may take a just pride in its Aquidneck ancestry of the seventeenth century.

Later in the month, the town as a "Commonwealth" agreed to choose a constable and sergeant "to execute the Lawes and penalties thereof, to see that peace be kept, that there be no unlawful meetings or anything that may tend to Civill disturbance, and to inform in Generall of all manifest Breaches of the Law of God." The constable had authority "to command partie or parties one or more" to assist him in the discharge of his duties. Samuel Wilbour was chosen as constable and Henry Bull as sergeant, and were duly commissioned. It was ordered that the prison be "sett neare or joyned unto the howse of Henry Bull, Sergeant."

The court, consisting of four persons, the Judge and the three Elders as associate judges, on the 7th of the 12th month, 1638-39, found Richard Maxon, blacksmith, guilty of "oppression in the way of his trade;" required Osmond Douch to give bond to satisfy complaints "for damage and wrong done;" and Mr. Aspinwall was required to suspend his business as a boat builder, "being a suspected person for sedition against the State." On the 28th of April, 1639, a warrant was granted for the attachment of Mr. Aspinwall's shallop, on account of debts to Geoffrey Champ-lin and William Cowley.

On the same day, April 28, 1639, William Coddington, Judge, Nicholas Easton, John Coggeshall and William Brenton, Elders; and John Clarke, Jeremy Clarke, Thomas Hazard, Henry Bull, and William Dyre, Clerk, separated from the town at the north end of Aquidneck to found a new town at the south end, which they named New Port. These founders, by a written contract, agreed to propagate a Plantation in the midst of the Island or elsewhere and "that our determinations shall be by major voice of Judge and Elders, the Judge to have a double voice."

On April 30, 1639, the people at the north end of the Island (Pocas-set or Portsmouth) declared themselves "the legall subjects of (his Majestie) King Charles," binding themselves "into a civill body politicke, unto his lawes according to matters of Justice." They adopted the majority rule in town government, under "a ruler or Judge amongst us in all trans-actions" for the space of one year. William Hutchinson was chosen as Judge for the year 1639-40. It was voted that a Court should be held quarterly and annually, "to doe right betwixt man and [man—a] Jury of twelve men." An order was also passed that eight men might decide a controversy, not to exceed forty shillings in value.

In November, 1639, Newport acknowledged the sovereignty of Charles I., and agreed to be subject to the laws of their Sovereign, "and all actions of the Case, or Dept. (debt) shall be in such Courts," and Judges as are appointed. Jeremy Clarke was elected constable. In December, John Bartlett and John Hudson were fined each five shillings for excess in drinking, and Nicholas Easton, one of the judges, was fined five shillings for "coming to a public meeting without his weapon." Justice was surely blindfolded in 1639, at Newport. A pair of stocks and a whipping post were set up in Newport, in the eighth month of the town.

Prior to the 12th of March, 1640, the two towns on Aquidneck had agreed on a plan for a Federal Union, and on that day a "Generall Court of Election" was held at Newport. It was agreed that the "Chiefe Majistrate of the Island shall be called GOVERNOUR and the next Deputie Governour and the Rest of the Magistrates Assistants." The Governor and two Assistants were to be chosen from one town and the Deputy Governor and two Assistants from the other. The election resulted in the choice of William Coddington for Governor, William Brenton for Deputy Governor, and Nicholas Easton, John Coggeshall, William Hutchinson and John Porter as Assistants. Jeremy Clarke was chosen constable for Newport and John Sanford for Portsmouth. Henry Bull was elected sergeant for the Aquidneck Union. It was ordered that the Governor and four Assistants should be Justices of the Peace.

We now enter upon the second stage of the Rhode Island judiciary, when the judicial function was exercised by the magistrates, consisting of the Governor, the Deputy Governor, and the four Assistants, which, with the jurors, made up the personnel of the Aquidneck Court, to be held on the first Tuesday of each month at Newport and Portsmouth. "The sayd Court shall have full powre to judge and determine all such cases and actions as shall be presented."

A single paragraph is needed to state and explain the spheres of the assemblies termed Courts at Aquidneck in 1640. THE GENERAL COURT OF ELECTIONS was the annual meeting of freemen of the two towns for the



election of Governor and other general officers. This meeting was held on the 12th of March at Newport and Portsmouth alternately, until 1647. The two PARLIAMENTARY or GENERAL COURTS for legislation were held on the first Wednesday after the 12th of March and the 12th of October. These Courts corresponded to our General Assembly and were fashioned after English and Massachusetts Bay models. Four QUARTER SESSIONS COURTS or MAGISTRATES COURTS were held, one on the first Tuesday in July, another on the first Tuesday in January, and the other two on the Tuesday before the GENERAL COURT. TOWN COURTS could be called by the town magistrates, on every first Tuesday of the month in Newport, and on every first Thursday of the month at Portsmouth, wherein actions were entered, juries empanelled and cases tried, provided the case were not one "of Life and Limb." Appeals could be made from the TOWN COURT to the QUARTER SESSIONS COURTS.

The supreme event in the history of Rhode Island occurred at Portsmouth, between the 16th and 19th of March, 1641, after the GENERAL COURT OF ELECTION, in a legislative session of the GENERAL COURT or GENERAL ASSEMBLY. The union of the two towns in 1640, established a colony on Aquidneck, which was followed by the election of a governor and other colonial officers, creating thereby organized and orderly judicial proceedings under Colonial magistrates. In the regular course of development it seemed to the leaders of the Colony to make a clear definition of the quality of government, which Bancroft declares "rested on the principle of intellectual liberty; philosophy itself could not have placed it on a broader basis." Out of the Portsmouth Declaration proceed all the essential elements and guarantees of life, liberty and happiness under law ever exercised in the commonwealth.

IT IS ORDERED AND UNANIMOUSLY AGREED UPON THAT THE GOVERNMENT WHICH THIS BODIE POLITICK DOETH ATTEND UNTO IN THIS ISLAND, AND THE JURISDICTION THEREOF, IN FAVOUR OF OUR PRINCE, IS A DEMOCRACIE, OR POPULAR GOVERNMENT; THAT IS TO SAY, IT IS IN THE POWRE OF THE BODY OF FREEMEN ORDERLY ASSEMBLED, OR THE MAJOR PART OF THEM, TO MAKE OR CONSTITUTE JUST LAWES, BY WHICH THEY WILL BE REGULATED, AND TO DEPUTE FROM AMONG THEMSELVES SUCH MINISTERS AS SHALL SEE THEM FAITHFULLY EXECUTED BETWEEN MAN AND MAN.

IT WAS FURTHER ORDERED BY THE AUTHORITY OF THIS PRESENT COURTE, THAT NONE BEE ACCOUNTED A DELINQUENT FOR DOCTRINE; PROVIDED IT BE NOT DIRECTLY REPUGNANT TO YE GOVERNMENT OR LAWES ESTABLISHED.

It was also ordered that a MANUAL SEALE shall be provided for the STATE, and that the Signett or Engraving thereof, shall be a SHEAFE of ARROWS bound up, and in the Liess or Bond, this motto indented: *Amor Vincet Omnia*.

The local court of Portsmouth under Judge William Coddington, in 1638, in a period of three years, becomes the Supreme Court of Rhode Island Colony on Aquidneck, and the Justice of the Peace at the village is elected to the Chief Justice of the Colony, with a Colonial Seal affixed to his decisions. The inferior court of a town becomes a part of the Colonial judiciary. This procedure of a lone settlement from a declarative legal status, based on the Bible as the Word of God to a Democracy of freemen in the full enjoyment of soul liberty in the short period of three years is without a precedent in history.

In 1642, the General Court at its September session, at Newport, ordered that "The Freemen of the Towne in their Towne Meetings Shall appoint the Juries for their Courts." We have noted the election of the Chief Magistrates as Justices of the Peace. A Justice, under English and Massachusetts rules could reform abuses, punish offenders by imprisonment, but could not inflict corporal punishment without the presence and consent of one of the Assistants. Jurors were paid one shilling for every cause before every Court. The last record of a General Court of Election of the Aquidneck Colony is of March 13, 1644, when William Coddington and the magistrates of 1642 were continued in office and the regime of the Courts continued in the two Island towns.

A fatal lapse occurs of three years of civil and judicial action, which needs explanation. In September, 1642, at a Parliamentary or General Court held at Newport, Governor Coddington and the other Colonial officials were chosen as a committee to procure a Patent for the Island towns from the English Crown. This committee failed to act promptly. Roger Williams of Providence, in 1643, took ship for England, of his own motion, interceded with Sir Harry Vane, and, through Vane's influence obtained a Patent of Incorporation of "Providence Plantations, in the Narragansett Bay in New England," to include the towns of Providence, Portsmouth and Newport. The injustice of this act of Mr. Williams appears when we see that the Island towns had established a Democratic government, with regular Courts of Justice, under able and experienced rulers and judges, with a population several fold larger than at Providence. Providence at this time had no government, a small number of people, scattered, organized only as a Proprietary, with no civil or judicial officers or functions. As late as 1655, Providence had only forty-two freemen and all poor. By the Williams Patent, obtained secretly, without the knowledge or consent of the freemen and government of the Island towns, their government, courts and all the foundations for Colonial life were overthrown and all was

"Ruin upon ruin, rout on rout;  
Confusion worse confounded."

It has been maintained by an able Rhode Island jurist and writer that the Williams Patent "conferred absolute authority within its bounds." Let us see. The enacting clause grants "A Free Charter, Civil Incorporation and Government; that they may order and govern their Plantation in such a manner as to maintain Justice and Peace, both among themselves, and towards all Men with whom they have to do." \* \* \* \* \* Provided nevertheless that the said Laws, Constitutions and Punishments for the Civil Government of the Plantations be conformable to the Laws of England." As Charles the First was the ruling monarch of England, we may safely conclude what "absolute authority" meant in 1644, or even in 1663, under Charles the Second. Three years elapsed before the Island towns became reconciled to accept the Williams Patent, and then only after concessions that gave to them their recognized supremacy—a supremacy numerical, moral, intellectual, financial, governmental and judicial. As Richman says, Rhode Island on Aquidneck was an "entity, Providence a non-entity." Stiness writes, "The early years (at Providence) were years of dissension and division. They recognized no superior power or central government." Stokes states, "Providence was without strong, and at times, any government in the early days, partly because the town had little to govern." But, under the Williams Patent, a community with no government assumes to control an established, well ordered corporate Body Politic on Aquidneck. The tail made a strenuous but futile effort to wag the dog. Meanwhile, at Newport, something was doing to bring the discordant elements into outward harmony and that was the framing of a code of laws, suited to the needs of all the people. A constructive policy of the rights and duties of freemen becomes the peace-maker between the divergent elements at the mouth and head of Narragansett Bay.

By an agreement entered into by the Williams party of Providence and the freemen of Aquidneck, a General Court of Election was held at Portsmouth, May 19-21, 1647, with John Coggeshall of Newport as moderator of the Assembly. A code of laws had been drawn up to be submitted to the General Assembly. Dr. John Clarke was probably the author and compiler. Governor Coddington had withheld his assent to the Patent and refused office under it. Clarke and Coggeshall were the pacificators and Providence had consented to the Code, "desiring to hold a correspondence with the whole Colonie in the modell that hath been latelie shewn unto us by our worthy Friends of the Island." Not only did the first General Assembly under the Williams Patent enact a new code, but, by unanimous vote, all the freemen assembled owned and submitted "to the Lawes, as they are contracted in the Bulke with the Administration of Justice, according thereto" as they had been established by

the General Assembly and Courts of the Island towns. It was ordered that copies of those laws and legal decisions should be made and sent to Providence and Warwick. The laws of Oléaron were declared in force for the benefit of the Aquidneck seamen. It was at this session of the General Assembly that the Initiative and Referendum were enacted—the first legislation of its kind in America. After the election of general officers, with John Coggeshall of Newport, as Governor, and Roger Williams, William Coddington, John Sanford and Randall Holden, as assistants, William Dyre as clerk, and Jeremy Clarke as treasurer, the GENERAL COURT considered and adopted the LAW CODE OF 1647, which with amendments constituted Rhode Island statutory law for seventy years.

Concerning the Code of Laws of 1647, there can be but one opinion as to its origin, value and far-reaching influence. It is admitted by unanimous agreement that the Code was written on the Island of Rhode Island by a Rhode Island author. In its preamble it asserts the two cardinal doctrines of the founders of the Rhode Island "Bodie Politick" or Colony on Aquidneck. It affirms that the government of the new colonial jurisdiction is "DEMOCRATICALL"—"*A Government held by the free and voluntarie consent of all, or the greater part of the free Inhabitants.*" This is but a reaffirmation of the declaration made at Newport, May, 1641, in the union of the two Island towns, Portsmouth and Newport, in "A DEMOCRACIE OR POPULAR GOVERNMENT."

The other doctrine is of equal significance—the guarantee of the "lawfull right and Libertie," to each and every person, to think, believe and worship, according to his own conscience, peaceably and quietly. This doctrine also was clearly enunciated at Newport in May, 1641, in the consolidation of the two towns on Aquidneck. Governor Arnold claims that "both of these principles were exclusively Rhode Island doctrines, and to her belongs the credit of them both." Had the distinguished historian of Rhode Island stated that the RHODE ISLAND to which he referred was the COLONY OF RHODE ISLAND ON AQUIDNECK ISLAND, as he undoubtedly meant, a glimmering doubt as to his local meaning would have been impossible.

As to the authorship of the Code, the great honor undoubtedly belongs to Dr. John Clarke, the only man of a liberal education in the Colony. He was also the leader and teacher of the Island towns in things spiritual and temporal and the minister of the liberal Puritan church of Newport. An examination of the qualifications of the several persons of note on the Island, including Governor Coddington, removes all doubt as to the writer of the Code, in harmony, as are all its leading features, with Dr. Clarke's well-known attitude in civil and religious concerns. Dr. Clarke's

clarity of mind, democratic principles and spiritual vision confirm the claim.

Governor Arnold pronounces a splendid eulogium on the Code of 1647 and its authors: "We hazard little in saying that the digest of 1647, for simplicity of diction, unencumbered as it is by the superfluous verbiage that clothes our modern statutes in learned obscurity; for breadth of comprehension, embracing as it does, the foundation of the whole body of Law, on every subject, which has since been adopted; and for vigor and originality of thought and boldness of expression, as well as for the vast significance and the brilliant triumph of the principles it embodies, presents a model of legislation which has never been surpassed." That sentence was written two centuries after the Code had been adopted at Newport.

Stiness adds, "What makes it forever immortal in the constitutional history of this Nation, is its Bill of Rights, breathing the spirit of it, but far more advanced and liberal than the Magna Charta of England."

An analysis of the Rhode Island Code adopted at Newport in 1647, shows the following leading features:

- I. The declaration of a democratic form of government.
- II. Absolute liberty of all persons in "religious concerns."
- III. A bill of rights as to "Lands or Liberties."
- IV. Official rank determined and limited by a majority vote.
- V. The General Assembly, founded on charter rights, the source of Law and official authority.
- VI. Loyalty and obedience to authority essential to citizenship.
- VII. The common law of England "preserving every man safe in his own person, name and estate,"—the ground of Rhode Island laws. Under this head five general laws were included:
  - a.* High treason and rebellion.
  - b.* Murders, assaults and accessories.
  - c.* Whoremongers.
  - d.* Larceny, conspiracy and fraud.
  - e.* Liars and slanderers.
- VIII. Relief of the poor and common scolds.
- IX. Ale houses, licenses and drunkenness.
- X. Archery.
- XI. Marriage.
- XII. Probate of wills.
- XIII. Colonial judiciary.
- XIV. Public officers and records.
- XV. Jury trials and pleadings.
- XVI. Table of legal fees.

The Code of 1647 occupies fifty-three pages in Volume One, Rhode Island Colonial Records. The Code closes with these remarkable words

of affirmation: "These are the laws that Concern all men, and these are the penalties for the transgression thereof, which, by common consent, are ratified and established throughout the whole Colony; and, otherwise than thus what is herein forbidden, all men may walk as their consciences persuade them, every one in the name of his God; and let the Saints of the Most High walk in this Colony, without molestation, in the name of Jehovah their God, forever and ever." Bancroft has truly said, "Had the territory of the State corresponded to the importance and singularity of the principles of its early existence, the world would have been filled with wonder at its history." That the American historian had Aquidneck and its Colony of 1641 in mind appears in his final word on Anne Hutchinson and Antinomianism, when he says, "the exiled doctrine which established Conscience as the highest Court of Appeal fled to the Island gift of Miantonomi (Aquidneck), and the records of RHODE ISLAND are the commentary on the true import of the Creed."

Between the date of the adoption of the 1647 Code and 1663, the date of the Royal Charter, the system of local and general courts, with the magistrates as the supreme bench, continued in operation, with no essential changes in procedure, the style of the courts and the personnel of the judges. A rule made in 1647, required the chief town officials to sit with the judges, in whatever town the superior court should be held, and in 1650, an act was passed giving them equal authority to vote and act with the chief magistrate of the Colony. Another rule required the court to open at eight o'clock in the morning at the latest, and the judge was not allowed to assume the function of an advocate. Judge Durfee calls attention "to the surprisingly rapid development of judicial ideas in the two Island towns." He concludes that the advance from a rude popular forum to a well organized judiciary in three years, indicates the presence of some man of large legal and legislative capacity, the author of "that remarkable piece of Colonial legislation, the Code of 1647, which had its origin on the Island." Callender admits that Coddington aided in framing the Code and leaves us to the confident assurance that Dr. Clarke was the author, as no one else on the Island laid any claim to legal or even general learning.

The Royal Charter of 1663, the gift of Charles the Second, opens a new era in the history of the Colony. By it the misnomer of Providence Plantations as the name of the Colony is removed, and the two Island towns, Portsmouth and Newport, as Rhode Island Colony, are reinstated, in name as well as in fact, to the primacy. The official name is now THE GOVERNOR AND COMPANY OF THE ENGLISH COLONY OF RHODE ISLAND AND PROVIDENCE PLANTATIONS IN NEW ENGLAND IN AMERICA. The real RHODE ISLAND, the birthplace of democracy and religious liberty, founded



by Dr. John Clarke, Judge William Coddington, and many others from Boston, now come into its own, and the State will forever remain, in name, a monument and memorial of its Island home. The meteoric eclipse of the sun has passed and the new day has a new light. The new administration appointed under the Charter consisted of Governor Benedict Arnold, Deputy Governor William Brenton, Assistants William Baulston, John Porter, John Coggeshall, James Barker, and Joseph Clarke, all of Rhode Island; Roger Williams, Thomas Olney, William Field, John Smith, and John Greene, of Providence Plantations. Joseph Torrey was chosen Secretary of State, and John Sanford, Treasurer, both of Newport. These officers with the Deputies constituted the law-making body of the Colony, when convened in General Assembly, legislating for the Colony. The functions of the Deputies were purely legislative. Those of the Governor, Deputy Governor and Assistants were both legislative and judicial.

As Dr. John Clarke is the well recognized author of the Charter, we may expect and readily find a clear note on rights civil and religious. In the introduction to the body of the Charter, after a brief recital of the trials, successes and hopes of the pioneers, Dr. Clarke expresses in modest but most eloquent English, a sentiment original, sententious, classic, now cut deep in marble on the western front of our State Capitol. "Whereas, in their humble address, they have freely declared, that it is much on their hearts (if they may be permitted) to hold forth a lively experiment that a most flourishing civil state may stand and best be maintained, and that among our English subjects, with a full liberty in religious concerns; and that true piety, rightly grounded upon gospel principles, will give the greatest and best security to sovereignty, and will lay in the hearts of men the strongest obligations to true loyalty." For the first time in human history has religious liberty been laid as the cornerstone of law, loyalty and government. This sentiment distinguishes the Royal Charter of 1663 above all State papers ever issued.

This Charter empowered the Colony of Rhode Island "to ordain, constitute or repeal, such laws, statutes, orders and ordinances, forms and ceremonies of government and magistracy as shall seem meet," and "to distinguish and set forth the several names and titles, duties, powers and limits, of each court office and officer, superior and inferior," with respect to the due administration of justice. The Charter conferred on the General Assembly the determination of courts and the election of all judicial officers. At the March session of the new Charter Assembly, 1664, it was enacted that two General and Superior Court sessions should be held annually in May and October. Newport was the place of trials and the



magistrates were to consist of the Governor or Deputy Governor as Chief Justice and at least six Assistants as Associates on the bench. Two other Courts of Trial were appointed to be held annually, one at Providence in September, and one at Warwick in March, at which at least three Assistants as judges should preside, with twelve jurors, six from each town.

Liberty was granted for a special court for merchants and seamen to be held at Newport as urgent occasion may require, the person or persons calling the court to pay the bills,—the chief and three assistants to preside, with twelve able jurymen. In the selection of grand and petty jurors, Newport was to furnish five of each, Portsmouth three, Providence and Warwick two each. Of Colonial judges—the two executives and ten assistants—five were to be inhabitants of Newport, three of Providence and two each of Portsmouth and Warwick.

Of the jurisdiction of the several courts above named, the line is not clearly apparent. Prior to 1663, the Superior Court was a Bench of Appeals only. In the new order it is assumed that it became a Court of Original Jurisdiction as well as of appeals, but the methods of procedure of cases from lower to higher does not appear, according to Judge Thomas Durfee. It is more than probable that the rules of administration followed English court patterns;—that at least is a safe conclusion,—on reception of the Charter.

At first the judges served without pay, except paltry fees, and the lawyers' fees were small. The Court often had no quorum, and as remedies, the quorum was reduced to four and later to three, and the assistant in attendance was paid three shillings a day and then four shillings, and was fined twice his fee if absent without good cause. If there was no quorum the absent judges were fined five pounds each. The remedy was complete for the court delinquency, the enormity of the punishment aiding in surmounting obstacles which the parsimonious rewards could not effect. It is impossible in the twentieth century to appreciate the labors and discomforts of a court officer in his travels in an open boat on Narragansett Bay in the stormy month of March. Duty and the fear of a \$25 fine were the oarsmen of the voyage. At this session of the General Assembly, courts of commission were abolished and the law granting to towns the power to repeal acts of the General Assembly was repealed.

A question arose whether, by the Charter, the election of the general officers of the Colony was to be by the General Assembly or by the freemen of the towns. It was decided correctly and democratically that these officers should be elected by the major vote of the whole body of the freemen of Rhode Island Colony.

In May, 1665, the General Assembly meeting at Newport assumed and exercised judicial functions as here noted. The first case was that of

Horod Long, the reputed and common law wife of George Gardener of Newport, who petitioned for a maintenance by said Gardener. The Assembly, after hearing the evidence, as to "that abominable lust of fornication," declared both parties guilty of "the horrible sin of uncleanness," and mulcted both for the sum of £20, with an admonition "not to lead so scandalous a life." Their children were declared legitimate.

The General Assembly not only granted divorces, but awarded separate maintenance to the wife and attached the property of the husband and held by the Assembly until the terms of the decree had been satisfied. In the case of John Porter, the Assembly granted his wife, Margaret, an aged woman, a divorce, and annulled all transfers of property made by him since the separation, until a satisfactory settlement was made and a fair support granted his wife.

The General Assembly also exercised judicial power in criminal cases. Peter Tollman applied for a divorce from his wife on the ground of her adultery, which she admitted. The petition was granted at once and the Assembly ordered her to pay a fine of £10 and to be publicly whipped fifteen stripes at Portsmouth and on the following week fifteen stripes at Newport, and imprisonment until the execution of the sentence. On her petition for mercy, the Assembly inquired if she was willing to return to her husband. On her refusal, the sentence was in part executed, after a lapse of two years, by reason of her escape from jail and absence from the Colony.

The creation of a separate or upper house of legislation took place in May, 1696. The House of Deputies was constituted a distinct body or lower House of Assembly with power to choose its own Speaker and Clerk. Jonathan Holmes, of Newport, was the first Speaker of the House of Deputies. The functions of the lower House were purely legislative. The upper House exercised judicial functions with coördinate legislative powers. The Governor was the presiding officer in legislation and Chief Justice in judicial proceedings in the Superior Court. This plan continued until June, 1729, when the General Assembly created "the Superior Court of Judicature, Court of Assize, and General Gaol Delivery," with the same judges as before—that is, the chief magistrates of the Colony, with the Governor as Chief Justice.

At the same session, the Colony was divided into three counties to enable the new towns to prosecute "their affairs in the common course of justice." Newport county was made up of the towns of Newport, Portsmouth, Jamestown, New Shoreham and the Islands adjacent, with Newport as the shire town. Providence county included Providence and Warwick, with Providence as the shire town, and Kings county made up of North Kingstown, South Kingstown and Westerly, with South Kings-

town as the county town. A civil and a criminal court were established in each county, both of which were held twice a year in each county.

The criminal courts were called Courts of General Sessions of the Peace, the justices of the peace of the county sitting as judges, five of whom constituted a quorum. These courts had original jurisdiction of all crimes not capital and appellate jurisdiction of offences triable by justices of the peace.

The civil courts, called Courts of Common Pleas, were each held by "four judicious and skillful persons," chosen by the General Assembly from the counties in which they were to act and commissioned by the Governor for a period of good behavior. The term of office was made annual in 1733. Their jurisdiction, subject to appeal, extended to "all civil actions arising or happening within such county, triable at common law, of whatever nature, kind or quality soever."

The highest court, called "The Superior Court of Judicature, Court of Assize and General Gaol Delivery," was held at the Colonial Capitol, Newport, and was presided over by the Governor or Deputy Governor and the Assistants. Its jurisdiction in civil and mainly in criminal matters became purely appellate, but under this limitation was declared to be as ample as that of "the Court of Common Pleas, King's Bench, or Exchequer in His Majesty's Realm of England." This highest court of the Colony was subject to the annual political choices of the people for their chief magistrates and judges. The several Chief Justices between 1729 and 1745 were Governors Joseph Jenckes, William Wanton, John Wanton, Richard Ward and William Greene. Little can be said in criticism of the courts of that early day. It is true that legal learning did not abound, but common sense, good judgment and honesty of purpose supplied the deficiency and satisfied the common people in whom the strong passion for justice prevailed. The chief law officer of the Superior Court was the Attorney General, who conducted the trials and whose legal knowledge was at the service of the court at all times. The persons holding this important office from 1650 to 1745 were William Dyre, Hugh Bewitt, John Easton, John Cranston, John Greene, Jr., John Sanford, Joseph Torrey, Peter Easton, Weston Clarke, Edward Richmond, Edmund Calverly, John Pococke, John Williams, John Smith, John Rhodes, Nathaniel Dyre, Joseph Sheffield, Simon Smith, Richard Ward, John Hammett, Henry Bull, Daniel Updike, James Honeyman, Jr., John Walton and John Andrew. Thirty-one of these attorneys were of Newport, where by study and practice, men of ability became competent expositors of English common law.

Lord Bellamont was sent from England in 1699 to inquire into the condition of civil affairs in Rhode Island. His report on our judiciary

was not very complimentary to the ability of the Court or the justice of their decisions. His conclusions are distinctly modified by Richman and Weeden, later students of Rhode Island history.

Lord Bellamont,—1699. Their Courts of Justice are held by the Governor and Assistants, who sit as judges therein, more for the constituting of the Court, than for searching out the rights of the causes coming before them, or delivering their opinion in points of law (whereof it's said they know very little). They give no directions to the Jury, nor sum up the evidence to them, pointing unto the issue which they are to try. Their proceedings are very immethodical, no ways agreeable to the course and practise of the Courts in England, and many times very arbitrary, and contrary to the laws of the place; as is affirmed by the attornies at law, that have sometimes practised in their Courts.

Their General Attorney is a poor illiterate mechanic, very ignorant, on whom they rely for his opinion and knowledge of the law; and allow of Judgments against criminal offenders, drawn in his own name, viz.: I, John Pocock, do indict, &c.

The Assistants or Councillors, who are also Justices of the Peace, and Judges of their Courts are generally Quakers, and sectaries, elected by the prevailing factions among them; illiterate, and of little or no capacity, severall of them not able to write their names, or at least so as to be read, unqualified to exercise their respective offices, not having taken the oaths or subscribed the test and Association appointed by act of Parliament. John Greene, a brutish man, of very corrupt or no principles in religion and generally known so to be by the people, is notwithstanding from year to year anew elected and continued in the place of Deputy Governor, and Second Magistrate in the Collony.

The observations of Richman and Weeden follow:

The Code of 1647 was the work of the people of Aquidneck. It embodied their organizing and systematizing spirit and thus wrought for collectivism. But in its framing there were not overlooked the claims of particularism.

Otherwise than what is \* \* \* herein forbidden, all men may walk as their consciences persuade them, every one in the name of his God.

The Island (Aquidneck) was refined, flourishing, aristocratic, while the mainland was primitive, poor and plebian.

In Rhode Island there of course was no religious intolerance.

For the first time in human history, State had been wholly dissociated from church in a Commonwealth not Utopian but real. For the first time the fundamental idea of modern civilization—that of rights of man as a being responsible primarily to God and not to the community—had been given an impulse powerful and direct.—*Richman*.

The government was organized in a more orderly manner than it was at Providence and the progress of the community was more rapid. They soon discarded the theocratic element, and in the second year of the settlement at Newport, the two towns united in a common government, vesting authority in a Governor, a Deputy Governor and four Assistants.

Judicial progress was remarkable, as in less than three years they advanced from the rude Forum of the town meeting "to a well organized

Judiciary, excellently suited to their wants and fully equipped for the dispensation of Justice according to the methods and principles of the common law." The code was completed in 1647 and the General Court of Trials was established for the whole Colony. This at first had jurisdiction of the higher class of crimes; of cases between town and town; of cases between parties living in different towns; of cases against parties belonging to different colonies. This tribunal was the predecessor of the present Supreme Court. The author of this system is not positively known, but circumstances point to William Coddington. It extended to all the towns of the future state.—*W. B. Weedon, 1902.*

Hon. Thomas Durfee, son of the eminent Job Durfee and a Chief Justice of our State, presents a living picture of Newport in the days of its judicial supremacy.

Newport was the chief town of the Colony in wealth, population and social influence. Though not central in location, it was easily accessible from all quarters by water; and this, in those times of unfacilitated travel, was no slight advantage. No other town equalled it in political importance. The citizens of no other town understood so well, or cultivated so assiduously, the amenities of everyday life. Its flourishing commerce put it more fully *en rapport*, than was any other town, with all that was best in the intellectual life of the Old World. It therefore naturally remained the seat of the Court while the Court remained stationary. And happily for the Colony at large, however unhappily for individual suitors, the Court remained stationary for more than eighty years. The salutary influence of Newport on the early history of the State has never been fully appreciated. The population of the rest of the Colony was singularly heterogeneous. Providence, the (reputed\*) home of soul liberty, became not unnaturally the home of rampant individuality. Many men flocked to it to find freedom for troubled consciences but also for troublesome eccentricities. Adventurers came full of restless ardor, chafing at every restraint. Men with all sorts of hobbies and whimsies in religion and politics came to enjoy or propagate them. Men of licentious lives and vicious propensities came, driven out of their old haunts and seeking fresh fields of indulgence. Hence an immiscible medley of ill-assorted minds teeming with the feuds and follies of a reckless self-assertion. Hence too a disintegrating growth of local as well as personal jealousies and dissensions. The great problem was to pacify and reconcile these jarring elements so as to bring them into the coöperant unity of a true State.

In this important though inconspicuous work Newport played a prominent part. There was there a higher civic or communal sentiment, a more educated public spirit, a profounder political consciousness, resulting in a more habitual as well as a more intelligent reverence for law and government, than elsewhere in the Colony. The best lawyers lived there. During all but fifteen of the first seventy-seven years under the Second

\* Eighty years and more ago, Providence was held to be the home of soul liberty. Since that time the historical claim has been transferred to Portsmouth and Newport, by the most careful students of Rhode Island history. Dr. John Clarke occupies the position accorded to Roger Williams, as the founder of civil and religious liberty.—Ed.

Charter (1663) the Attorney Generals were Newport men. The ablest politicians and public men lived there. During all but twenty-three of the first hundred years, under the Second Charter, the Governors were Newport men. There the General Assembly met annually for its most signal and indispensable business. The leading men of every part of the Colony were thus introduced to a purer civic and political atmosphere and continually exposed to the influences of a more cultivated and homogeneous society. The result could not be other than good. \* \* \* The same influences that so prevailed with the General Assembly, acted in like manner on the Court, liberalizing the minds of the judges, lawyers and litigants, and benefiting the judges, especially by bringing them into familiar intercourse with the ablest jurists of the Colony.

In February, 1746-47, the General Assembly, in session at Providence, distinguished itself by amending the law as to the constitution of the Superior Court from a magisterial to a purely judicial character. In lieu of the Governor or Deputy and ten Assistants, there were to be five judges—a chief and four associates, chosen by the General Assembly annually and commissioned by the Governor to hold court for two sessions a year in each county. At the same session, Bristol county was created and county courts provided for the newly annexed territory and people. At the election that followed in May, Gideon Cornell was chosen Chief Justice, and Stephen Hopkins, Joshua Babcock, Josiah Arnold and John Howland, assistants, holding office till May, 1749. In the revision of 1708, the name of the court was changed to that of the Supreme Judicial Court and under the Constitution was styled The Supreme Court. In 1780, the General Assembly discovered that it was not proper for the judicial and legislative power to be united in the same person and made a law that no member of either house of the Assembly should fill the office of a judge of the court. At the opening of the nineteenth century a system of courts had been established which survives with some modifications in the twentieth. It began with the local or town courts, presided over by the assistants, justices of the peace or wardens, having jurisdiction in civil actions where the value of the property in dispute did not exceed forty shillings. This court was abolished with the adoption of the Constitution. The probating of wills and estates still inheres in the town councils in most of the towns of the State.

The separation of the legislative and judicial departments of the government was slowly achieved. From the first the General Assembly possessed judicial powers and exercised such powers quite extensively even down to recent times. It not only took jurisdiction of certain classes of cases, but it modified the law to meet what it considered the justice of particular cases required; that is, it constituted itself the dispenser of equity not as established by Holt and his successors in the English chancery



courts, but according to its own judgment. It heard and granted petitions for divorce, and granted alimony; it exercised exclusive jurisdiction in insolvency; it entertained petitions for redemption of mortgaged estates, and granted relief in some cases where the right of redemption had expired; it heard appeals from judgments and sentences of the regularly constituted courts and reversed or modified them at its pleasure, and "arrogated to itself the plenary powers of a judicial tribunal."

At times the General Assembly seems to have entertained some doubt of the extent of its judicial powers, for in 1678 in denying a petition for the reversal of a judgment obtained in a civil case, it declared that "this assembly conceives that it doth not properly belong to them, or anywise within their recognizance, to judge or to reverse any sentence or judgment passed by the general court of trials according to law, except capital or criminal cases or mulct or crimes." But in 1680 the General Assembly passed an act which constituted itself a Supreme Court of Appeals in all cases.

The Earl of Bellomont, reporting to the Lords of Trade and Plantations upon the state of government in Rhode Island in 1699, said that the General Assembly "assumes a judicial power of hearing, trying and determining civil cases, removing them out of the ordinary courts of justice, and, waiving of trial at common law, alters and reverses verdicts and judgments—the charter committing no judicial power or authority on them."

Yet with full knowledge of this report, in 1705 the General Assembly passed an act that "the General Assembly at all times convened in General Assembly, shall be a court of chancery, as formerly it hath been, until such time as a more convenient court may be conveniently erected and settled." The interpretation of this act is to be found in the previous and subsequent course of the General Assembly in acting upon matters brought before it. Assuming itself to be and denominating itself a court of chancery, it had exercised a jurisdiction unknown to the well established rules of chancery, and had illustrated in Rhode Island a criticism of the earliest chancery courts of England that their administration of equity was as uncertain and variable as the length of the chancellor's foot.

This usurpation of judicial power was rebuked in a case which was carried to the Queen in Council, in which the General Assembly had in 1708 set aside on appeal a judgment of the Supreme Court denying the right of redemption of a mortgage after more than twenty years had expired and granting the petition of the mortgagor to redeem.

The Council declared that the General Assembly had no jurisdiction of the matter, that its judgment was void, and ordered the General Assembly to take notice and govern itself accordingly. Upon consideration



of this denial of the judicial jurisdiction of the General Assembly, that body in 1712 repealed the act whereby it constituted itself a court of chancery, setting forth as its reason therefor "that we can not find any precedent that the legislators or parliament of England, after they had passed an act or law, took upon themselves the executive power or authority of constituting themselves a court of chancery or any other court of judicature."

Having come to this sensible conclusion, and action, the General Assembly by no means ceased to exercise the same judicial functions in the same manner and to the same extent as it had hitherto done. Apparently no one, either disappointed suitor, or public spirited politician, cared or dared to challenge acts of the Assembly which the Assembly itself had declared to be without any legal basis or justification.

Accordingly, in the revision of the public laws of the State enacted by the General Assembly at its January session, 1798, appears an act directing the method of preferring petitions to the General Assembly and of acting thereon, which act had been in force since 1746. The act extends to petitions for new trials and petitions for the administration of the estates of insolvents. It provides that "whenever any person or persons shall prefer a petition to the General Assembly, praying that any judgment, rule of court, or determination whatever, may be set aside or that execution may be stayed," the petitioner shall lodge his petition in the office of the Secretary of State, give bond, etc.; that costs shall be taxed on such petitions in all respects, and in every particular as are allowed by law in causes before the courts of common pleas, and that the Secretary of State shall grant execution for such costs. It also provides for reëntry of the case in the court from whose judgment the appeal was taken, and a new trial therein if such is granted by the General Assembly.

This assumption of judicial powers was, of course, in defiance of the provisions of the royal charter, and the decision of the highest legal authority of the mother country, and illustrates the spirit of independence which prevailed in the Colony from its foundation, and also the unwillingness of the Colonists to grant to the courts such powers as were absolutely necessary to the effective administration of law and justice.

After the Colony acquired independence, there was no superior power to restrain this policy, and accordingly the General Assembly continued to exercise judicial functions without let or hindrance, but not without opposition and protest. Finally, in the stress and strain of the times immediately subsequent to the Revolutionary War, occurred a clash of authority between the General Assembly and the courts which shook the State from center to circumference and well-nigh overturned, for the time

being, at least, constitutional guarantees of democratic government within its borders.

In the celebrated case of *Trevett v. Weeden*, for the first time was brought to judicial determination the power of the Supreme Court to declare an act of the General Assembly unconstitutional and void. The circumstances attending the trial of the case were such as to arouse the fiercest passions of the people. Impoverished by the war, Rhode Island had suffered in the destruction of its commerce and ravaging of its farms, through the British blockade and occupation of its richest territory, more than any other State. In its distress, like other States, it resorted to the issue of paper money, and with the same distressing results.

At the May session, 1786, the General Assembly provided for an issue of bills to the amount of \$100,000 to be loaned on the credit or pledge of real estate of double the value of the amount loaned. It also provided that all paper money bills already emitted or to be emitted by the State, should be legal tender for all debts, contracts and other legal obligations, and that if a creditor refused to accept these bills in payment of his claim, if tender was made to him in the presence of two competent witnesses, within thirty days of such tender he should be forever precluded from maintaining any action for the recovery upon his claim. And at the June session, 1786, an act was passed by the General Assembly making it a penal offense for any person to refuse to take these bills in exchange for any article or articles exposed for sale by him or to sell such articles for a less price in silver or gold, estimating an ounce of coined silver as six shillings and eight pence. The act provided that a person charged with the offense, upon information and complaint to any justice of the Superior Court or of the Common Pleas, might be summoned before a special court in three days and "That said Court when so convened, shall proceed to the trial of said offender, and they are authorized so to do, *without any jury*."

John Weeden of Newport, soon after the passage of this act, refused to receive some of these bills nominally equivalent to silver and gold tendered to him in payment for meat sold in market, and John Trevett brought a *qui tam* action or complaint on information against Weeden before a special court in Newport in September, 1786, which was at once referred to the Superior Court then sitting at Newport. Weeden was defended by Henry Marchant and General James Mitchell Varnum. The only existing report of the case was made by Varnum. Weeden's answer to the complaint was that "It appears by act of the General Assembly, wherein said information is founded, that the said act hath expired and hath no force: also that by said act the matters of complaint are made triable before Special Courts uncontrollable by the Supreme Judiciary

Court of the State, and also for that the court is not by said act authorized and empowered to impanel a jury to try the facts charged in the information; and so the same is unconstitutional and void."

General Varnum made the argument for defense. To the first ground he gave little attention. With great force he argued that under the charter granted by King Charles the Second the General Assembly in 1729 established the court before whom the case was being tried, and by the same act provided that it should have "the same power and authority in all matters and things in this Colony as the Court of Common Pleas, King's Bench or Exchequer, have or ought to have in that part of Great Britain heretofore called England, and be empowered to give judgment in all matters and things before them cognizable, and to award execution thereon." He then considered the jurisdiction of these courts, and showed that "the County King's Bench in early times acquired and hath always retained a supreme jurisdiction in all criminal matters," and that "being the highest common court of common law it only had the power to reverse erroneous judgments given by Superior Courts," that by giving co-equal jurisdiction of these informations to these special courts composed of the same judges as the Superior Courts without right of appeal, the General Assembly had made impossible the correction of errors made by the special courts by an impartial tribunal, and so violated the fundamental principles of constitutional government as established in England and the Colonies.

To the third ground of defense, that the act denied the right of trial by jury, counsel devoted by far the greatest part of his argument. Laying down the proposition "That the trial by jury is a fundamental right, a part of our legal constitution; that the legislature cannot deprive the citizens of this right; and that your Honors can and we trust will so determine," the great advocate entered upon a concise but thorough examination of the provisions of the English constitution relating to trial by jury from the time of King John and the granting of the Magna Charta, and showed that trial by jury "was ever esteemed a first, a fundamental, and a most essential principle, of the English constitution." This right he shows was granted by the royal charter, and confirmed by the General Assembly of the Colony at its first meeting after the reception of the charter in 1663. Then he discusses the power of the court to declare the statute void, and by copious citations of the most eminent authorities established the right and duty of the court he was addressing to pass judgment upon the validity of acts of the legislative branch of the government. Thus he concisely summarizes his argument:

We have attempted to show that the act, upon which the information is founded, hath expired; that by the act special jurisdictions are erected, uncontrollable by the Supreme Judiciary Court of the State; and that, by

the act this court is not authorized or empowered to impanel a jury to try the facts contained in the information; that the trial by jury is a fundamental, a constitutional right—ever claimed as such—ever ratified as such—ever held most dear and sacred; that the legislature derives all its authority from the constitution—hath no power of making laws but in subordination to it—can not infringe or violate it; that therefore the act is unconstitutional and void; that this court hath power to judge and determine what acts of the General Assembly are agreeable to the Constitution; and on the contrary, that this Court is under most solemn obligations to execute the laws of the land, and therefore cannot, will not, consider this act as a law of the land.

In closing, Gen. Varnum made a powerful appeal to the judges not to rob the people of the freedom and independence recently won at great sacrifice, and blast forever their noblest prospects. Of the argument for the complainant no record has been preserved. But to the judges, Gen. Varnum's presentation of the defendant's case must have seemed unanswerable and convincing, for they promptly rendered judgment that the information was not cognizable before them.

In the next succeeding week, both houses of the Assembly issued a summons to the judges requiring their immediate attendance "to render their reasons for adjudging an act of the General Assembly unconstitutional and void." At the next October session, three of the five judges appeared before the General Assembly—Joseph Hazard, Thomas Tillinghast and David Howell. Mr. Howell, the youngest justice and the ablest, in the words of Gen. Varnum, addressed himself to the Assembly in a very learned, sensible and elaborate discourse in which he was upward of six hours upon the floor. Unfortunately the only report of his address is to be found in Gen. Varnum's meagre account of the hearing, but therein enough has been preserved to show the firmness, ability and noble bearing of the judges under the trying circumstances of the case.

Judge Howell opened his address by saying that "The Court was ever ready, as constituting the legal counsellors of the State, to render every kind of assistance to the legislature in framing new or repealing former laws: But that for the reasons of their judgment upon any question judicially before them, they were accountable only to God and their own consciences." He elaborated the arguments of Gen. Varnum at the trial of the case, and by "many conclusive arguments and citations of eminent authorities most clearly demonstrated that the act was unconstitutional, had not the force of law and could not be executed." He argued that to require the judges to state the reasons of their judgments to the General Assembly, was to assume the right of the General Assembly to determine the propriety of the court's judgment, and if they could do this in one case they could do it in all, and so the legislature would become the su-

preme judiciary, a perversion of power totally subversive to civil liberty; that unless judges are not directed by their own understanding, uninfluenced by the opinion of others, they cannot be said to be judges at all; that the very act of judging supposes an assent of the mind to the truth or falsehood of a proposition, and if a decision is given contrary to this assent, the judge is guilty of perjury and ought to be rendered infamous, that is, he should be punishable not for deciding according to his own honest convictions, but through the effect of the influence upon his mind of fear or favor of legislative inquisitors.

Judges Tillinghast and Hazard supported the view of Judge Howell in brief addresses, Judge Hazard vigorously declaring, "The opinion I gave upon the trial was dictated by the energy of truth. I thought it right—I still think so. Be it as it may, we derive our understanding from the Almighty, and to Him only are we accountable for our judgment."

The General Assembly promptly voted that it was not satisfied with the reasons given by the judges in support of their judgment, and a motion was then made and seconded "for dismissing the judges from office," whereupon a memorial was presented signed by the judges, setting forth that the charge against them had not been properly formulated, that they had been called upon only to give reasons for a certain judgment rendered by them and had no reason to apprehend that any proceedings were to be grounded thereon to affect their lives, liberty or property or their estate, in their office aforesaid, or their good name and character as officers of this State, and that there was reason to apprehend that a design is formed and ripening for execution by a summary vote of the legislature either to dismiss them from their office or to suspend them from the power of exercising the same, and praying that they might have a hearing before some proper and *legal tribunal* and an opportunity to answer to *certain specific charges*, if any such could be brought against them, before sentence or judgment be passed injurious to any of their rights and privileges, and protesting against the power of the legislature by summary vote to deprive them of their right to exercise the functions of their office without due process of law, "and *more especially upon a mere suggestion of a mere error of judgment.*"

General Varnum, supported by Mr. Channing, Attorney General, and several leading members of the house and of the bar, addressed the Assembly on this memorial with such force and persuasive power of reason and sound sense that it was voted by a large majority "that as the judges are not charged with any criminality in rendering the judgment upon the information Trevett against Weeden, they are therefore discharged from any further attendance upon this assembly on this account." The main question, therefore, whether the Supreme Court had the power to declare

an act of the legislature unconstitutional, was left undetermined by the legislature, and at the next session of the General Assembly the judges who rendered this important decision were not reelected.

Publication of the reports of opinions of the Supreme Court did not begin until 1847, and it is impossible to obtain exact knowledge of the conduct of cases before that court prior to that date. A few years earlier, Abraham Payne was offered the position of reporter of the Supreme Court, and his amusing account of a consultation with Judge William R. Staples about accepting the position throws some light on the judicial methods of that day. He says, "I well remember his (Judge Staples') voice and manner as he said, 'You can take the office if you choose, but we shall make you all the trouble we can. We shall give you no written opinions unless we are compelled to do so. We don't want any reporter or any reports. We mean to decide cases rightly, but we don't want to be hampered by rules the effect of which would be to defeat justice. We had a petition for a new trial before us in Newport county last term. There was no rule or authority by which we could grant it, but we saw that if we did not grant it, an honest farmer would be cheated out of his farm, and we granted it without giving any reasons therefor.'"

The General Assembly continued to exercise judicial functions for many years before and after the adoption of the State Constitution in 1844, although the State Constitution contains express provisions concerning the distribution of the legislative and judicial functions of the government. It provides "that the judicial power of this State shall be vested in one Supreme Court and in such inferior courts as the General Assembly may from time to time establish," but in the article entitled "Of Legislative Power" was inserted a section providing that "The General Assembly shall continue to exercise the powers that they have heretofore exercised, unless prohibited in this constitution," and the legislature assumed that under this section the judicial powers formerly exercised by them were preserved and continued to exercise them.

Acting on this theory, in 1854 the General Assembly passed an act reversing and annulling the judgment of the Supreme Court against Thomas W. Dorr for treason, and ordered the clerk of the Supreme Court to write across the record of the judgment, "Reversed and annulled by order of the General Assembly at their January session, A. D. 1854."

The General Assembly of the following year, being of a different political complexion, passed a resolution calling on the judges of the Supreme Court for their opinion of the constitutionality of the act of the previous Assembly. Although the judges in their answers declare that the act in question is an exercise by the General Assembly of supreme judicial power, and that under the distribution of powers contained in







SUPERIOR COURT BUILDING, WAS OLD UNIVERSITY BUILDING

the constitution the judicial power of the State is exclusively vested in the courts, and that the General Assembly has no authority to reverse judgments of the courts, and that the provision of the constitution that the General Assembly should continue to exercise the powers they have heretofore exercised, unless prohibited in the constitution, referred only to executive powers and did not confer judicial power, still the justices inconsistently held in their opinion that the General Assembly might exercise powers of a judicial nature which had been habitually and usually exercised by them down to the time of the adoption of the constitution.

It finally fell to the lot of Samuel Ames, C. J., in the case of *Taylor v. Place*, decided in 1856, to determine and fix the limitations of the legislative and judicial power in this State, in an opinion which has taken its place as a leading authority on the question of the power of the courts to declare acts of the legislature unconstitutional and void. In that case, the General Assembly had attempted to exercise the right which it had exercised from the earliest times, to reopen judgments of the courts and to grant relief to parties. The case was exhaustively argued by eminent counsel, James Tillinghast and Charles S. Bradley appearing for the plaintiff, and Samuel Currey for the defendants.

The "Great Chief Justice," as Samuel Ames was then and is still called, in an opinion which for profound learning and sound reasoning has rarely been equalled in any jurisdiction, demonstrates conclusively that under the constitution of Rhode Island the General Assembly has no judicial powers whatever; that they are clearly prohibited by the constitution from exercising such powers; that the courts and the courts only can authoritatively expound the constitution: that the opinion of the Supreme Court in the *Dorr* case that the judicial power was prohibited to the General Assembly is unanswerably correct, and that the latter part of the opinion, if construed as reserving to the General Assembly *ordinary* judicial power in granting new trials in actions at law; or chancery powers to be applied by the General Assembly in pending cases; or in *any judicial mode*, to cases of accident and mistake; or as anything more than that in the matter before them, they had no occasion to meddle with the question—it was not only wrong, but logically at war with the only ground on which they state their first conclusion that the General Assembly had no judicial power under the constitution.

Soon after this decision was rendered, the question was reopened in the General Assembly on a petition for a new trial in the case of *Ives v. Hazard*, which was a bill in equity for the specific performance of a contract for the sale of a farm, decided at the September term, 1855, of the Supreme Court. For several years the case was debated in the General Assembly and by the public press, with intense and bitter passion, until

February 15, 1860, when the petitioner was granted leave to withdraw, and the General Assembly finally accepted the decision of the Supreme Court in *Taylor v. Place* as final, since which time this power of the court has never been questioned.

Returning to the consideration of the constitution of the courts soon after separation of the Colony from the mother country, we find a completely organized system of common law courts which as continued and established by the revision of 1698 was in many respects admirable. The Superior Court of Judicature, Court of Assize and General Gaol Delivery, as the highest court had long been denominated, appears in that act as the Supreme Judicial Court consisting of one chief justice and four associate justices, who also were made "conservators of the peace throughout the State." The jurisdiction of the court in civil matters was almost wholly appellate and revisory. It had also original "cognizance of all crimes and offenses of a public nature." The act also provided that all questions of alimony and divorce should be heard and tried by that court, and that its decrees therein should be final, and for the first time in the history of the State definitely and fully set forth the causes for which divorces might be granted, in terms which are almost identical with those of the present statute on that subject. But the General Assembly with strange inconsistency continued to grant divorces for reasons other than those specified in the statute, until the middle of the last century.

The General Assembly grudgingly and sparingly conferred equity powers on the higher courts. In 1667 it granted jurisdiction to the then Superior Court of cases where penalties, conditional estates or equities of redemption were sued for according to the rules of equity, and also the power to chancery forfeitures.

By the act of 1798 the Supreme Judicial Court was authorized to enforce the production of partnership books by partners or other persons in possession of such books, and to compel the examination under oath of partners regarding the contents of such books. The same act provided that a mortgagor entitled to the equity of redemption in any mortgaged estate might prefer a bill in equity before the court for the redemption of such estate, and that the court, according to the usages of chancery and on principles of equity, should render judgment on such bill which should be final.

The Supreme Court by the act of 1798 was also empowered to issue writs of *certiorari* by which the records of any court of inferior criminal jurisdiction could be brought before them, and "to proceed, order and award thereon as shall be by law provided and directed." This important power was fully exercised by the Supreme Court until in later years the jurisdictions of the Supreme Court and Court of Common Pleas were

practically merged, and it became impossible for these writs to be used so far as the records of the Court of Common Pleas was concerned.

In 1780 the General Assembly put an end to the pernicious practice of electing its members judges of the Supreme Court, and in 1783 judges of the Court of Common Pleas, and this salutary rule was retained in the act of 1798 and in all subsequent revisions. Unfortunately, the rule was not and never has been extended to the lower courts of the State.

The General Assembly, after the grant to the Supreme Court of limited equity power and of jurisdiction in divorce cases above noted, still occasionally acted upon petitions for divorce and for redemption of mortgaged estates, and granted relief on grounds not tenable at law or equity. In reality the General Assembly on this, as on some other matters, made the law as well as decided the facts in certain cases, acting upon the erroneous assumption that it was not only judge of the law and the facts of the case, but that it could properly make the law fit the case.

The very limited equity jurisdiction of the Supreme Court caused much embarrassment and inconvenience to suitors who could not obtain adequate relief at common law. The difficulty was partly overcome by seeking relief in the United States Court, which had full equity powers. But where both parties were citizens of Rhode Island, this could in most instances be accomplished only by one party, usually the complainant, taking temporary residence in a neighboring State, which was occasionally done. The inconvenience and expense of this process are obvious. The result was a denial of justice in cases where the interests involved were not large.

There were, however, some compensating advantages in this indirect method of obtaining equitable relief. It brought the Rhode Island bar and the public into contact with some of the greatest jurists of the country; for in those days the judges of the United States Supreme Court held circuit courts in this State, and made its citizens familiar with the high standards of learning and practice which prevailed in those courts, so that even after full equity powers were conferred upon the Supreme Court of the State in 1844, parties resorted to the federal courts in most important equity causes and common law actions.

The elevating and stimulating example of such jurists as Judges Story, Curtis and Clifford made a deep and lasting impression upon the administration of justice in this State.

By the act of 1798 the ancient courts of common pleas established in 1747 were continued. They consisted of a chief justice and five other justices for each of the five counties, appointed annually by the General

Assembly, and held sessions at stated times twice a year in their respective counties. They "had cognizance of all civil actions and common pleas arising or happening within the county triable at common law, where the debt or damages exceeded seven dollars." The justices were also made justices of the peace of their respective counties in criminal cases.

The justices of the several courts of common pleas or any three of them were authorized to constitute and hold special courts, and had cognizance concurrent with the ordinary courts of common pleas of all actions by and against auctioneers for moneys realized from the sale of real and personal estate, and of actions by and against the directors of lotteries authorized by the General Assembly for moneys due for lottery tickets sold, or for prizes, and of actions for the possession of tenements leased, and for the recovery of taxes due, and against sheriffs for moneys collected on executions and not returned to the creditor. These special courts of common pleas with substantially the same jurisdiction but differently constituted from time to time, continued until the revision of 1896. They were well calculated to afford speedy relief in the classes of cases of which they had cognizance, when the regular terms of the court were short and long intervals elapsed between the sessions. But with the great increase of legal business in recent years, the practically continuous sessions of the higher courts and the enlargement of the jurisdiction of the lower courts, the need of these special courts greatly diminished until they became of little use and were abolished in the revision of 1896.

The courts of General Sessions of the Peace, as they were denominated, first established in 1729 and continued in the revision of 1798, were the complement of the courts of common pleas, and had jurisdiction of all pleas of a criminal nature except capital crimes for the respective counties in which they were held. They were held by the justices of the peace of each county, five of whom constituted a quorum. There was the same right of appeal, from their judgments as from the judgments of the Court of Common Pleas. Also, the court was given jurisdiction of appeals from sentences imposed by justices of the peace for minor offenses. The justices of the Court of Common Pleas were also justices of the peace for their respective counties. Thus, while the courts of common pleas and of general sessions were created by different acts of the Assembly and were nominally independent, it is evident that they were composed of the same justices, and held their sessions at the same times and places, and were served by the same clerks and jurors. Whatever reason there may have been for creating the two separate courts, there would seem to have been no substantial ground for maintaining them, but custom and precedent are strong in legal matters, and it was not until 1838 that the Court of General Sessions was merged into the Court of Common Pleas.

Justices' courts held by justices and wardens of the peace of the various towns were established in 1741. Their jurisdiction included all actions at common law except writs of replevin and actions of trespass in which the title to real estate was in dispute, and civil actions where the amount involved was not more than seven dollars, which was later increased to twenty dollars, and also of complaints for petty crimes and offenses, with the right of appeal in all cases to the Court of General Sessions while it existed, and later to the Court of Common Pleas.

The justices of the peace of the various cities and towns continued to administer justice in local matters of minor importance throughout the State until December, 1872, when by the general statutes a justice court was established in every town of the State, unless otherwise provided, to be held by a trial justice selected from the qualified justices of the peace in each town by the town council except in the cities of Providence and Newport and the towns of Woonsocket and North Providence, in which the trial justice was selected and elected from the qualified justices of the peace of the respective towns and cities by the General Assembly in grand committee at its May session, and by various wardens of the peace elected by the towns of New Shoreham and Jamestown. These trial justices held office for three years. By the same act, every court of magistrates, justices, trial justices and justices of the peace, were abolished, and their records turned over to the clerks of the new courts.

The jurisdiction of the justice courts was also enlarged to include all civil actions where the debt or damages demanded did not exceed one hundred dollars, excepting only actions relating to real estate or some easement therein, in which the title might be in dispute, and concurrently with the Court of Common Pleas of actions for the possession of tenements or estates let or leased. Jurisdiction was also granted to these courts of all suits and complaints for offenses against the by-laws, ordinances and regulations of their respective towns and cities.

Every justice court was given exclusive jurisdiction of all crimes, offenses and misdemeanors done or committed within the town in which it was established, punishable by fine not exceeding twenty dollars or by imprisonment not exceeding three months, and also power to cause to be apprehended, to examine, to commit or take recognizance of persons committing all other crimes and offenses committed within its jurisdiction, and to bail or commit such persons to jail to answer therefor to the Supreme Court or Court of Common Pleas except in the county of Providence, and in that county to the Court of Common Pleas. The enlarged jurisdiction of these inferior courts afforded considerable relief to the Court of Common Pleas, whose dockets had become crowded with petty cases.



The creation of these justice courts greatly improved the administration of justice throughout the State. The conduct of cases before justices of the peace is described by Abraham Payne in his "Reminiscences of the Rhode Island Bar." He narrates a case tried by him before a justice of the peace, who first gave judgment for the plaintiff, and when Mr. Payne in vigorous language demanded his reasons therefor, reversed himself and gave judgment for the defendant. He also says that lawyers for the plaintiffs could and did select justices whom they believed to be friendly, to issue process and hear their cases, and they usually obtained judgment in their favor, and that "the abuses under this system were frequent and annoying."

The revision of 1872, in which the chapters creating the justice courts and providing for their organization and jurisdiction, were drafted by three of the most eminent members of the Rhode Island bar at that time: William P. Sheffield, Abraham Payne and Wingate Hayes, assisted by John T. Tobey, Esq., maintained the high standards of simplicity, accuracy and adequacy of statement which characterized the code of 1647 and other previous revisions.

The justice courts established in 1872, although a great improvement on the system which they supplanted, did not afford intelligent and efficient administration of justice in all the cities and towns of the State. Men were elected trial justices in some instances by the town councils, who were not learned in the law but were proficient in politics.

Dissatisfaction with the system increased until at its May session, 1886, the General Assembly divided the State into twelve judicial districts, some of which include several towns, and a district court was established in each district to be held by a justice elected by the General Assembly for a term of three years. By the General Laws of 1896 it was provided that no person not a justice of a district court at the time of the passage of the act should be elected a justice unless he was a member of the bar at that time.

This system has continued with some changes in jurisdiction until the present time, and has proved eminently satisfactory to the bar and the public. Sessions of these courts are held at times and places prescribed by statute. Original exclusive jurisdiction was conferred upon them at their inception in all civil actions legally brought before them in which the debt and damages claimed did not exceed one hundred dollars, and concurrently with the Court of Common Pleas of such actions where the debt or damages claimed did not exceed three hundred dollars, and of actions for possession of tenements let or held at will or by sufferance, and exclusive jurisdiction of all crimes and misdemeanors done or committed within their respective districts punishable by fine not exceeding



twenty dollars, or by imprisonment not exceeding three months, and of all other crimes and misdemeanors specially declared to be within their jurisdiction by the laws of the State, with power to cause to be apprehended, examined and bailed or committed to jail, persons guilty or suspected to be guilty of all other crimes, offenses and misdemeanors not within their jurisdiction committed within the district to answer before the Supreme Court or Court of Common Pleas.

By the General Laws of 1896 the exclusive original jurisdiction of civil actions was increased to three hundred dollars. These courts were also empowered to take and record the declaration of aliens of their intention to become citizens of the United States, and to issue writs of *habeas corpus* to bring before them persons in jail as witnesses before them.

The jurisdiction of the Supreme Court in civil actions remained mostly appellate and revisory until 1847, when it was granted original jurisdiction concurrently with the Court of Common Pleas of all civil actions where the debt or damages claimed amounted to one hundred dollars, which in the revision of 1882 was increased to three hundred dollars in all actions commenced in the Supreme Court in the county of Providence.

By the revision of 1844, the Supreme Court was vested with full jurisdiction of equity causes, which it retained until the adoption of the Court and Practice Act of 1905, by which original jurisdiction of equity causes was vested in the Superior Court.

An interesting feature of the grant of concurrent jurisdiction in civil actions to the Supreme Court and Court of Common Pleas, was that a defeated suitor was granted a second trial as a matter of course in the Supreme Court upon motion duly filed and payment of an entry fee. The same rule had existed for many years in the Court of Common Pleas. The result was that a party could draw out his adversary's case in the first trial if he chose, and on the second trial present his full case; while in earlier times, by means of a petition for review, which was granted in 1732, a third trial could be had if the verdicts in the two first trials were conflicting. The petition for review was abolished in 1844, and the right of a second trial as of course in 1878.

Down to 1844 the Court of Common Pleas was composed of entirely different judges from those of the Supreme Court. The revision of 1844 required the General Assembly to elect annually two justices of the Court of Common Pleas in each county, who should be residents of the county, and provided that some one of the justices of the Supreme Court designated by said justices as chief justice, assisted by one or both the assistant justices of the Court of Common Pleas, should hold Courts of Common

Pleas in each county. The Supreme Court itself sat *in banc* in nearly all cases.

The rapidly increasing business of the courts made it necessary to modify this system, and in 1852 an act was passed by the General Assembly making one justice a quorum in the trial of jury cases and for many other purposes, and soon after the different justices were authorized to hold courts at the same time in different places in the same county or in different counties. These changes greatly facilitated the transaction of the business of the courts.

By the year 1872 the practice of electing judges of the Court of Common Pleas from the different counties had been abandoned, and in the revision of that year it was provided that that court should be held by some one of the justices of the Supreme Court. Practically, therefore, the two courts were thus merged in one, at least as to personnel—an anomalous and unusual constitution of courts which led to serious difficulties in the administration of justice. This anomaly was completed in name as well as in fact by the revision of 1896. The number of justices of the Supreme Court was increased to five, and the court was divided in its functions by the provision, "There shall be an appellate and a common pleas division of the supreme court," and the court in its respective divisions was vested with the entire jurisdiction which had been exercised hitherto by both courts; that is, the appellate division was vested with practically the same jurisdiction as the Supreme Court had exercised, and the common pleas division with the same jurisdiction as the Court of Common Pleas. It was provided that no justice should sit in the appellate division whose rulings or acts in the common pleas division should be under review in the appellate division.

The practical workings of this system were very much the same as that which it supplanted. Criminal causes were tried before a single justice of the Supreme Court, whose designation for that purpose was practically permanent; but in capital cases two justices were required to sit. Most of the jury trials in civil cases were held by the same justice. The system did not work well.

The issue of prerogative writs by the appellate division of the court to the common pleas division of the same court, was impracticable, and in consequence of the provision that a majority of the justices of the appellate division was necessary to constitute a quorum in petitions for a new trial, demurrers, writs of error, bills in equity and many other proceedings, the exercise of revisory and original jurisdiction by that division became to a great extent impracticable also.

An amendment to the constitution, in order to enable the Supreme Court to properly perform its functions, became necessary. The Rhode





PROVIDENCE COUNTY COURT HOUSE

Island Bar Association was a prime mover in securing this change. Through agitation originated by the Association, the General Assembly on March 20, 1901, adopted a resolution proposing an amendment to Article X of the constitution which, if adopted, would not effectually remedy the defects of the existing system. The Bar Association, therefore, again took the matter up, and appointed a committee to appear before the General Assembly at its next session, and endeavor to procure the indefinite postponement of said resolution, and later on, January 11, 1902, it adopted a second resolution again expressing its objection to the resolution proposed by the General Assembly, and providing for the appointment of a committee to appear before the General Assembly, instructed to procure the indefinite postponement of the same, and the adoption of a resolution proposing an amendment to the constitution in substantially the same form as was that finally adopted, November, 1903, as Article XII of Amendments. By this amendment, the Supreme Court was stripped of all original jurisdiction, except the power to issue prerogative writs, and was given final revisory and appellate jurisdiction upon all questions of law and equity.

On April 13, 1904, the General Assembly appointed a commission of seven members to report changes in the laws of the State necessary to carry into effect the XIIth Amendment to the Constitution, consisting of John H. Stiness, Chief Justice of the Supreme Court, Edward D. Bassett, Stephen O. Edwards, Charles E. Gorman, Nathan W. Littlefield, William A. Morgan and Ellery H. Wilson. On April 16 the commission organized with Judge Stiness as chairman and Richard W. Jennings as secretary, and devoted practically all their time for the following ten months to the performance of the duty imposed upon them. At the January session, 1905, the commission submitted a report to the General Assembly, accompanied by an act entitled "The Court and Practice Act" embodying the changes in the laws of the State necessary to carry Article XII of the Amendments of the Constitution into effect. The act proposed provided for a Supreme Court consisting of a chief justice and four associate justices, and a Superior Court consisting of a presiding justice and five associate justices. In their report to the General Assembly the commission says that because of the large increase in the business of the Supreme Court, more than three judges were required, and that as a majority of the court is by the act made a quorum, less than five judges could not properly perform the duties imposed upon the court. Also owing to the vast increase of the jurisdiction of the Superior Court to which by the act proposed was given original jurisdiction of almost all matters theretofore cognizable by the appellate and common pleas divisions of the Supreme Court, six judges were required for that court.

In order further to relieve the pressure of business in the Superior Court, the exclusive civil jurisdiction of the district courts was increased by the proposed act from three hundred dollars to five hundred dollars, and exclusive jurisdiction was given of all actions for the possession of tenements let or held by will or by suffrance. The criminal jurisdiction of these courts was also enlarged so as to include cases punishable by fine of five hundred dollars or imprisonment not exceeding one year or both. The proposed act was passed by the General Assembly at its January session, 1905, with only one important modification which will be hereinafter mentioned.

The Supreme Court as constituted by the act has remained unchanged. The Superior Court in 1913 was increased to seven members.

The increase of business in the Sixth Judicial District, which includes the city of Providence and the town of North Providence, made necessary the addition of an associate justice in 1909, and the clerk of the court was authorized to perform the duties of the justice when both the justice and associate justice are unable to serve, or are disqualified, or there is a vacancy in both offices.

By the act, the Supreme Court is in session from the first Monday in October to the second Monday in July, with a recess from the third Monday in February to the first Monday in March. All hearings in the Supreme Court are held in Providence, but sessions may be held at other places whenever it is deemed advisable.

Sessions of the Superior Court for Providence county are held in Providence, and may be held in Woonsocket and in Bristol for cause shown. In Washington county, sessions of the court are held at Kingstown and Westerly. In the other counties they are held at the county seats.

Important changes of procedure and practice were introduced by the act. One of the most important features is that of giving a judge of the Superior Court before whom a case is tried, power to grant a new trial thereof on the ground that the verdict is against the evidence. To guard against possible error, it is provided that the action of the trial court in granting a new trial may be reviewed by the Supreme Court.

Elaborate provisions are continued in the act regulating pleading, practice and procedure in courts; the entry of actions and appeals, and amendment and abatement; certifications, new trials, and exceptions, and many other matters made necessary by the fundamental change of judicial system.

For a long time dissatisfaction with the administration of probate law in this State had existed. The code of 1647 committed the probate of wills exclusively to the head officers of the towns, but it gave the

town councils much greater power—the power in case a person died intestate, to dispose of his property by will executed by them. Judge Staples, in a note to the code, states that “It was not an unusual thing, at least in Providence and Warwick, to draw a paper in the form of a will reciting the intestacy of the deceased, and disposing of his estate among his heirs at their discretion,” and that “to the instrument thus drawn up, the members severally set their hands and put wax,” and one such will drawn in Providence disposed of part of the personal and real estate to the widow, part for life and part in fee, and divided the residue among the children as tenants in tail general with cross remainders.

In 1663 the town councils were granted full probate jurisdiction subject to the Senate or Governor and Council as “supreme ordinary or judges of probate.” The Senate had jurisdiction of probate appeals until 1822, at which time the cognizance of such appeals was transferred to the Supreme Court, which continued to exercise it until 1905.

At the time of the adoption of the Court and Practice Act, thirteen cities and towns under authority granted by the legislature had elected probate judges, and twenty-five towns still clung to the ancient system.

At present, in all the cities and large towns, courts of probate are presided over by judges, but in twenty-three towns the town councils act as courts of probate.

It is undoubtedly true that the town councils, as former Chief Justice Thomas Durfee states in his “Gleanings from the Judicial History of Rhode Island,” have discharged their duties “with substantial justice and in a kindly, helpful, neighborly spirit which disarmed criticism.” But the defects of the system were great, and a growing and insistent demand for revision of the probate law had arisen; but until the adoption of the Twelfth Amendment to the Constitution, an adequate revision of the probate system could not be made.

As was stated in the report of the commission, “For a long time there has been complaint in regard to our system in probate proceedings, and the Bar Association of the State, as well as many citizens, have urged that steps be taken to improve it.” Accordingly, although this matter was not specifically referred to the commission, they felt that it should receive their attention, and therefore appointed a sub-committee consisting of Stephen O. Edwards and Nathan W. Littlefield to prepare a draft revision of the probate laws of the State, which they did, and submitted the same for correction to the commission. When completed, this revision constituted a complete, convenient and adequate probate system. It empowers probate courts to construe wills so far as may be necessary, to advise executors and administrators with will annexed with respect to the payment of legacies, and thus enables executors to close their ac-



counts. It also provides for the discharge of executors and administrators and the termination of the liability of themselves and the sureties on their bonds, which till then was impossible.

Other new provisions of prime importance were introduced which have greatly simplified and facilitated the administration of estates. But perhaps the most important feature of the act as presented to the General Assembly was that relating to the organization of the probate courts. It provided that the State should be divided into four probate circuits, and defined the limits of the circuits; that probate courts should be held in each of the towns and cities of the State, and that all said courts should be courts of record. It further provided that the probate courts of the towns and cities in each probate circuit should be held by the probate judge, who should be elected for that circuit by the General Assembly in grand committee.

In their report, the commission show that the expense of maintaining these courts would be no greater than of maintaining the then probate courts, while the advantages would be many and great, especially in having judges selected who would be learned in the law. But, as indicated above, this important feature of the act was rejected by the General Assembly and by the representatives in the Senate of those towns which still clung to an antiquated and defective system which had never existed, or was then obsolete in every other State in the country.

It remains to mention briefly the Bar Associations which have aided in the administration of law and the improvement of the laws of the State. The first of these of which there remains any record was formed at a "General Bar meeting holden at East Greenwich on the third day of February, A. D., 1795, for the purpose of promoting Harmony among the members and supporting the Honor of the profession." It was entitled "The Providence County Bar Meeting." The annual meeting was held at Newport on the day after election, but its rules provided that meetings of the bar should be held in each county as often as may be thought convenient in order to promote the same ends. The first name on the list of members is David Howell, one of the ablest and most eloquent lawyers and judges of his time. Other signatures of lawyers and judges eminent in their day are: Daniel Lyman, Samuel Eddy, James Burrill, Elisha R. Potter, Samuel W. Bridgham, Tristram Burgess, Charles F. Tillinghast, Thos. F. Carpenter, Samuel Ames, George Rivers, Saml. Y. Atwell.

At its first meeting, Rules and Regulations of Practice were agreed upon which mostly relate to fees. The records of the General Bar Meeting, which continue until October 3, 1844, display professional and public spirit. The most interesting perhaps is that of July 27, 1804, which is as follows:

*Resolved*, That this meeting sincerely deplores the disastrous fate of General Alexander Hamilton, the brightest and most distinguished ornament of our profession who not only as a lawyer but as a statesman and patriot has left a fame too illustrious for our eulogium.

*Resolved*, That we will wear black crepe on the left arm for thirty days as a testimonial of our sentiments and feelings on this melancholy occasion.

The Rhode Island Bar Association is the first State-wide association formed by the lawyers of Rhode Island. The need of such an association had long been recognized, but the initiative necessary to bring it into existence seemed to be lacking in the profession. In 1898 and for some months prior thereto, Hon. William A. Morgan, of the Providence bar, began to canvas the lawyers with a view to forming such an association. His efforts met with hearty support and deserved success. At a meeting called for that purpose, the Association was formed on March 5, 1898. Hon. Francis Colwell was elected chairman and William A. Morgan secretary. In due course a constitution was adopted and permanent officers chosen, the temporary chairman and secretary being made permanent.

This Association has been an active and forceful influence in securing needed legislation for the improvement of the judicial system of the State and its laws relating to domestic relations, the distribution of estates, and other important matters. It has labored earnestly for high standards of professional qualification, conduct and character, and not without some measure of success. It has recently formulated and published and distributed among the lawyers a code of professional ethics which it is expected will be accepted by the profession as its standard of conduct.

From time to time it has invited eminent jurists to address the Association on legal subjects, and has published several of these addresses, notably that of Hon. LeBaron B. Colt, recently Judge of the United States Court of Appeals, in commemoration of the life and labors of John Marshall.

To a certain extent it has through its meetings, at which the judges of the Supreme and Superior Courts are guests, supplied in a small degree the opportunity for social intercourse between the bench and the bar which existed in the olden time when judges and lawyers met during the sessions of the courts at the then remote county seats where for a week or more they lived together in close association at the ancient hostleries, engaging in interchange of comical anecdotes and reminiscences, and in contests of wit, as well as discussions of the leading topics of the day. It is to be hoped that at no distant day the Association will have a local habitation adapted to its uses whereby its present large membership and its influence for good upon the civil institutions and laws of the State may be increased.



## CHAPTER XLIV

---

### GOVERNORS OF RHODE ISLAND







GOV. WILLIAM CODDINGTON, OF NEWPORT



## CHAPTER XLIV.

### GOVERNORS OF RHODE ISLAND.

A pure democracy is the source and inspiration of free institutions and develops men suited to administer them. The American State has been most fortunate and prolific in men inspired with superior intelligence, lofty purpose, patriotic spirit, ambitious for service in all departments of civil life. Especially is it true that the chief executives of the older Commonwealths of America, notably the "Old Thirteen," have been the generous product of a social and political evolution, reaching back into English and European history, in the long struggle for civil and religious freedom. The great men whom we call our founders were born and educated across the Atlantic. Their principles came with them, and the New World gave them the opportunity, denied them in the Old, to exercise them. From John Carver, the first Governor of Plymouth Colony in 1620, to the latest executive in the United States, each and all have been the measure and ideal of public opinion on the more important social, political and economical questions, in flux in the thought of the people at the time of election. The Governor, chosen by the major vote, represents the major sentiment of the people and by reason of elevation to executive authority and power, expresses and reflects the popular will. More than that he becomes the maker and moulder of the policy and issues of his own administration to a large degree.

The State, as a civil organization, is traced to the settlement of William Coddington and eighteen others at Portsmouth on the Island of Rhode Island on the 7th day of the first month, 1638. It is true that Roger Williams and others had planted at Providence in 1636, but no formal government was established over that community until 1649, as Mr. Williams did not exercise, if he possessed, the power of organization. The Coddington Compact is a brief but comprehensive document: "We, whose names are underwritten do here solemnly in the presence of Jehovah incorporate ourselves into a Bodie Politick and as He shall help, will submit our persons, lives and estates, unto our Lord Jesus Christ, the King of Kings and Lord of Lords, and to all those perfect and most absolute laws of his given us in his holy Word of Truth, to be guided and judged thereby."

The "Freemen Incorporate in this Bodie Politick" elected and constituted William Coddington, Esquire, as Judge. With God as Sovereign, the Bible as a Constitution, and a Judge as Ruler, the new State was set up in a town called Pocasset, later, Portsmouth. Later in the year, three

elders were elected to assist the Judge "in the execution of Justice and Judgment."

In 1639, Judge Coddington, the three elders and a portion of the Pocasset settlers removed to the south end of the Island of Aquidneck, and founded the town of Newport on the same basis as Pocasset.

In 1640 the two towns, Portsmouth and Newport, united and it was ordered that the chief officer of the government shall be a Governor, and other officers in accord with modern Colonial governments, and William Coddington was elected the first Governor of the two towns. By a vote of the town of Newport in 1640, Mr. Robert Lenthal "was called to keep a public school for the learning of youth, and for his encouragement there was granted to him and to his heirs one hundred acres of land and four more for a house lot." It was also voted "that one hundred acres should be laid forth and appropriated for a school for the encouragement of the poorer sons, to train up their youth in learning, and Mr. Robert Lenthal, while he continues to teach school is to have the benefit thereof."

The union of the two towns, with Coddington as Governor, was the second step in organizing civil government in Rhode Island. Warwick was settled in 1643, by Randall Holden, Samuel Gorton and others, but neither Providence nor Warwick had an executive head until 1649.

The third step in organized government in Rhode Island was the union of the four towns, Providence, Newport, Portsmouth and Warwick, under the Williams Patent, and the election of John Coggeshall of Newport as President of these hitherto independent communities.

In 1651, Providence and Warwick on the one hand separated from Newport and Portsmouth on the other, and the election of an executive called President was made by each duality of towns. This was the fourth stage in our civil Colonial affairs and may be called a step backwards.

The fifth stage was reached in 1654, when the union of the four towns was re-established under a Presidency as in 1647, and Nicholas Easton of Newport was elected to that office.

The final change in 1663, brought about a permanent government of the four towns under the Royal Charter, the executive bearing the title of Governor, and the first person to hold that office was Benedict Arnold of Newport.

WILLIAM CODDINGTON, Governor, was a man of mark of his time, and exercised a commanding influence on town and Colony for forty years. Born in Lincolnshire, England, in 1601, an heir to position and fortune, he came to Boston, Massachusetts, in 1630, to take an important place as an assistant in the government of the Bay Colony. In March,

1631, he presided as a judge in the "Court of Assistants" in Boston. In the contest for the governorship of the Bay Colony, between Harry Vane and John Winthrop, Coddington was attached to the interests of Vane, and both were defeated. Coddington also espoused the cause of Anne Hutchinson, by which he lost position and influence in the Colony. Disappointed in his plans and smarting under successive defeats, he abandoned a lucrative business in Boston, sold his estates in Braintree, and with Dr. John Clarke organized a company to locate a new colony in the neighborhood of New York. Both were induced by Roger Williams to establish a plantation on Narragansett Bay, either at Sowams or Aquidneck. Finding that Sowams was reserved for the "Old Comers" of Plymouth, this little company of twenty-three men organized their new civil state called Pocasset, on Aquidneck Island, in 1638. In the evolution of the Colony, Mr. Coddington was a leading factor, and his commanding ability and popularity won for him the highest honors of the towns and Colony. In 1638, he was elected the first judge of Portsmouth, and a year later was elected the first judge of Newport. On the union of the two towns under one head, he was elected the first Governor, holding office from 1640 to 1647. He was re-elected Governor of the Colony from 1674 to 1676. At the advanced age of seventy-seven, so strong was his hold on the people, he was elevated to the governorship under the Royal Charter in 1678 as the successor of Benedict Arnold, who had died in office. He died Nov. 1, 1678, after holding the office only two months.

A review of the life of William Coddington shows a man devoted to the great work of civil and religious liberty. His espousal of the cause of Harry Vane and Anne Hutchinson in Massachusetts was the first expression of his opposition to the Puritan Code of the Bay Colony. Self-banishment to Aquidneck gave him and his associates the opportunity to express their views in their ideal state, which first took the form of a democratic commonwealth with Coddington as judge, and after that of popular democracy. The Newport Court Agreement affirmed, in 1641, "that the government which this Bodie Politick doth attend unto in this Island, and the Jurisdiction thereof, in favour of our Prince is a DEMOCRACIE, or Popular Government; that is to say, It is in the Powre of the Body of Freemen orderly assembled, or the major part of them, to make or constitute just Lawes, by which they will be regulated, and to depnte from among themselves such Ministers as shall see them faithfully executed between Man and Man."

It was further ordered "That none be accounted a delinquent for DOCTRINES, Provided it be not directly repugnant to ye Government or Lawes established." The doctrine of freedom in religious concerns was

more clearly set forth in a court order of 1641, "that the Law of the last Court made concerning Libertie of Conscience in point of Doctrine, is perpetuated." The significant Seal of the new State bore as a "signett" "a Sheafe of Arrows bound up" with the motto, *Amor Vincet Omnia*. No clearer or more emphatic declaration of the inalienable Rights of Man had up to that ever been made.

Mr. Coddington was an educated liberal, was the first judge and chief magistrate of the new colony, and continued to be its Governor till the union of the town under the first patent; he was the first merchant of Newport and was a man of affairs, public and private, for many years. He joined the Quakers in his last years and died in their faith, as well as in the office of Governor at the age of seventy-seven. Chief Justice Durfee thus sums up William Coddington's life: "He had in him a little too much of the future of Massachusetts, and a little too much of the past of Rhode Island as she then was." Gov. Arnold says: "He was a man of vigorous intellect, of strong passions, earnest in whatever he undertook, and self-reliant in all his actions."

THE CODDINGTON COUP D'ETAT—The Williams Patent of 1644, giving to the freemen of Providence, Portsmouth and Newport the right to organize a civil government, in harmony with English laws, meets with determined opposition within and without Narragansett Bay territory. Mr. John Browne, who had made a residence at Wannamoisett, has already presented the claims of Plymouth to a part of the territory included in the bounds of the Patent, Massachusetts has already set up her authority at Pawtuxet and lays claim by her Patent of December, 1643, to the whole of the Plantations, while the Aquidneck Colony refuses consent to the Williams usurpation. Twenty troublesome years lie before the people of the Narragansett Bay settlements. Three parties claim legal titles to much of the same domain of land and water, and Rhode Island Colony is a fourth claimant for its island possessions. The Aquidneck Colony continues its colonial functions, electing Governor Coddington and the usual associate officers as though nothing had occurred, threatening its existence. On April 13, 1644, the General Assembly changed the name of the Island from Aquidneck to "THE ISLE OF RHODES, or RHODE ISLAND."

Concerning the four most prominent men of the proposed Plantations, we know that Roger Williams has established a trading house at Cawcumsquissick, to recover from his pecuniary embarrassments, by trading with the Narragansetts, on the Pequot Trail, near Richard Smith's. From 1644 to 1651, all his correspondence dates from Narragansett, the name by which that section was then known. Samuel Gorton, accepting the Williams Patent as the basis of what he styles constitutional or Royal government, buries his war club and smokes the calumet with Mr. Williams. A man of war, he gives and takes blows between himself, his settlement at Warwick vs. the Massachusetts Bay government. Dr. John Clarke has just organized a regular orthodox Baptist church at Newport

(1664) of which he is its first minister, holding that office till his journey to England in 1651, when he was succeeded in the pastoral office by Obadiah Holmes. Of Dr. Clarke's attitude towards the acceptance of the Williams Patent, at first hostile, we may assume that it came to be friendly and that, in consequence, the Island towns came to an agreement to unite with Providence.

As to Governor Coddington, who held the chief magistracy for seven years, 1640 to 1647, we are sure that he was strongly opposed to an acceptance of the Williams Patent. Between Mr. Williams and himself there had been no common ground of interests. The Governor was a business man, possessed of an ample property. He had held a high place in the Massachusetts Bay Colony for eight years, and was there a leading Councillor of State. On Aquidneck, he was the chief man of the Colony. Callendar calls him "the principal inhabitant of the Island." He says of himself, "I, having these in trust in the Island." As the unanimous choice of the Island freemen for seven years to the office of chief magistrate, he has a public duty and responsibility far beyond that of any other person. The intelligence and wealth and the political station of the Island are in his hands to safeguard by a wise course in civil administration. With Mr. Gorton and his party at Warwick he has no fellowship, and but little with the unorganized, discordant elements at Providence. He sees trouble and danger ahead by counselling acceptance of a Patent that cancels the well-organized and thoroughly equipped government of the Island and brings him and his people into civil relations with another class of men, with little of education or property and without the semblance of law and order. Here is a dilemma which calls for all that is wisest and best in a real statesman, whose excellence and value have been tested in the school of experience.

Prior to the return of Mr. Williams in 1644, Governor Coddington, having heard reports as to the Williams Patent, wrote, under date of August 5, 1644, to Governor Winthrop of Massachusetts, for counsel. "Now the truth is, I desire to have such alliance with yourselves or Plymouth, one or both, as might be safe for us all, I having these in trust in the Island, it being brought to me and my friends; and how convenient it might be if it were possessed by an enemy, lying in the heart of the plantations and convenient for shipping, I cannot but see; but I want both counsel and strength to effect what I desire." The Island towns and Colony in their judicial and governmental affairs had been carried on the shoulders of this strong leader. He sees great possibilities ahead if proper arrangements can be made with the two Colonies adjoining, both of which claim the Island Colony. No human foresight could penetrate the future of any one or all of the infant Colonies. Governor Coddington saw great injuries that might befall all of them should a strong enemy get control of so strong a strategic position, at the entrance of Narragansett Bay. Here was a man of vision, a man of patriotism, who would save the other Colonies and the Colony he had helped to found by an alliance with Plymouth or Massachusetts, and, in making that union, he wished to preserve the identity of the Aquidneck Colony and its institutions. It is easy now, looking back over three centuries, to see exactly what would have occurred if Plymouth Colony had accepted an alliance with Rhode Island. The ancient and earliest Colony of New England, having no

good harbor or seaport on Massachusetts Bay, would have found at Newport the missing factor in the achievement of promised commercial greatness and growth in wealth and population. Newport would have easily become the leading capital town of New England as well as of Plymouth Colony, and when the crisis came of Colonial existence, all doubt would have disappeared in the financial ability of the Colony to protect its organic life. Still more, Connecticut might have held her claim to the Narragansett Country and Providence Plantations been merged into one or of the neighboring Colonies. No one can doubt that a large state like Plymouth, lying between two great bays, with an ocean frontage of a hundred miles, would have surpassed in wealth, in commercial importance and in political influence what has been achieved by the integral parts, while the Colony of Providence Plantations made up of two discordant factions, was tossed about for years on the tempestuous sea of uncertain policies, partisan politics, sectarian bigotry and of class hostility. No one of the "Old Thirteen" Colonies was called upon to exercise so many of the grim virtues of social, financial and political warfare as was the little Colony on Narragansett Bay, and all for want of the recognition of her great Colonial leader and statesman, Governor William Coddington.

\*  
 "Of all sad words of tongue or pen,  
 The saddest are these: 'It might have been.'"

On May 19, 1647, the freemen of Providence, Warwick, Portsmouth and Newport met in a General Court of Election at Portsmouth, for a three days session, "for the Colonie and Province of Providence." The "major parte of the Colonie was present" and John Coggeshall (Deacon Coggeshall of the First Church, Boston), was chosen moderator. Forty freemen constituted a quorum. The first act was the adoption of the Williams Patent and it was agreed that "All should set their hands to an engagement to the Charter."

The Patent, that day adopted, was brought to Providence in September, 1644. Three years and eight months had been consumed in the labor of proving the policy or the wisdom of its adoption. A great wrong had been committed against Rhode Island Colony on Aquidneck. A prosperous Colony, its officers, its government, its institutions, had been effaced as completely as though they had never been. An ocean wave engulfing the Island could not have made so swift destruction. Governor Coddington goes down with the ship of State, of which he has been the chief officer since its voyage began, in 1638. Never did a truer, braver man, standing at his post, with flag at mast head, accept the fate which awaited him. Winthrop and Vane had fallen in the equal contest of the political arena in Massachusetts. Endicott surrendered to the popular will. Coddington fell by a secret force, across the sea, inspired by a man, whose individualism effaced human relationships and whose vanity counted the labors and institutions of others as naught in the balance of his own inordinate self-will. Two considerations, says Richman, prevented open and active hostilities between the Coddington and Williams factions—"fears of internal agitators like Gorton and of external absorbants like Massachusetts." Governor Winslow writes, "Mr. Coddington, Mr. Brenton and others abhorred their (the Gortonians) course, \* \* \*



looked upon themselves as persons in great danger, and bemoaned their condition to divers their friends, being now overwhelmed with cares and fears what would be the issue of things." To add insult to injury, Mr. Samuel Gorton of Warwick, has for some reason and method unrecorded, become a magistrate over a portion of Aquidneck, from which he was banished, after a public whipping, a few years before. The first public act of this General Court was to provide for a representative body to act for the towns in the general assembly, the general or Colonial officers to be elected by all the freemen, voting in person or by proxy.

Providence sent ten commissioners to act in the General Court, of whom Roger Williams, now a resident of Cawcawmsquissick, being one. The following article of consent from Providence was received: "Wee do voluntarily assent, and are freely willing to receive and to be governed by the Lawes of England, together with the way of the Administration of them, soe far as the nature and constitution of this Plantation will admit, desiring (soe far as possible may be) to hold a correspondence with the whole Colonie in the modell that hath been latelie shewn unto us by our worthy Friends of the Island, if the Generall Courte shall compleat and confirm the same, or any other Modell as the Generall Courte shall agree upon according to our Charter." It was agreed that the Code of Laws, above referred to, should be temporarily accepted, that a copy be sent to each town for more careful consideration, its full and final acceptance to be left to a later sessions of the Court.

At the next annual election of the body styled the General Court (afterwards the General Assembly) held at Providence, May 16, 1648, William Coddington was elected president; Jeremy Clarke, assistant for Newport and general treasurer; Roger Williams, assistant for Providence; John Smith, assistant for Warwick; William Baulston, Newport, assistant; Philip Sherman, general recorder; and Alexander Partridge, general sergeant. Nicholas Easton was moderator or speaker, and William Dyre clerk of the Assembly. Seven of the nine officers elected belonged to the Island towns. Governor Coddington did not attend the Providence meeting, and it is not probable that he had pledged his support to the Patent. At this meeting, charges were made against Mr. Coddington, the nature of which is left wholly to conjecture. As the "bills of complaint" were made to the Assembly they must have been of a civil character and, in case of proof, would disqualify him for the office of Governor, we naturally conclude that they had reference to his attitude to the government. Knowing Mr. Coddington as a man of honesty of purpose and openness of mind, it is not to be supposed that he would act the hypocrite's part, outwardly accepting the Patent, but inwardly and secretly doing what he could to overthrow it. The probabilities are that he openly and frankly opposed the Williams Patent on what to him were just and reasonable grounds, some of which have already been stated, to wit, his supreme hatred of Gorton, the main champion, with William Dyre, of Newport, of the Patent, his full knowledge of the troubles at Providence and Warwick, and consequent unwillingness to consort with these communities, his natural resentment to the unparalleled audacity of Mr. Williams in wiping the Rhode Island Colony off of the civil map of New England, but chiefly and primarily for the love and loyalty he had for the two



towns on Aquidneck of which, with Dr. John Clarke, he had been the chief founder and Governor.

Judge Staples, writing from the standpoint of the Plantations and with a judicial training and spirit says of the union of the four towns: "They can scarcely be said to have consented to anything more than a confederation of independent governments. If they intended a complete consolidation of powers their acts fall far short of it." Each town held the same relation to the government instituted under the Patent that the several United States hold to the Federal Union. The initiative and referendum resided in the several towns, while the local town government paid little heed to the central government and that had small legislative or administrative functions. Nor did the organization of the Colony government end the strife and discords that had disturbed the peace and prevented the growth of Providence since 1636. In September, 1648, Governor Coddington and Captain Alexander Partridge made application for the admission of the Island of Rhode Island into the New England Colonial Confederacy, "in a firme & perpetual league of Friendship & amity; of offence and defence, Mutuall advice and succor upon all just occasions for our Mutuall safety and welfare & for preserving of peace amongst ourselves; and preventing as much as may be all occasions of warr & Diference and to this our mocion we have the consent of the major part of our Island."

The Colonial Commissioners replied that they regarded Rhode Island within the Plymouth Patent and declared that if the major part of the inhabitants on Aquidneck would acknowledge their jurisdiction over the Islands, they would consider and advise as to terms of acceptance and grant the protection enjoyed by other Plantations within the United Colonies. About the same date, Henry Bull, of Newport, and Randall Holden and John Warner, of Warwick, sought the aid and protection of the Commissioners against the injuries committed by some Narragansetts, in answer to which the Commissioners wrote to all Indian Sachems in the Narragansett Bay country urging them to exercise such control as would tend to the public peace.

Governor Coddington had hoped that the Commissioners of the United Colonies would recognize the Colonial independence of the two Island towns on Aquidneck. They had a well organized government in which civil and religious liberty had been clearly defined and fully recognized. Dissatisfied with the reply of the United Colonies, Governor Coddington visited Plymouth to convince Governor Bradford and his associates of the necessity of preserving the integrity and the distinctive character of the Aquidneck Colony. Governor Winslow offered Coddington protection and security if he would come into the Plymouth jurisdiction, but Coddington urged Colonial independence for his own. Learning that Governor Winslow was about to sail for England, Coddington, on his return from a fruitless trip to Plymouth, decided to go at once to England and lay his case for the Rhode Island Colony before the English Colonial Commissioners at London. Leaving his farm and business in the hands of an agent, accompanied by his daughter, he left on his mission to save the Colony in which his hopes were centered and for which he had devoted his fortune and his labors as judge and Governor.

On his arrival in England, Coddington found the country in the midst of a civil war and some time elapsed before he could get the attention of the proper authorities to his petition. Sir Harry Vane had broken with Cromwell on the subject of the trial and execution of King Charles and was absent from London among his friends in the North. In 1649, Vane was chosen as a member of the Council of State, and on his return to London, received Governor Coddington as an old friend and associate in the Boston government, in 1636-37. Both were allied with Mrs. Hutchinson in the cause of a broader liberty in Massachusetts, and both left the Colony for the same high principle. Vane and Coddington were in full accord on the basic principles of a free state and both fully understood the conditions then existing on Narragansett Bay. Vane had been instrumental in securing the Williams Patent and is now called upon to advise with Governor Coddington as to the wisest course of action in the new dilemma in which the Aquidneck Colony finds itself. Governor Winslow of Plymouth, is also at London urging the claims of Plymouth Colony to the Island of Aquidneck, to which Coddington is opposed. On the 6th of March, 1650, Coddington presented his petition for an independent Colonial government on Aquidneck, free from the claims of Plymouth on the one hand and from the union with Providence Plantations on the other, as provided in the Williams Patent. Both the Winslow and Coddington proposals were presented to the Council of State and referred to the Committee on Foreign Affairs, of which Sir Harry Vane was a member. Had Coddington desired to annex Aquidneck to Plymouth, the opportunity was his. That he did not accept it discredits Governor Arnold's declaration that "Coddington was a royalist, and was attempting to withdraw the Island from the other towns and unite it to Plymouth." Governor Coddington did not desire to come under the territorial government of Plymouth. He did seek a place for Aquidneck in the Alliance of the Confederate Colonies, Plymouth, Massachusetts Bay, Hartford and New Haven. Had Governor Arnold so interpreted Coddington, he would not have said, "This appears almost like an act of treason against the Colony (Providence Plantations); much more so than those acts which a few years later gave rise to the famous trials for that crime." What it really was, was the restoration of the Aquidneck "Democracie" of 1638 to 1647, and the preservation of a government springing from the people, supported by the whole body of the people, in the interests of all the people. Here at London in 1650, the supreme greatness of Governor Coddington appears in declining all propositions in the way of making Aquidneck and the adjacent islands an independent, self-governing Commonwealth.

Arnold calls Coddington's act in securing the severance of the Island towns from the Plantations as "usurpation." Richman calls it "treachery," "infidelity," and says "This attempt to dismember the territory of the Commonwealth (Providence Plantations, etc.) was, in the eye of both law and politics, nothing short of treasonable." Brigham, a lineal descendant of Roger Williams, speaks of "Coddington's traitorous design," in his desire to join the New England Confederation, quoting Williams, who said that Coddington returned from Plymouth, "with propositions for Rhode Island to subject to Plymouth, to which himself and Portsmouth

incline, our other three towns decline." It is most evident that all of these historical critics of Governor Coddington, with purely honest purposes, have placed him in a wrong position, from a misconception of his purposes and acts, as we have already stated them. The very conditions which they claim Governor Coddington intended to subvert, were the real objects of his ambition to conserve. Even Dr. Turner of Newport supports Mr. Brigham in his contention that "ambition and a mistaken idea of his own importance caused in him (Coddington) the desire to be absolute ruler of the Island."

Let us state the case clearly and await the verdict. In 1643, there were four communities or embryo towns on Narragansett Bay—Providence, Warwick, Portsmouth and Newport. Portsmouth and Newport were well organized towns, united in a Colonial government, with legislative, executive and judicial functions. William Coddington had been judge and Governor, by six annual elections of the freemen of the two towns. The Colony had a corporate seal and was called "THE COLONY OF RHODE ISLAND" on Aquidneck. The population of these Island towns was about 1,000 persons.

Providence and Warwick were not organized, had no town governments and no magistrates, no laws, no revenues, no expenditures. Roger Williams at Providence and Samuel Gorton at Warwick were the leading citizens. The population did not exceed 200. In 1643, Roger Williams went to London, on his own account, without advice or instructions, conferred with the Commissioners of the Colonies, of whom Sir Harry Vane was a prominent person, and in September, 1644, returned to Providence with a Patent for "THE COLONY OF PROVIDENCE PLANTATIONS IN NARRAGANSETT BAY IN NEW ENGLAND." Through Mr. Williams' representations to the English Government, the Colony of Rhode Island has been put out of commission, all its functions have been destroyed, its government usurped and a new order established, all without the knowledge and consent of the freemen and people of the Island Colony. Had Governor Coddington, Dr. John Clarke, and the other authorities of the Rhode Island Colony known Mr. Williams' purpose, or the possible overthrow of a substantial, well organized society on Aquidneck, it cannot for a moment be admitted that they would have consented to this act of arrogant and unjustifiable usurpation. Our contention is that a junto of English officials, influenced largely by Sir Harry Vane, listening to and guided by an *ex parte* statement of an interested ultra-magisterial party—Mr. Roger Williams—did usurp, overturn and, for the time being, subvert and destroy a free commonwealth in Narragansett Bay, and, in its place, establish no government, except as ordered by assemblages not in harmony with law and order—the rather discordant, anarchistic and ultra-individualistic. We submit that had such an act been committed by any member of the commonwealth so overthrown, the act would have been treason—the blackest deed of criminal law. Had Governor Coddington so treated his own civil State, he might justly have paid the offence on the same block with Charles the First. Still further, what shall we declare of that act which subverts a State for personal ends, treats its compacts as "waste paper," dethrones its officers, its courts of justice and all civil authority—even obliterating its name, in evidence of the thorough

work of destruction, and then leaves its future to the chances of a new and incoherent electorate, surging between the extremes of well ordered freemen and a motley mob of discontented squatters. American history has no parallel to the act of the English Commission instigated by Mr. Williams, even in the bold Colonial iconoclasm of Sir Edmund Andros or the encroachment on civil liberty by Lord North.

Governor Coddington resisted the encroachment on individual and collective rights in Rhode Island Colony as long as possible when the freemen, wearied with the contest, at last yielded to the experiment of trying out the proposed form of union of the four towns on the Bay. To this combine Governor Coddington never gave assent or consent, but held himself free to act as good judgment and circumstances might dictate. Coddington chose first of all, Colonial independence for the Aquidneck towns. He could have joined Plymouth Colony, at any time after the settlement, but such a union was not desired by the freemen of the Islands for many evident reasons, chiefly of a governmental and religious nature. Looking backward, from the twentieth century, it is easy to see that if the Islands had united with Plymouth Colony, Newport would have been the capital town of the Colony, its chief seaport, and an easy rival of Boston. Still further, Plymouth Colony, with a fine commercial centre at Newport, would have weathered the fatal crisis of its Colonial existence in 1691 and in possession of the territory between Massachusetts and Narragansett Bays and the Seekonk and Pawtucket rivers, would have held, as it was entitled by priority of settlement, the leading position in the New England Federation. Had this taken place it would have required no prophet's vision to have seen Connecticut or Massachusetts Bay or Plymouth absorb Providence Plantations and the Narragansett country. Unfortunately the English mind of the seventeenth century little comprehended the magnitude of the undertaking in which they were engaged or they would have drawn other lines of state-hood, than those now existing. The old Colony had a right to live as an independent State, and had its territorial limits included the present State of Rhode Island, it would not have exceeded in size the grand principles its founders crossed the sea to establish. Happy would it have been had Governor Coddington's vision been enlarged to cover a century of events that followed his own distinguished career.

Governor Coddington spent nearly three years in England and while there met and married Miss Anne Brinley, daughter of Thomas Brinley, auditor general of Charles the First and Second. Her brother, Francis, came to Newport in 1652, married Hannah, daughter of Governor Carr—founding the Brinley family in Rhode Island. In April, 1651, Governor Coddington was tendered the commission of government for the Islands of Aquidneck and Conanicut, as a separate civil and political entity, under his governorship as ordered by the Council of State of England. To this act Sir Harry Vane gave advice and consent, thereby reconsidering and annulling the Patent given to Mr. Williams in 1643. Vane knew Coddington as a wise and able state officer in the Massachusetts Bay Colony in 1630-37, and had followed his career as judge and Governor at Aquidneck for nine years. Seeing in him the qualities that belong to a wise chief magistrate, he advises his acceptance of an English colonial appointment for an indefinite period, subject to the will of Parliament.

Governor Coddington cannot be held responsible for the form of government established or the term of service of the Governor. Bradshaw, Vane and other members of the Council of State saw in Coddington, the capable, the ideal magistrate. The people's constant choice until the Williams Coalition and even elected under that, it is not strange that the statesmen of England, not one a royalist, saw in him the qualities of purse, mind and heart to execute the will of the new commonwealths on both sides of the Atlantic. To complete the government, it was ordained that he was to have as associates, a council of six men, elected by popular vote, thereby preserving the Democracy of the Island.

In August, 1651, Governor Coddington returned to Rhode Island with a new commission from the English Council of State as Governor of the Island Colony from which he had been deposed by the deliberate act of the Commissioners, through the Williams Patent of 1643, to both of which acts Sir Harry Vane had been a party. With no evidence to inform and no clue to guide us, it is difficult to understand Vane's contrary positions in the two incidents of 1643 and 1651. He has never been charged with duplicity or dishonesty and we must leave him to the judgment of impartial readers and historians. Having been associated with Coddington in the Colonial government at Boston in 1636-37, Vane could honestly support him for Governor of Rhode Island, "reposing confidence in the abilities, wisdom, faithfulness and good affection of you, the said William Coddington, \* \* \* to cause equal and indifferent justice to be duly administered to all the good people in said Islands."

Rhode Island Colony is now restored to its original independence, with all its magistrates and functions restored, under a Governor, who was their chosen chief from 1638 to 1647. Mr. Henry Bull of Newport tells us that Governor Coddington was welcomed on his return from England by the people of the Island towns, the majority of whom accepted him as Governor by the choice of the Council of State of England. Dr. King of Newport, writes that Governor Coddington "was received with enthusiasm and appreciation of his three years labor and successful results. There were little or no indications of opposition. He resumed the reins of government amid the apparent consent of the people." Governor Coddington was worthy of and expected the cordial support of the inhabitants of Aquidneck, but from unsuspected quarters, opposition arose, for reasons to us unknown. Rev. John Callender, in the "Dedication" of his Century Sermon, 1738 to "The Honorable William Coddington, Esq.," says "the people being jealous the Commission might usurp their lands and liberties as secured to them by the Patent, \* \* \* a people made froward by the circumstances of a wilderness, and over-jealous of their privileges." Among those who had come to the Island during Governor Coddington's absence were some who were brought into opposing his government by men of influence on the Island and at Warwick, who for one reason or another had withdrawn their support. Among these were Dr. John Clarke, William Dyre, Samuel Gorton and Roger Williams. Dr. Clarke is charged by Dr. Dexter of Massachusetts, of stirring up the Bay Colony against Coddington by a planned visit to one Witter of Lynn, a Baptist, and thereby securing a martyr sentiment in his favor at Newport and Providence. This assertion is barely possible. Certain it is that



Dr. Clarke's influence and acts did arouse a number of the influential people of the Island to oppose the Coddington government, and, as a result of their discussion, Dr. Clarke and William Dyre were sent to England as agents of the discontents to secure a revocation of the Coddington Commission. At the same time the two northern towns, Warwick and Providence, not accepting conditions growing out of the Coddington government, sent Roger Williams to England to secure new charter rights for the Providence Plantations. To accomplish this purpose, Mr. Williams sold his trading house and land at Cawcawmidsquissick to Richard Smith, and Dyre, Williams and Clarke sailed for England in November, 1651, on a mission to dethrone Coddington and restore the Williams Patent. Governor Coddington meanwhile established his government at Newport, which was practically endorsed by the two towns, in the election of an executive council, consisting of John Richmond, Sen., John Smith, George Bliss, Henry Hobson, Henry Timberlake and Bartholomew Hunt. Arnold says, "the Island quietly submitted to the rule of Coddington."

Clarke and Williams reached England just before the breaking out of war with the Netherlands and it was not until April, 1652, that they were able to meet the Council of State on New England matters. The Dutch at New Amsterdam had established quite an extensive barter with the Indians on and around the Bay and to some extent with the whites, having a trading post at Dutch Island at the mouth of the Bay. Palfrey states that Vane interested himself in behalf of the petitioners for the revocation of the Coddington Commission, having received intelligence of the misbehavior of Coddington in taking sides with the Dutch in the matter of the Colonial trade so that "the whole Colony was exposed as a prey to the Dutch against the English Commonwealth." If Dr. Clarke or Mr. Williams used such an appeal to the Council against Governor Coddington, it was quite unworthy of them as honest men or true friends of the Colony, but some "great matters of complaint" were brought before the Council of State to revoke the Coddington Commission, in October, 1652, and William Dyre, the messenger of the Colonial envoy, reached Rhode Island, February 18, 1652-53, bringing the official intelligence of the re-establishment of the Williams Patent over its original jurisdiction of the four towns. By the new order, the officers displaced by the Coddington Commission were to be reinstated until the next election, but an attempt to unite the mainland and Island towns made by Dyre was fruitless. Dyre had called upon the mainland towns to meet at Portsmouth to plan for reorganization. Warwick and Providence refused to go to the Island, claiming that they were the Colony of Providence Plantations and that the seceding Island towns should come to them. The debate as to the meeting place of the commissioners of the two sections continued the separation for a year or more, and in the spring of 1653, two assemblies met, that of the Island towns at Newport, and the northern towns at Providence, each sitting for two days. John Sanford of Portsmouth was chosen Governor for Rhode Island and Gregory Dexter of Providence, for the Plantations.

All matters relating to a re-union of the several Plantations were then at a stand-still—worse, almost a condition of hopeless disorder and confusion. A quotation from a letter sent by the town of Providence to Mr.

Williams throws light on a dark spot in our Colonial history. In it the writer affirms the integrity of Providence Plantations as a political entity and Mr. Williams as its agent in London, but denies all knowledge of John Clarke and the occasion of his voyage to England. "Indeed in our meetings, our agitations were many and somewhat fiery, for that, Dyre, together with Mr. Smith of Warwick, who was then present and President, William Field and Mr. Robert Williams, strove to persuade us upon the main, so to account ourselves as being in disorder, a confused rout, or as he acknowledged the Island was, and that all officers, places, orders of court, law, and cases depending were all to be accounted nil, and that we must all come to a popular meeting, as scattered stones, to lay a new foundation of government for the Colony of Providence Plantations."

Coddington was powerless. Sanford had now succeeded to the Governorship for a troubled year. The hope of reestablishing the Colony of Rhode Island was relinquished with the changed attitude of Sir Harry Vane and the Council of State, and Governor Coddington withdrew from official life to the large concerns of his business affairs.

In 1654, the four towns were united in the restoration of the Colony of Providence Plantations, although a large minority still held out and the spirit of cordial unity was wanting. A committee of eight persons was chosen, two from each town, to heal the division. Nicholas Easton of Newport, was chosen president, Thomas Olney assistant for Providence, Richard Borden for Portsmouth, Edward Smith for Newport, and Randall Holden for Warwick. At the General Court of Election held at Warwick in September, 1654, Roger Williams was elected president, holding the office until May, 1657. At the General Court of Trials held at Warwick, March 1665-66, Mr. Coddington appeared as a commissioner from Newport. A committee appointed to investigate Coddington's right to a seat reported favorably and advised that a letter be sent to the Council of State in England asking a full discharge of all complaints entered against him by Clarke and Williams. Mr. Coddington was vindicated. The freemen of Newport had chosen him as their judge in the Court of Trials. An investigation made by the General Assembly into his conduct since 1649 cleared him of the guilt of all charges preferred against him at home and in England and he stands confirmed by judicial, legislative and popular vote as worthy of all the honors that had been or might be conferred on him. To emphasize the full endorsement of Governor Coddington's acts, the records of the Colony were mutilated and the sheets given to Coddington, in proof of the complete expurgation of any written matter derogatory to his character or reputation.

In this fight for the supremacy of the Colony of Rhode Island, Governor Coddington went down to temporary defeat, by reason of strange misunderstandings, jealousies, and falsehoods. From it he rose to the achievement of a great personal and political victory, when foes became friends, his policy of statecraft was vindicated, and Rhode Island Colony on Aquidneck assumed the position for which he had so stoutly contended and so shamefully suffered. The greatness of this grand Rhode Island statesman appears in the oath of allegiance made to the Colony in March, 1656: "I, WILLIAM CODDINGTON, DOE HEREBY SUBMIT TO YE AUTHORITIE



OF HIS HIGHNESS IN THIS COLONIE AS IT IS NOW UNITED, AND THAT WITH ALL MY HEART."

It should be forever kept in mind that on Aquidneck Island in Narragansett Bay, under the Governorship of William Coddington, the first "Democracie" with full religious liberty was established in 1640; that on the same Island (Rhode Island) the first code of laws governing a Democracy and declaring religious liberty, was adopted, and that as a climax and the fruition of all past efforts and achievements for civil and religious liberty, the Royal Charter of 1663, the Magna Charta of full liberty for all men, was written by Dr. John Clarke, a co-founder with Governor Coddington of the Colony of Rhode Island on Aquidneck. Callendar's epitaph: "A GOOD MAN, FULL OF DAYS."

#### PRESIDENTS.

WILLIAM HUTCHINSON—That was a precious set of heretics of the Bay Colony that left Boston in the spring of 1638 to form a new Colony at Aquidneck, now the Island of Rhode Island. Their names are worthy of remembrance, and some will be long remembered: William Coddington, William Hutchinson, William Aspinwall, John Porter, Edward Hutchinson, Jr., Esq., William Dyre, Philip Sherman, Richard Corder, John Clarke, John Coggeshall, Samuel Wilbore, John Sanford, Thomas Savage, William Freeborne, John Walker, William Baulston, Edward Hutchinson, Sen'r, Randall Holden, Henry Bull.

The Massachusetts records under date of March 12, 1637-38, say of Mr. Coddington, Mr. Hutchinson and several others, most delicately: "These having license to depart," and adds "summons is to go out for them to appear (if they be not gone before) at the next Court." In the records of the Court of November, 1637, is the following order:

Whereas, The opinions and revelations of Mr. Wheelwright and Mrs. Hutchinson have seduced and led into dangerous errors many of the people heare in New England, insomuch as there is just cause of suspicion that they may, upon some revelation make some suddann irruption upon those that differ from them in judgment, \* \* \* it is ordered that all those whose names are underwritten shall \* \* \* before the 30th day of this month November, deliver at Mr. Carnes house at Boston, all such guns, pistols, swords, powder, shot & match as they shalbee owners of, or have in their custody upon paine of ten pounds for every default.

Fifty-four names follow, headed by that of Capt. John Underhill, the Indian fighter, and including sixteen of the nineteen founders of the town of Portsmouth.

Mr. Coddington and nine others were included in the polite invitation of the following March referred to above. The arch-heretic, Mrs. Anne Hutchinson, the distinguished leader of the liberals, or new lights, under the name of Antinomians, was the real inspiration of the Aquid-

neck settlement. What antinomianism was is hard for us to understand in its practical essence, in our day, but looking back three centuries we are able to discover the unity of thought and principle of Sir Harry Vane and Anne Hutchinson in Boston, and William Blackstone who left Boston for the quiet retreat of Study Hill on the Pawtucket, saying "that he left the Lord Bishop in England to find the Lord Brethren in Boston, and that he preferred the wilderness with its savages to both." The real gist of the matter as between the Puritans of the Bay and the men and women whom they persecuted and banished was this, that the former came to the New World to establish a State Church while the latter came for the sake of freer thought in civil and religious concerns. The Boston Puritan had no use for a Baptist, a Quaker, a Churchman, a Roman Catholic, or in fact for any who differed in doctrine from them. Error in religion as they interpreted it was treason to the State. It threatened the solidarity of Puritanism, which as Cotton Mather interpreted it was Puritans only in a Puritan Commonwealth.

William Hutchinson was born in Lincolnshire, the home of Coddington, in the year 1600. He was of a family of rank and wealth and married Anne Marbury, coming to America with his wife, children, and mother, in the ship "Griffin," in 1634. The early accounts of him say "he was a man of good estate, and appears to have been a peaceable individual and much trusted, before his wife involved him with her troubled course." He became a merchant of Boston, united with the First Church, took the freeman's oath in 1635, and shortly afterwards was elected as a representative of Boston in the General Court.

Mrs. Hutchinson was a pure and excellent woman, to whose person and conduct there attaches no stain. She became known through her kind and helpful services to the sick and needy, and is described as a woman of "nimble wit," of a high spirit, gifted in argument and ready speech. Theological doctrines of the most abstract and subtle character were the politics of the day, and Mrs. Hutchinson's vision revealed truth to her of a different form and color to that which the Puritan divines of that early day saw. What her soul felt her lips revealed, and so able and acceptable were her teachings that many of the best Boston people followed her, believed in her and her "revelations." The brilliancy of her arguments startled the clergy, and led to her examination as to her faith. Warned and expostulated with as to her teachings, she continued to deliver the messages revealed to her until on November 2, 1637, the following order was passed by the General Court: "Mrs. Anne Hutchinson (the wife of William Hutchinson) being convented for traducing the ministers and their ministry in this country, shee declared volentarily her revelations for her ground, & that shee should bee delivered & the Court ruined, with

their posterity & thereupon was banished, & the meanwhile was committed to Mr. Joseph Weld untill the Court shall dispose of her." On the 12th of March, 1637-38, it was ordered "that shee shall be gone by the last of this month."

The second pilgrimage of these families from Boston to Aquidneck took place soon after the date of the Hutchinson family banishment in the spring of 1638. The leaders came to Providence, were lovingly received by Roger Williams, who entertained them as best he could, advised them to settle at Sowams (now Barrington, Rhode Island) or at Aquidneck. Finding Sowams preempted, Roger Williams used his best endeavors and helped the newcomers to purchase the Island of Aquidneck of Canonicus and Miantononi, for forty fathoms of white beads. The story of Governor William Coddington relates to the organization of the government at Portsmouth and the election of the first judge, William Coddington.

On the separation of the Colony in the removal of Mr. Coddington and others to the south end of the Island, at Newport, William Hutchinson was elected judge or chief magistrate of the Portsmouth Colony, holding office till March 12, 1640, when the two towns were united in one government under William Coddington as Governor and Judge William Hutchinson as one of his assistants. Mr. Hutchinson died in 1642, and Mrs. Hutchinson removed with her children to New Netherlands, wherein as the result of a quarrel between the Dutch and the Indians, the whole family was massacred "to the number," says Cotton Mather, "of about sixteen persons." The historian Sparks says of William Hutchinson:

Doubless, as in his last days at the Island he reviewed his pilgrimage, it must have seemed strange to him to find himself and his family cut off from companionship with the friends of his youth, who, though still living with him on a foreign shore, which they had sought together for freedom of faith, had been divided by a wider barrier than the ocean. We do not know that he ever complained of his lot. Perhaps it was not so great a hardship to him as to us now appears.

JOHN COGGESHALL was one of the really choice spirits in the settlement of Rhode Island whose great loss to Boston, on account of the Hutchinson controversy, was the great gain to Rhode Island, when he not only aided in founding a state, but also a family of strong character and wide influence. Mr. Coggeshall was born in Essex county, England, 1691, of an ancient family with vast estates, was a silk merchant, and on his departure for New England in 1632, with wife and children in the ship "Lyon," was a man of well established reputation and property. He

was chosen a freeman soon after his arrival and in 1634 became a member of the First Church and later a deacon. He was elected a Deputy to the General Court of the Bay Colony for 1634-35-36-37, and was appointed to many important duties in church and Colony, among which was the work of assessing the valuation of the towns for taxation. He was also a member of the embryo Board of Trade of Boston. Acting in unison with a majority of the First Church of Boston, he espoused the cause of Anne Hutchinson, which was also defended by Rev. John Cotton and a majority of the Boston ministers and church members. On the defeat of Harry Vane and the elevation of John Winthrop to the governorship, vigorous measures were adopted to stamp out heresy and drive out the heretics. Mrs. Hutchinson was summoned to the bar of the General Court at Cambridge and on her declaration and confessions was banished from the Colony. Mr. Coggeshall, who had been a deputy to the Court for the years 1634 to 1637, was deprived of his seat, as was William Aspinwall at the same meeting and William Coddington later; all for adherence to Mrs. Hutchinson's views or in defence of her rights. Capt. John Underhill, the hero of the Pequot War and an influential citizen of Boston, suffered the same sentence. As the persecutions at Jerusalem scattered the Early Church, so the Boston excommunications and wholesale banishment of many of her best and most promising freemen was the means of settling towns and neighboring colonies.

In 1638, Coggeshall, Coddington, Aspinwall, the Hutchinsons and the other deposed, disfranchised and banished Colonists of Boston, took their departure from the Bay Colony and formed "the Bodie Politick" at Portsmouth, Rhode Island, March 7, 1638. In a literal sense the tears of the martyrs for religious freedom as well as civil rights became the seed for a new Commonwealth, styled "A DEMOCRACIE or popular government," when "liberties of conscience was perpetuated." Bancroft says (Hist. of U. S., Vol. I., p. 262) "The principles of Anne Hutchinson are best seen in the institutions which were founded by her associates. Rev. John Wheelwright and his friends \* \* \* founded the town of Exeter, (N. H.) one more little republic in the wilderness, organized on the principles of natural justice by the voluntary combination of the inhabitants."

A larger number, led by John Clarke and William Coddington, proceeded to the south, designing to make a plantation on Long Island or near the Delaware Bay. But Roger Williams persuaded them to plant in his vicinity. In March, 1638, a social compact, signed after the precedent of New Plymouth, founded their government upon the universal consent of the inhabitants. The forms of administration were borrowed from the Jewish Code. Coddington, who had been one of the magis-

trates in Massachusetts, and had always testified against their persecuting spirit, was elected judge in the new Israel. Under this grant they clustered around the cove on the northeast part of the Island of Aquidneck, and they grew rapidly in numbers. In the spring of 1639, a part of them removed to Newport. "The Colony rested on the principles of intellectual liberty; philosophy itself could not have placed it on a broader basis."

At the first election at Portsmouth, 1638, Mr. Coggeshall was elected one of two treasurers. In 1640 he was elected as an assistant to the Governor, holding the office by annual election till 1647. In that year, the four towns, Newport, Providence, Portsmouth and Warwick, united in one government under the Williams Patent of 1644, and at the first election, John Coggeshall was elected the chief magistrate under the name of president. His assistants were Roger Williams of Providence, John Sanford of Portsmouth, William Coddington of Newport and Randall Holden of Warwick, with William Dyre as general recorder and Mr. Jeremy Clarke as treasurer. The great acts of his administration were the establishment of courts of justice and the first complete code of laws of Rhode Island, the foundation of our present system of jurisprudence.

The digest of 1647 is not only an admirable collection of English and American statutes, suited to the conditions of the Colony, but also a re-declaration of the principles of Magna Charta, and civil and religious freedom in behalf of which the founders of the several towns had contended in a neighboring colony, and for the support of which they had suffered privation, persecution, and in several instances, banishment.

Governor Arnold pays this noble tribute to this work of President Coggeshall and his associates in government: "For simplicity of diction, unencumbered as it is by the superfluous verbiage that clothes our modern statutes in learned obscurity; for breadth of comprehension, embracing as it does the foundation of the whole body of law, on every subject, which has since been adopted; and for vigor and originality of thought and boldness of expression, as well as for the vast significance and the brilliant triumph of the principles it embodies, the Digest of 1647 presents a model of legislation which has never been surpassed."

President Coggeshall died in November, 1647, in the first year of his presidency, at the age of fifty-two. Thus passed from the stage of action an able man who had aided in the foundation of three towns, Boston, Portsmouth and Newport, and in the establishment of two Colonies, Massachusetts Bay and Rhode Island in New England. He was buried at Newport on his estates, now in the city limits.

By the legislation of 1647, the powers of the towns in matters of general local legislation were clearly recognized and the principle of home rule thus early established, the basic idea of modern Democracy.

JEREMY CLARKE succeeded John Coggeshall to the Presidency of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations Colony, in 1648, under peculiar circumstances, soon to be stated. Mr. Clarke came to Newport with his family in 1638, and with eight others signed the following compact: "It is agreed by us whose hands are underwritten to propagate a plantation in the midst of the Island, or elsewhere, and to engage ourselves to bear equal charge, answerable to our strength and estates in common; and that our determination shall be by major voices of judge and elders, the judge to have a double voice." He signed as elder, the judge being William Coddington. In 1637, he was appointed treasurer in place of Robert Jeffreys, "till his return from the Dutch." In 1642, Mr. Clarke was chosen lieutenant of the military of Newport and, in 1644, captain. He was elected treasurer of the town of Newport for the years 1644-45-1646-47, and treasurer of the four towns in 1647-48-49. In 1648, he was an assistant to the Governor from the town of Newport, and in the same year was President Regent or Acting Governor, pending Governor William Coddington's clearance of certain accusations.

To be able to understand the case between the Colony and their newly elected President, Coddington, one must study the internal affairs of the Colony and the attitude of Mr. Coddington to the home government. In the first place, Coddington was not friendly to Roger Williams and had little love for the Williams Patent. The rather he desired the autonomy of the Rhode Island towns or their union with Massachusetts Bay. Discussion on the Island threatens to break up the union of the towns. Portsmouth led in the opposition and fostered the alienation. Still further Mr. Coddington was honestly and earnestly desired to join the New England Confederacy, but was refused point blank by the Bay Colony, whose people had already shown, by rebuke, confiscation and banishment, how little they loved Mr. Coddington or in fact any of the founders of Rhode Island towns. Coddington, Clarke, Williams, Harris, Gorton, Holden, and the whole company of settlers on Narragansett Bay were regarded, so says Lodge, "as disorderly characters who were dangerous to settled government." To add to the other causes of dissension, John Clarke, leader of the Baptists, had set up a Baptist church at Newport, and with his followers had broken with Coddington on matters civil and ecclesiastical. More than this, Mr. Coddington was a warm Royalist and supported the prerogatives of Charles I., whose throne was now tottering for its speedy downfall. On this point, Mr. Coddington was undoubtedly



at variance with most of his colleagues, who, sympathized with the Puritan party in England. Underlying all these causes of trouble was the strong individualism of the men who had organized the four towns.

Here are reasons in the abstract why Mr. Coddington should find himself out of harmony with his own vicinage. The concrete reasons are not given by the Assembly when it suspended Mr. Coddington and Mr. Baulston from the office of President and Assistant, to which they were elected, May 16, 1648. Here is the order as it appears on the Colonial Records:

It is ordered, that whereas there are divers bills of complaint exhibited against Mr. Coddington who was elected President; that if the said President elect shall be found guilty, or being cleared of the said charges, refuse the place; or if he refuse to give his engagement to the next session of this Court to be held for this Colony, that then ye Assistant of Newport, to wit Mr. Jeremy Clarke, shall be invested in his place, and shall take the authority of that place upon him.

By virtue of the authority of the Assembly or General Court of the Colony and for causes above suggested but not clearly set down, Mr. Coddington was suspended from the office of President to which he had been elected, and Mr. Jeremy Clarke became the Governor of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations for the year ending May 22, 1649.

As a matter of history, Mr. Coddington did not attend the General Court "for ye clearing of ye accusations charged upon him."

The most important events of President Clarke's administration was the adoption of "An Act for the well ordering of this Assembly," and the granting of a charter to the town of Providence, March 14, 1649. This charter is the first recognition of organized government in Providence Plantations, "on the petition and humble request of the freemen of the libertie to incorporate themselves into a body politicke." The name of the corporation was Providence Plantations in the Narragansett Bay in New England." This "free and absolute charter of civil incorporation and government," gave the free inhabitants of the town of Providence "full power and authoritie to govern and rule themselves, and such others as shall hereafter inhabit within any part of the said Plantation, by such a form of civil government, as by voluntarie consent of all, or the greater part of them shall be found most suitable unto their estate and condition." It is worthy of note that the town of Providence through its petitioners, Roger Williams being an Assistant in the General Court, made no reference to "the lively experiment that a most flourishing Civil State may stand and best be maintained with full liberty of religious concerns."

The first gold excitement in the Colony or in the country occurred this year, on a report that a gold mine had been discovered on the Island.



Mr. Williams sent some bags of the ore to Governor Winthrop of Massachusetts, saying, "It is certainly affirmed to be both gold and silver ore, upon trial." The Assembly passed an act taking possession of the mine in the name of the State of England, and all persons were ordered not to intermeddle with any ore. Later examination of the ore dissipated the golden dreams of the people.

President Clarke was a member of the Society of Friends. He died and was buried at Newport in 1651. His son Walter Clarke was Governor for many years.

JOHN SMITH—American history has recorded so many John Smiths that it is a matter of great difficulty to follow the career of any particular John Smith, whose path is so liable to cross the tracks of half a dozen others of the same name, that a keen genealogical and historical sense, as well as scent, is needed to make sure of your man as your John.

"John Smith of Warwick," is the man whose executive life we are to discover in the mazes of our Colonial history. The first we know of him is that he was born in England about the opening of the seventeenth century, and, according to Savage, a good Massachusetts authority, came to Salem, Massachusetts, in 1631 or 1632. Here he formed the acquaintance of Roger Williams, a minister in that town, and imbibed his sentiments as to the rights and duties of citizenship and whatever Mr. Williams had to say on freedom, civil and religious, which the Bay called heresy. Subsequently he went to Boston. Mr. Williams alludes to him as a "Merchant or shipkeeper that lived in Boston." One historian relates that John Smith was banished from Boston in 1635, "for divers dangerous opinions which he holdeth and hath divulged," that he came to Providence and from thence settled in Warwick.

In 1648, the real John Smith appears in Warwick, at the head of a "General Court of Tryall for the town of Warwick." The other members were Ezekiel Holyman, John Warner, Mr. Holyman's son-in-law, Robert Potter, Christopher Helmer and Peter Green. The Court of Trials seems to have been a local court to act for the townspeople during the recess period of the General Court of Trial.

On May 22, 1649, Mr. Roger Williams being Moderator of the General Court of election held at Warwick, Mr. John Smith of Warwick was elected President for the year. In 1651, Mr. Smith was a member of the Warwick Commission of Six, which met with a similar commission of Providence, constituting the law-making power of the Providence Plantations, now acting separate from the Rhode Island towns. At the first meeting of this joint commission of the two towns, Providence and Warwick, various matters of legislation were considered of only local signi-

finance. On May 18, 1652, the commissions of Providence and Warwick, "being lawfully mett and sett," Mr. Smith being a member from Warwick, a court of election was held, Samuel Gorton, moderator, Mr. John Smith was chosen "President for ye Collonie." President Smith's administration is made memorable by the passage of the famous law of 1652 against negro slavery. This is the first legislation covering the matter of general human servitude enacted on this continent, if not in the world:

Whereas, There is a common course practiced amongst English men to buy negers, to that end they may have them for service or slaves forever; for the preventinge of such practices among us, let it be ordered, that no blacke mankind or white being forced by covenant bond, or otherwise, to serve any man or his assignnes longer than ten yeares, or untill they come to bee twentie four yeares of age, if they bee taken in under fourteen, from the time of their cominge within the liberties of this Collonie. And at the end or terme of ten yeares to sett them free, as the manner is with the English servants. And that man that will not let them goe free, or shall sell them away elsewhere, to that end that they may bee enslaved to others for a long time, hee or they shall forfeit to the Collonie forty pounds.

This legislation was amended in 1676, by the clause, "that no Indian shall be a slave."

An Act was passed "that all Dutchmen, except inhabitants amongst us, are prohibited to trade with the Indians in this Collonie," on penalty of forfeit of goods and vessels to the Colony. Later an act was passed forbidding any "foringer, Dutch, French, or of any other nation," from becoming an inhabitant of any town or of trading in the Collonie, "but by the general consent of the Collonie."

Legislation also was had relative to speaking evil of magistrates and for libellous and slanderous words, which had come into common use and circulation. During this year Hugh Bewitt, one of the Providence Commissioners, was arraigned for treason, but was acquitted by a verdict of the General Assembly, meeting at Warwick, December, 1652.

The same year at a later date the act relative to "foringers" was repealed, and it was ordered, "that all men of what nation soever they bee, than are or shall bee hereafter receaved inhabitants within any of the Townes in this Collonie shall have equal libertie to buy, sell, or trade among us as well as any Englishman."

Mr. Smith held the office of President only for the years 1649 and 1650, but continued to hold the position of Commissioner for Warwick until the year of his death, 1664. As evidence that public office was not so eagerly sought in the early as in modern times, it appears that Mr. Smith twice declined, when elected, to act as President. The General Assembly then "ordered that if a President elected shall refuse to serve in

that Generall office, that then he shall pay a fine of ten pounds." Such a penalty for refusing office was an effective stimulus to patriotism and public service in the days when pounds, shillings and pence were scarce commodities in the New England Colonies.

In 1779, there was demolished in Warwick a venerable stone house built by John Smith on coming to the town. Being by trade a stone mason, he built his dwelling house, known as "The Old Stone Castle," and when the Indians burned Warwick, in 1663, this was the only house that escaped the flames, being probably the castle or fort in which the whites found refuge and protection. This old house came into the possession of a member of the distinguished Greene family, who came to be known as "Stone Castle Greenes." His inventory, after his death, shows a good property for that day.

NICHOLAS EASTON was a strong, self-reliant pioneer in our early Colonial life, with a career full of interesting experiences and a life marked by splendid traits and acts. He was born in Herts county, England, in 1593, was a tanner by trade, and came to America with his two sons, Peter and John, in 1634, stopping for a while at Ipswich, Massachusetts. Here he was appointed overseer of the powder and shot and other ammunition in that plantation. In the spring of 1635, he began the settlement of Agawam, now Newbury, Massachusetts. In 1638, he built the first house in Hampton, New Hampshire, on the north bank of the Merri-mac. Meanwhile Mr. Easton became interested in the Anne Hutchinson discussion of works and grace, the great political issue of that day, and espousing her cause with hundreds of the most respectable people of the Bay Colony, he received the warning delivered by the General Court to deliver up all guns, pistols, swords, shot, &c., "because the opinions of Mr. Wheelwright and Mrs. Hutchinson have seduced and led into dangerous errors many of the people here in New England."

On March 12, Mr. Easton and family received the Bay "license" to remove from the Colony before the next meeting of the Court, in obedience to which Mr. Easton with his family, goods, and chattels, left Newbury, joined the Coddington and Clarke party in the settlement at Pocasset or Portsmouth, in the spring of 1638. At the first election of Elders to assist Judge Coddington "in the execution of Justice and Judgment," the record of the vote is, "Providence casting it upon Mr. Esson (Easton), Mr. Coggeshall and Mr. Brenton." Among their duties were "the drawing up of all such Rules and Laws as shall be according to God, which may conduce to the good and welfare of the Commonwealth."

Mr. Winthrop writes of him: "Those who were gone with Mrs. Hutchinson to Aquiday fell into new errors daily. One Nicholas Easton,

a tanner, that gifts and graces were that anti-Christ mentioned Thes., and that which withheld was the preaching of the law, and that every of the elect had the Holy Ghost and the devil indwelling." This was not bad theological doctrine for a layman, a tanner; not for our day at least.

Mr. Easton joined Mr. Coddington and others in the settlement at Newport, on the south end of Aquidneck Island, and his enterprise is seen in securing land and timber privileges "for the setting up of a Water Mill," "for the necessary use and good of the Plantation." Six months later, the father and sons built the first house in Newport. It stood on Farwell street, west of the Friends' Meeting House. By the carelessness or malice of Indians, who built a fire in the woods nearby, this house took fire and was destroyed in 1641. At this time, each settler was to have four acres of land and it was believed that the town "might reasonably accommodate fifty families." A modest prophecy as to Newport. In 1639, Mr. Easton had evidently joined the Friends, in principle at least, for he was fined five shillings "for breach of an order in coming to the public meeting without his weapon."

He was elected an Assistant to the Governor in 1640-41-42, and acted as Moderator of the town meetings for several years. In 1639, Mr. Easton and Mr. John Clarke were made a committee to write to Sir Harry Vane about the organization of a government on the Island, in order to obtain a charter from the King. Mr. Burwood, a brother of Mr. Easton, was to be written to on the same matter. Plans were already on foot for the union of the two towns, Portsmouth and Newport, under one government.

Mr. Winthrop has another interesting note as to Mr. Easton, which shows the burden of obtruse theological debate which rested like a nightmare in the Puritan mind and conscience. Under date of August, 1641, he writes:

Other troubles arose in the Island (Aquidneck) by reason of one Nicholas Easton, a tanner, a man very bold, though ignorant. He using to teach at Newport, where Mr. Coddington, then governor, lived, maintained that man hath no power or will in himself, but as he is acted by God, and that seeing God filled all things, nothing could be or move but by him, and so he must be the author of sin, etc., and that a Christian is united to the essence of God. Being showed what blasphemous consequences would follow hereupon, they professed to abhor the consequences, but still defended the propositions, which discovered their ignorance, not apprehending how God could make a creature as it were in himself, and yet no part of his essence, so we see by familiar instances; the light is in the air and in every part of it, yet is not air, but a distinct thing from it. Then joined with Nicholas Easton, Mr. Coddington, Mr. Coggeshall and some others. But their minister, Mr. Clarke, and Mr. Lenthall and Mr. Harding, and some others dissented and publicly opposed, whereby it grew to such heat of contention, that it made a schism among them.

As this account of Mr. Easton's theology and the church schism comes through Boston, whence Mr. Easton and others had been so recently banished, disarmed and licensed to depart, and from the pen of the author of other alarming and depreciatory articles concerning Rhode Island, it will be well to accept the report with a large grain of salt.

In May, 1650, at the General Court of Elections, held at Newport, Nicholas Easton was elected President and John Clarke, Treasurer. For the first time, the legislators styled the legislative body the General Assembly, fixing the salary of each member at two and sixpence a day. The amount of military stores apportioned to each town gives an idea of their relative strength and population, the only census of the time.

Providence and Warwick were each to have one barrel of powder, five hundred pounds of lead, six pikes and six muskets in their magazines fit for service; Portsmouth was to have as much as both these towns; and Newport was to have three barrels of powder, a thousand pounds of lead, twelve pikes and twenty-four muskets. During President Easton's administration very serious troubles arose as to the disputed titles to the land at Pawtuxet and Shawomet. Plymouth yielded its claim to the Bay Colony and that Colony annexed Warwick to Suffolk county, Massachusetts, and voted Capt. Atherton five hundred acres of land in the Narragansett country, now known as Boston Neck. The matter being brought to the United Commissioners, the title of these lands was restored to Plymouth Colony. In this state of affairs, Roger Williams was urged to go to England to intercede with the Royal Committee on Plantations. Coddington was now in England, on what errand or with what success the officers of Rhode Island Plantations were in a measure ignorant. The plots against the Colony thickened. Providence had assessed Pawtuxet twelve pounds and ten shillings. Pawtuxet refused to pay and reported the matter to Boston. Massachusetts wrote to Williams that if this tax was collected the Bay would seek satisfaction "in such manner as God shall put into their hands." That meant war.

About this time, Rev. John Clarke, pastor of the Baptist Church at Newport, Obadiah Holmes and John Crandall, on a visit to a sick church member at Lynn, Massachusetts, were arrested, tried, found guilty of being Anabaptists and fined—Clarke twenty pounds, Holmes thirty pounds, and Crandall five pounds, and in default of payment, each was "to be well whipped." Clarke's fine was paid by a friend, without his knowledge or consent, Crandall went home on bail, but Holmes was so cruelly whipped, receiving thirty lashes with a three-corded whip, that for many days he could take no rest, except by supporting himself on his elbows and knees.

In 1651, the two Rhode Island towns separated from the two Plantation towns, to be reunited in 1654, when, amidst dissensions, Mr. Easton was again called to the executive chair. Leaving John Clarke in England, Mr. Williams returned to use his abilities in reconciling the differences among the towns. He brought a letter from Sir Harry Vane, who had always stood as a staunch friend of the Rhode Island Colonists, between the Stuarts on the one hand and Cromwell on the other. He wrote a kind and beseeching letter to the people of the Colony urging them to reconcile their feuds for the honor of God and the good of their fellowmen. "Are there no wise men among you? No public self-denying spirits," he asks, "who can find some way of union before you become a prey to your enemies?"

In 1665, Mr. Easton again appears in public life, now as a Deputy in the General Assembly from Newport. Momentous events have changed the political condition at home and abroad. England has changed from a Protectorate to a Kingdom; from Cromwell to Charles the Second. Harry Vane has been executed on the block for treason. Instead of a loose disjointed government under the Williams Patent, stands a strong union of Colonial towns under that magnificent charter of human rights, the Royal Charter of 1663. The new charter has settled forever the conflicting claims as to Colonial existence and ownership. The Colony of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations now stands secure on the adamant of Royal decree.

Mr. Easton continued as a Deputy from Newport till his elevation to the office of Deputy Governor, May, 1666-67-68-70-71. On May 15, 1672, William Brenton was elected Governor, but refused to serve, when Mr. Easton was elected Governor, and was continued in the office for two years, when he was succeeded by William Coddington, May, 1674.

Governor Easton is now eighty-one years of age when he transfers the staff of office to his life-long associate, William Coddington, his junior by eight years. He has fought a good fight, this Pilgrim pioneer, this founder of towns, four at least in two New England Colonies; the first to build a log palace at Newport, where marble palaces now stand; the first to harness water to his service in the Colony for the making of meal and bread for the people, and in 1663, building the first wind mill on the Island. He was mercifully spared the terrible conflict of Philip's War, for in August, 1675, he laid off the armor of his warfare, as a good soldier of his Lord, the Christ.

Easton's Beach at Newport is a permanent monument in the honor of this earnest, faithful, honored founder of Rhode Island, who, though, Winthrop called him "a tanner," as in contempt, made a record for himself and his family, most worthy and memorable.



SAMUEL GORTON was the sixth President-Governor on Rhode Island territory and the first President of the two towns, Providence and Warwick, under the title of Providence Plantations. This man Gorton was so strong in his individual connections, so bold and outspoken in his opinions, possessing such an iron will, such a masterly, imperial intellect, such an impetuous temper and passion, treating his enemies with such scathing severity and contempt, and his friends with such superhuman protection, that it will be a hard task to portray him, in so brief a story of a long and eventful career. Henry Cabot Lodge has the following choice words for Gorton and his followers: "Faction," "turbulent," "disorderly," "in endless disputes," "lawless," "a curse to the neighboring country," "insulting," "sentenced to jail and hard labor for blasphemy;" "Gorton and his friends were perhaps the worst of their kind;" "sharp thorns in the side of New England;" "led a political existence in which their hand was against every man's and every man's hand against them." On the other hand, Governor Arnold, the historian of Rhode Island, says of Gorton:

He was one of the most remarkable men that ever lived. His career furnishes an apt illustration of the radicalism in action, which may spring from ultra-conservatism in theory. The turbulence of his earlier history was the result of a disregard for existing law, because it was not based upon what he held to be the only legitimate source of power—the assent of the supreme authority in England. He denied the right of a people to self-government, and contended for his views with the vigor of an unrivalled intellect and the strength of an ungoverned passion. But when this point was conceded, by the securing of a Patent, no man was more submissive to delegated law. His astuteness of mind and his Biblical learning made him a formidable opponent of the Puritan hierarchy, while his ardent love of liberty, when it was once guaranteed, caused him to embrace with fervor the principles that gave origin to Rhode Island.

Samuel Gorton was born in Lancaster county, England, 1592, and followed the business of a clothier or linen-draper, achieving a competency. He arrived at Boston from London, with his wife and children, in 1637, and probably went to Plymouth at once, hiring a part of a house of Ralph Smith, with whom he soon had a difference on religious topics. The public mind was aroused to its highest pitch of excitement on Antinomianism. The Bay had disarmed the followers of Mrs. Hutchinson and had ordered a large body of its best citizens to leave its bounds. It is no wonder that a man of Mr. Gorton's temperament and zeal in things Biblical, if not spiritual, should have been aroused and become indignant at the unheard of treatment, in a free Colony, of a people whose only crime was that of difference in dogma. Gorton's soul rebelled at such an atrocity and we are not surprised to read that on December 8, 1638, a year



after his arrival at Plymouth, he was summoned before the General Court, Prince Governor, to answer the complaint of his landlord, Ralph Smith, an Elder in the Plymouth church. The legal declaration has not been preserved, but it is safe to say that it contained vigorous language and scathing epithets, if Mr. Gorton was at his best in the use of the King's English, as to the usurpations of authority by the Bay Court. The Court records of Plymouth say, "he carried himself so mutinously and seditiously, as that he was, for the same and for his turbulent carriages towards both magistrates and ministers in the presence of the Court, sentenced to find sureties for his good behavior during the time he should stay in the Jurisdiction," which was limited to fourteen days. Banished the Plymouth Colony, Gorton sought refuge in the new home of arch-heretics in Rhode Island, and in April, 1639, he signed the compact of "the Civil body politick" at Portsmouth, his name being second on the list, William Hutchinson leading.

In 1640, in a court trial of his servant maid, he was indicted on fourteen counts, among the charges being the following: That he had said "that the government was such as was not to be subjected unto." He called the magistrates "Just Asses." He called a freeman in open court "saucy boy and Jack-an-apes." He charged the Court with acting the second part of Plymouth magistrates, who, as he said, "condemned him in the chimney corner ere they heard him speak." When the Governor said, "all you that own the King take away Gorton and carry him to prison;" Gorton replied, "All of you that own the King, take away Cod-dington and carry him to prison." Having already suffered imprisonment, he was now sentenced to be whipped, and soon went to Providence.

Mr. Gorton gets on no better in Providence, than in Plymouth, Portsmouth, and Newport, and in 1640 Mr. Williams wrote to Winthrop: "Master Gorton having abused high and low at Aquidneck, is now bewitching and bemadding poor Providence, both with his unclean and foul censures of all the ministers of this country (for which myself have in Christ's name withstood him), and also denying all visible and external ordinances in depth of Familism," etc.

Right here and now let us state what Mr. Gorton stood for in church and state, lest Gortonism come under the same condemnation now as it did in 1640.

The century beginning with 1600 was a period of great social, political, and religious unrest. The fruits of the English Reformation were a chaotic restless mass of elements, without coherence, and without directive force. Separatism and independency ruled the age. Each man was his own prophet, priest, and king, for all authority in church and state had been cast down and only the individual and God remained. Hence the

Pilgrims, the Puritans, the Separatists, the Gortonians, the Quakers, the Baptists, and all other names that spelled civil and religious freedom.

Samuel Gorton was a positive man—a man of most intense individualism. His trinity was God, the Supreme One; the King, his vicegerent, and himself, the individual man. Between these he recognized no medium of interposition. The freedom of the individual was only limited by the express will of God or the King. With this statement in mind, Gorton's life may be interpreted, and it makes clear the estimate made by our historian, Arnold, quoted at the outset. Mingled with these clean-cut doctrines were the mental vagaries of "a wild enthusiast," as Judge Eddy says, and the author of "the wildest and most extravagant whimsies." His crimes for which he was punished were *his opinions*. No immoral act was ever charged against him. The ordinance of whipping a man for his conscientious convictions falls on the man who unrighteously inflicted the punishment. The Gortonians "condemned a clergy and all outward forms, held that by union with Christ believers partook of the perfection of God, that Christ is both human and divine, and that Heaven and Hell exist only in the mind." There are many high and honored churchmen who have a similar creed to-day.

Leaving Providence, Mr. Gorton took his residence at Pawtuxet, where a majority of the people adhered to his views. From here a letter was sent to Boston, signed by thirteen persons, complaining of the "insolent and riotous carriage of Samuel Gorton and his company."

In 1643, Mr. Gorton, Randall Holden, John Greene, John Wickes, Francis Weston, Richard Waterman, John Warner, Richard Carder, Sampson Shotten and William Wuddall bought Shawomet, now Warwick, of Miantonomi, for one hundred and forty fathoms of wampum peag. The Bay Colony, receiving a complaint from two sub-chiefs that they had not been fairly dealt with in the purchase, summoned the Warwick nine to go to Boston, which summons they refused to obey, whereupon a posse of soldiers was sent from Boston to Warwick, "who besieged the settlers in a fortified house, took the settlers prisoners and carried them to Boston for trial on the charge of being a blasphemous enemy of the true religion of our Lord Jesus Christ and His Holy Ordinances, and also of all civil authority among the people of God and particularly in this Jurisdiction."

Mr. Gorton was sentenced as follows: "Ordered to be confined to Charlestown, there to be kept at work and to wear such bolt or irons as might hinder his escape; and if he broke his confinement or by speech or writing published or maintained any of the blasphemies or abominable heresies wherewith he hath been charged by the General Court or should reproach or reprove the churches of the Lord Jesus Christ in these United

Colonies, or the civil government, &c., that upon conviction thereof by a trial by jury he should suffer death." All but three of the magistrates condemned Gorton to death at the trial.

In March, 1644, Mr. Gorton was released from prison, and with John Greene and Randall Holden went to England to secure redress for the most enormous injustice and persecution ever practiced by a civilized State, in leaving its jurisdiction, making war on a peaceful settlement, taking the settlers prisoners, conveying them to Boston, manufacturing a crime and subjecting men, guilty of no misdemeanor, to the most humiliating sufferings. The banishment of Roger Williams was a slight offence compared with the awful tragedy begun at Shawomet and consummated in Boston. While in England Mr. Gorton wrote a book detailing the Warwick injustice, entitled "Simplicities Defence Against Seven Headed Policy." While abroad he obtained an order from the Earl of Warwick, issued to Massachusetts, to suffer the petitioners "freely and quietly to live and plant upon Shawomet and all the other lands included in the Patent," and forbidding encroachments in their possessions or their consciences.

In 1648, Mr. Gorton returned to Boston, and was severed from amity by a letter of protection from the Earl of Warwick.

In 1649 he was elected general assistant to the Governor, and in 1651, was elected the first President over the two towns Warwick and Providence, styled the Providence Plantations. Mr. Gorton from this date was the first and ablest citizen of Warwick, and his name stands at the head of the Warwick Commissioners for several succeeding years. He was also elected a Deputy Governor in 1664-65-66-70. Once the royal patent was secured and government was established on a firm basis and in proper form, Mr. Gorton devoted his great powers to the upbuilding of a strong town, with the result that the community that he founded is one of the most progressive, wealthiest, and influential towns in this Commonwealth.

Mr. Gorton was the author of several books, political and religious, illustrating his literary ability and scholarship. Among them were, "The Incorruptible Key, Composed of the CX. Psalm;" "Salt-marsh returned from the Dead;" "Antidote against the Common Plague of the World;" "Antidote against Pharisaical Teachers," etc. He left several hundred pages of Mss. on "The Lord's Prayer." Mr. Gorton died in Dec., 1677, at the age of 85. He styled himself in his will, "Professor of the Mysteries of Christ."

As Governor Arnold wrote, "Samuel Gorton was one of the most remarkable men of his age." His career was a stormy one in the midst of storms over all the English horizon. He was a born fighter in the political-theological arena. He neither asked nor gave quarter. If van-

quished, he never found it out. Had the wordy wars in which Mr. Gorton engaged been preserved for our time and reading, there is little doubt that the umpires would decide for Gorton as against his enemies. History owes Gorton a debt of impartial judgment on his life-work. When the final verdict is given, it will undoubtedly appear that with all his temperamental faults and foibles, Samuel Gorton's name is worthy to be written by the side of Roger Williams, John Clarke, Benedict Arnold, Richard Scott and other Rhode Island worthies. What stronger evidence is needed than the words of Gorton to John Clarke, in England for the Royal Charter? "*Plead our case in such sort as we may not be compelled to exercise any civil power over men's consciences. We do judge it no less than a point of absolute cruelty.*"

Hon. Samuel Eddy, Secretary of State for Rhode Island, from 1797 to 1819, writes of Gorton:

In the case of Gorton, who appears to have been the common butt of all the early and some late writers, than whom, I am persuaded, no one of the first settlers has received more unmerited reproach, nor any one suffered so much injustice. His opinions on religious subjects were probably somewhat singular, though certainly not more so than in any at this day. But that was *his* business; his opinions were *his own* and he had a right to them.

GREGORY DEXTER was the first representative of the town of Providence to occupy the executive chair and then only of the two towns that constituted the Plantations. His greater distinction is that he was the founder of the Dexter family that has occupied an influential position in the State from the first. Mr. Dexter was born in Nottinghamshire, England, in 1610, like Samuel Gorton was well educated, was a printer and stationer in London, and had preached at home before coming to America, about 1638.

In the layout of the home lots of Providence in 1638, Mr. Dexter was allotted the first five acres at the north end of "The Towne Streete," having Dexter's Lane (now Olney street) on the north side of his lot. In 1640, or later, he signed an agreement for a form of town government. The new compact gave authority to five selectmen to do the general business of the town, provided for the settlement of all private difficulties by arbitration. "Town fellowship" was found too weak in the presence of diverse elements of opinion in faith and government. To those who questioned the basis of authority and especially to men like Gorton, who must see the royal authority of England as the foundation of Colonial existence, the mutual consent, or "major consent" "in active and passive obedience in a town without a charter or a secure land title, was an invitation to question and disregard all "orders and agreements" which

affected the new society. Hence came the compact of 1640, to "silence feuds and strengthen authority."

In 1646, Mr. Dexter and Mr. Williams affirm the honest purchase of a tract of land of Massassoit on the west side of the Pawtucket river and northwest of Providence, the same land being in dispute with the Narragansetts.

In 1643, "The Key to the Indian Language," by Roger Williams, was printed at Mr. Dexter's printing establishment in London. In 1646, he was sent for to Boston to set in order the printing office there, for which he asked no other pay than one almanack a year while he lived.

In 1647, the town of Providence elected Gregory Dexter as chairman of a strong committee, which met with similar committees of Warwick, Portsmouth, and Newport, at Portsmouth, to organize a united government for the four towns, and also to procure a charter for the town of Providence, which, to this time, had enjoyed only a *voluntary* existence, under the proprietary. The town instructed the committee that the people of Providence "doe voluntarily and are free willing to receive and be governed by the laws of England, together with the way of administration of them, so far as the nature and constitution of this place will admit;" "that we desire to have full power and authority to transact all our home affairs;" "that we desire to have full power and authority to choose, ordain, authorize and confirm all our particular town officers," and "to move and procure anything beside these instructions, that in your wisdom you may conceive may tend unto the general peace or union of the Colony and our own particular liberties and privileges."

Under the new government, Mr. Dexter was elected a member of the General Court of Trial in 1648, and a Commissioner from Providence in 1651-52-53-54. He was also Town Clerk for Providence for 1653-54.

Mr. Dexter's knowledge of public affairs and experience in official life fitted him to fulfill the duties of President of the Providence Plantations, to which office he was elected for the year 1653-54. One of the first acts of his administration was to order his two predecessors in office, Ex-Presidents John Smith and Samuel Gorton to appear before the General Assembly to "give answer for their sayd writinge and charge against the Court of Commissioners and for their misdemeanors in their foresayed offices." The Colony also entered its remonstrance against the Rhode Island Colony in its warlike intentions against the Dutch, or in giving authority for a commission "tending to war, which is like, for aught we see, to set all New England on fire, for the event of war is various and uncertain." The same paper set forth the desire and attempts of the Providence towns to reunite with the Island towns.

In 1669, Mr. Dexter is alluded to in a letter of Roger Williams to John Whipple, wherein Mr. Williams allows that he had said that Gregory Dexter made "a fool of his conscience," but continues, "yet it is commendable and admirable in him that being a man of education, and of a noble calling, and versed in militaire, that his conscience forced him to be such a child in his own house."

During a portion of King Philip's War, Mr. Dexter was absent at Long Island. On April 4, 1676, the General Assembly voted "that in these troublesome times and straits in this Colony, this Assembly desiring to have the advice and concurrence of the most Judicious inhabitants, if it may be had for the good of the whole, desire at their next sitting the company and counsel of" sixteen persons, among whom was Mr. Dexter, John Clarke's name being first on the list, and Mr. Williams' name not appearing.

Mr. Dexter died in the year 1700, at the age of ninety. Morgan Edwards writes of him:

Mr. Dexter was not only a well bred man, but remarkably pious. He was never observed to laugh, seldom to smile. So earnest was he in his ministry that he could hardly forbear preaching when he came into a house or met with a concourse of people out of doors. His religious sentiments were those of the Particular Baptists.

JOHN SANFORD—This name appears on the rolls of the First Church (now the Old South), Boston, Massachusetts, as early as 1631, and was enrolled among the freemen in 1632. In 1633 he was one of a committee to oversee the building of a cart bridge over Muddy river and another over Stony river, and to fix the bounds between Roxbury and Newtown, now Cambridge. In 1634 he was ordered to take an account of the powder, shot and ordnance of the Colony and to report at the next Court their condition. The same year he was chosen cannoneer of the fort at Boston, and for two years service he had already done at said Fort, and one year more he shall do, he was allowed £20. In 1636, he was chosen cannoneer and surveyor of the arms and ammunition of the Colony, receiving therefor "£30, for his own and his man's pains." November 2, 1637, he was allowed £13 6s. 8d. for the year past and was discharged on delivery of an inventory to another. November 30, Mr. Sanford was included in the order, taking the arms and ammunition from all those who had been "seduced and led into dangerous errors," "by the opinions and revelations of Mr. Wheelwright and Mrs. Hutchinson."

Mr. Sanford joined the Clarke-Coddington Company and became one of the charter members of the Portsmouth Colony, on March 7, 1638,



when that "Body Politick" was organized, under William Coddington as Judge of the theocratic commonwealth. Mr. Sanford was at the head of a committee to lay out the community lands and with Mr. John Coggeshall was to decide where the meeting house should be set, "on the neck of Land that goes over to the Maine of the Island." Among other duties he was surveyor of highways, constable, a committee to treat with Mr. Easton as to a water mill, to lay out the line between Portsmouth and Newport, to pay bounties for wolf catching, lieutenant of the military company, etc., etc. Later we find Mr. Sanford recorder of the public records of "his Majestie's Collony of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations," and in 1647, he was elected from Portsmouth as an Assistant to President John Coggeshall, and in 1649 as Assistant to President John Smith, of Warwick.

In 1653, Mr. Sanford was elected President of the Rhode Island Colony, the last before the final union of the two Colonies, which was brought about during this administration. A demand was made on Mr. Coddington for the Books of Statutes and Records, to which Mr. Coddington made reply that he would give an answer after advising with his Council. Eight men were chosen, two from each town "for ripening matters that concerne Long Island, and in ye case concerninge ye Dutch." Commissions were issued to Capt. John Underhill, Mr. William Dyer, and Edward Hull, "to goe against ye Dutch, or any enemies of ye Commonwealth of England." President Sanford died in office in 1653.

His son John was general treasurer of the United Colony from 1655 to 1664; a Commissioner from Portsmouth 1656-57-58-59-60-62-63; general recorder from 1656 to 1676; attorney general 1663-64-70-71; deputy 1664-65-66-68-69-70-71-72-73-74-77-78-81-82-83-84; and governor's assistant 1664-65-80.

ROGER WILLIAMS—Mr. Williams, having fulfilled the mission assigned him in England, returned to Providence in July, 1654. He found that a reunion of the towns had been made and an election held in May, 1654, at Providence, at which the Colonial general officers had been elected, with Nicholas Easton of Newport as President. "Various differences and obstructions amongst the foure Townes" had arisen during the three years of separation and there appeared at the General Election strong expressions of dissatisfaction and a want of cordiality in the renewal of Colonial relations. In order that these difficulties might be diplomatically adjusted a commission was chosen of twenty-four men, six from each town. This commission agreed that the action of the two sets of towns should stand and "remain on their owne accompt." It also agreed that



the Colony should act under the authority of the Charter of 1644. A third agreement established a "General Courte of this Collonie or Generall Assemblie to transact all affaires except election, as making of lawes, tryall of generall officers, &c.," to be held by six commissioners, chosen by each "Towne of ye Colonies."

Following this readjustment of relations which occurred on August 31, 1654, a meeting of the Court of Commissioners and Election was held at Warwick, September 12, 1654, of which Benedict Arnold of Newport, was Moderator. "At Six in the morning" of the 13th, Roger Williams was chosen President of the reconstructed Colony, holding that office until May, 1657. His Assistants were Thomas Harris of Providence, John Roome for Portsmouth, Benedict Arnold for Newport and Randall Holden of Warwick.

The events of this period until the acceptance of the Royal Charter in 1663, but in justice to Mr. Williams' administration as President will be summarized here as the acts and resolves of the first session of the legislative body of the Colony under the name of THE GENERAL ASSEMBLY, composed of twenty-four members, six from each of the four towns. The Speaker (Moderator) of this first session was Benedict Arnold of Newport, who was later both President and Governor of the four towns. It will be noted also that the official name of the persons we now call REPRESENTATIVES was, in 1654, COMMISSIONERS.

#### ORDERS OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY, SEPTEMBER 13, 1654.

1. Form of engagement of general officers of Colony.
2. General election of Colony, first Tuesday after May 15 of each year.
3. Election of representatives, first Tuesday in May.
4. Roger Williams, President, and Gregory Dexter were requested to send a letter of thanksgiving to his Highness, Oliver Cromwell, Lord Protector, to Sir Harry Vane, Mr. Holland and to Mr. John Clarke, in the name of the Colony.
5. All transactions, formerly passed under the title of the Bodies of the Liberties of England shall hereafter issue in the name of His Highness the Lord Protector of England, Scotland and Ireland and the Dominions thereto belonging.
6. Order as to engagement of general officers.
7. The General Court of Trials shall be held at Portsmouth the last Tuesday in October.
8. The next general election to be held at Providence.
9. Fees of recorder, three shillings from each town; for a copy of Acts of General Assembly.
10. Instructions presented by Mr. John Clarke are approved.
11. Deputies may determine the plan of holding courts in the Island and Mainland towns, either together or apart.

14. The President and four Assistants or a majority of the five, may call a special session of the General Assembly.

The general Colonial election of 1655 was held at Providence, May 22; Roger Williams, President, Moderator. Roger Williams was chosen President and Thomas Olney, John Roome, Benedict Arnold and Randall Holden, Assistants. William Lytherland was chosen secretary of the Colony and clerk of the General Assembly.

#### ORDERS OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY, MAY, 1655.

1. Concerning oath of allegiance to State of England.
2. Three courts of trial, Providence, Portsmouth and Newport.
3. Punishment to those refusing allegiance.
4. General Assembly to regulate general taxes.
5. Committee appointed to treat with Thomas Olney and others for resisting authority.
6. Strangers coming into towns to be looked after.
7. Committee on the suppression of liquor selling.
8. Representatives in General Assembly to have 3s. a day for service; fine, 6s. for non-appearance.
9. Jurymen to receive 2s. for every action.
10. First liquor law in the Colony.
11. For composing trespass.
12. Prisons ordered built at Newport, Providence and Warwick.
13. Punishment for adultery.
14. Law as to divorce.
15. Granting and serving writs.
16. Each town required to have two houses of entertainment.
17. Mr. John Coggeshall given liberty to contract a new marriage.
18. Punishment for profanity.
19. Thirty-two shillings to be paid the secretary of Colony for copies of Acts of General Assembly to be sent to each town.

#### ORDERS OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY, JUNE 29, 1655.

President Roger Williams presiding.

1. Messenger with warrants for speedy calling of General Assembly.
  2. Letters of thanksgiving to John Clarke and the Lord Protector.
  3. Complaints as to whoredom in the Colony, made by Lord Protector Cromwell, ordered investigated.
  4. Ringleaders of "intestine commotions" as complained of by the Lord Protector to be sought out and sent to England for trial.
  5. Liberty granted to Elizabeth Coggeshall, divorced wife of John Coggeshall, to contract a new marriage.
  6. Rights of Colony to grass on the island of Conanicut affirmed and ordered executed.
  7. Punishment of grave robbers declared.
  8. Appraisals in legal executions, how made.
- The Assembly adjourned "till morninge, sunn an houre high."
9. A committee chosen to report on way to prevent the sale of ammunition to Indians.

10. An account to be taken of the amounts of ammunition in Colony.
11. Any representative striking another in the Assembly would be fined £10 or be whipped.

ORDERS OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY, MARCH, 1656.

1. Pumham, of Warwick, ordered to appear before this body.
2. Mr. Williams and others to treat with Pumham.
3. William Coddington admitted to the Assembly as a representative from Newport.
4. Nicholas Easton ordered to pay Christopher Almy for vessel unlawfully seized.
5. Intentions of marriage to be published.
6. Persons forbidding the bands of marriage to be examined for their objections.
7. Tippling to stop at nine at night.
8. Bartholomew Hunt's powder seized to be paid for. Seven pistols to be looked after.
9. Twenty-one years fixed as the age of freedom for sons.
10. Servant apprentices freed at twenty-one.
11. In the case of licentious or lascivious sons or servants, those encouraging to be punished.
12. Records of the Assembly relating to William Coddington to be destroyed.
13. Presentments on Island records against William Coddington and others not to be prosecuted.
14. Town authorities not to obstruct Colonial laws or orders.
15. Dissenting judges may enter protest against majority.
16. Penalty for judges leaving the bench during the trial of a case.
17. Incestuous marriages declared null.
18. Expenses of false charges provided for.
19. Order as to completion of prisons.
20. New rules as to sale of liquor by ordinaries.

The general election of 1656 was held at Portsmouth on May 20. Roger Williams was chosen President with Thomas Olney, William Baulston, John Coggeshall and Randall Holden as Assistants.

ORDERS OF GENERAL ASSEMBLY, MAY, 1656.

1. Order as to transportation of cattle growing out of business troubles between William Coddington and William Brenton, of Boston.
2. Laws as to retail sale of liquor to Indians repealed.
3. Arbitration with Massachusetts as to Pawtuxet inhabitants, formerly citizens of Providence, was agreed upon.
4. Defacing of instruments of punishment to be punished.
5. William Blaxton to have liberty to record his lands in our Colonial land records.
6. Keeping any strange beast thirty days, felony.

Several important public papers appeared during Mr. Williams' term. The letter of Sir Harry Vane, already referred to, was directed to the

mainland towns, and especially to Providence and was replied to by Mr. Gregory Dexter. Mr. Dexter very adroitly shifts the source of the trouble from Providence to the Aquidneck towns and charges William Coddington and William Dyre as being the great mischief makers of the Colony. Conscious that "possibly a sweete cup hath rendered (at Providence) many of us wanton and too active," he proceeds with a catalogue of blessings, that the "Town of Providence" has enjoyed freedom from "ye iron yokes of wolfish Bishops and their Popish ceremonies," from the "new chains of ye Presbyterian tyrants," and the "over-zealous fire of ye (so-called) Godly and Christian Magistrates," and then, to the humiliation of Providence, he proudly confesses: "Sir, we have not known what an excise means. We have almost forgotten what tythes are; yea, or taxes, either to Church or Commonweale."

Soon after assuming the Governorship, Mr. Williams wrote a letter to the General Court of Massachusetts in which he makes a strong appeal to that Colony to preserve friendly relations with the Indian tribes of New England. Mr. Williams was a prolix writer, but this letter has in it more evidences of broad Christian statesmanship than any other of his many utterances. It is a powerful appeal of a pacifist "to live and die in peace with the natives of this country." Mr. Williams' writings are often confused, turgid, passionate, involved, perplexing. This letter (see R. I. Colonial Records, Vol. I., pp. 291-298, inc.) is clear, calm, argumentative, philosophic, historically correct and conclusive. It is one of the beacon lights of Rhode Island history. Mr. Arnold devotes five lines to this great document, but if we mistake not, it is the most perfect utterance of Mr. Williams' active mind and the truest expression of his benevolent heart, and unselfish spirit. No nobler sentiment could be carved in marble or set in bronze on a monument to Roger Williams than this: "LIVE AND DIE IN PEACE WITH THE NATIVES OF THIS COUNTRY."

In 1655, the General Assembly ordered a freemen's census of the four towns. Providence had 42; Portsmouth, 73; Newport, 96, and Warwick, 38. The mainland towns had 80 freemen and the Aquidneck towns 169—more than double the number.

In a letter from President Williams to the Massachusetts General Court, under date of November 15, 1655, complaints are generously meted out to that government, to the settlers at Pawtuxet, "for the obstruction of all orderly proceedings among us," and to the Dutch at New York for arming the Indians against the English. At the same time, he wrote: "I believe it, if not only they (at Pawtuxet) but ourselves and all the whole country were subject to your government, it might be a rich mercy." This was written in the minor key of statesmanship, in which Mr. Williams often indulged.

On May 12, 1656, President Williams writes another letter of complaint to the General Court of the Bay Colony. It seems that his letter, written in the autumn, had not been answered and he returns to a restatement of the vexatious condition at Pawtuxet, "to the human insultations" of Pumham and the Shawomet tribe, who "practise all kinds of whoredoms, idolatries and conjurations," "in a confluence and rendezvous of all the wildest and most licentious natives and practises of the whole country." Providence, he aptly calls "your thorny hedge on this side of you," and he pleads the Bay to maintain this hedge as "out sentinels" for their own safe-guarding. One would assume that such patriotic appeals would be gladly honored, but there is no evidence of their notice. These records and events of Mr. Williams' administration show excellent evidence of his solicitous regard for the Colony and more especially for Providence, the town of his own planting and handiwork. Beset with local, personal and official trials of a quality and to an extent beyond our knowledge or power of appreciation, we must accord to the chief magistrate of the little Colony of less than three hundred freemen, a vision, a foresight, a devotion, a courage, and an unselfish consecration worthy of all praise.

BENEDICT ARNOLD—The Arnold family has cut a large figure in Rhode Island history from the foundation of our Colonial organism, until the present time. The Arnolds tell us that the name is an ancient and honorable one in English and Continental history and even make bold to claim that Charles the Great, King of the Franks and Emperor of Rome, was one of the titular founders of the family. It is only by admitting so great a claim as this that we can understand why the name has stood for so much of character, rank and influence, for many centuries. It was a good day when the Arnolds left the Continent for England, for the England of the last ten centuries had made a host of valiant men and given them a splendid chance for development, unless perchance some kingly axe did not amputate the heads of the men who did things, for that was once the fashion in England to prevent a plethora of greatness. Knowing the American Arnolds as we do and their English forebears, we are justified in believing that Arnold of Brescia, the great reformer of the twelfth century, who paid the penalty of his advanced views with his life at the hands of Pope Adrian IV. and that Arnold von Winkelried, the Swiss patriot, who won the battle of Zempach in 1386, by grasping all the Austrian pikes he could reach and burying them in his own body, making thus an opening in the enemy's ranks, was also of the stuff that later Arnolds have been made. Sure we are that Sir Edwin Arnold, the great interpreter of Indian poetry, and Thomas Arnold, the

great schoolmaster of Rugby, and his distinguished sons, Thomas, William and Matthew, are famous samples of a stock that has not deteriorated in the luxurious and somewhat debilitating influences of English aristocratic life of the nineteenth century.

William Arnold, in the sixth generation from Roger, through Thomas and Richard and Richard and Thomas, was born in County Dorset, Southern England, the breeding ground of American pioneer Democracy, June 24, 1587, while Elizabeth ruled the Court of Great Britain. He married an English lady, named Christian Peake, about 1611, for his eldest child, Elizabeth was born Nov. 23, 1611, his son, Benedict, Dec. 21, 1615, his daughter, Joanna, Feb. 27, 1617, and his son, Stephen, Dec. 22, 1622—four children in all. At the age of forty-eight, William and Christian Arnold and their four children sailed from Dartmouth, England, May 1, 1635, arriving in New England, June 24, 1635. The Arnolds stayed in Hingham a part of a year, and according to the written statement of Benedict, then twenty-one years old, the family came to Providence, April 20, 1636. Thus the first white settlement in Providence belongs to the Arnolds. Whatever the truth may be as to priority of settlement at Providence, it is absolutely true that the same love of liberty, civil and religious, animated and guided the Arnolds as that which inspired Williams and his band in their journey from Massachusetts to Narragansett Bay, and a common love of liberty, though not of the Williams brand, had led William Blackstone in 1634, to settle in the wilderness, on the river that bears his name, in preference to a home on Beacon street, Boston, with the sacred acres of Boston Common as his cow pasture.

William Arnold was one of the twelve men with whom Mr. Williams divided his Providence lands in 1638. In October (8), 1638, Mr. Arnold moved to Pawtuxet, still holding his relations to the Providence settlers, for he and his son Benedict signed an agreement with Roger Williams and thirty-six others of the "loving friends and neighbors," for a form of civil government in Providence, where very troublous and unsatisfactory conditions had prevailed from the first. From the scanty records of the time, and from what may be read between the lines, it is evident that the Arnolds and Mr. Williams were not congenial yoke-fellows. In fact, Arnold senior found little enjoyment with his Rhode Island neighbors generally, either at Pawtuxet or Providence. Of the Providence people, he wrote to Massachusetts: "Under the pretense of liberty of conscience, about these parts there came to live all the scum, the run-aways of the country, which in time for want of better order may bring a heavy burden on the land." Mr. Arnold was no more fond of Samuel Gorton, John Greene, and others of his neighbors on the south in Warwick, whom he calls "insolent and riotous in their carriage." So thor-



oughly was he dissatisfied with the Williamsites on the north and the Gortonites at his back door on the south, that he writes to Massachusetts authorities, praying for their protection. This was refused unless he and his friends would come under the jurisdiction of the Bay Colony, which the Pawtuxet people did, much to the disturbance, discomfort and disgust of both Williams and Gorton and the settlers at Providence and Warwick, to all of whom Mr. Arnold and his associates, including William Harris, were thorns in their very vital parts. The story of the Arnold-Williams-Gorton-Harris bickerings, quarreling, fighting, constitutes one of the most unreasonable and saddest of New England controversial tragedies. At the distance of nearly three centuries it is impossible for us to picture the conditions of social, business and religious troubles, between men of good talents and excellent purposes, whose treatment of each other borders on what in modern terms we call brutal and devilish. As a result of these local troubles, for sixteen years Massachusetts Bay Colony held sovereignty over the dwellers at Pawtuxet, in the very heart of the Providence Plantations, until in 1658 the Arnold party expressed a desire to be reunited to Providence and upon their own motion it was done. William Arnold died in 1676.

Benedict Arnold, the son, in 1640, married Damaris Westcott, daughter of Stukely Westcott, banished from Salem, and a resident of Warwick in 1648. In 1651, November 19, Benedict, his wife Damaris, and their children, Benedict, Caleb and Josiah, left the troubled conditions of Providence for the more quiet and agreeable atmosphere of Aquidneck. It is not improbable that he changed his residence to escape the chronic contentions of the settlers on the upper Narragansett. May 17, 1653, Benedict was made a freeman of the Rhode Island Colony at Newport, and so valuable seemed his citizenship that he continued from that date to hold one or more public offices until the day of his death. In 1654, Mr. Arnold was chosen one of the six commissioners of the town of Newport, holding the office by annual election until 1663. The office of commissioner was created by an Act of the General Court of Election or General Assembly held at Providence, May 16, 1648. It was ordered that six men of each town be chosen, "in whom the General Court shall continue." These six men, commissioners, were elected by the freemen of each of the four towns. This body of twenty-four men was styled the Court of Commissioners, and met in a circuit of the four towns, Newport, Portsmouth, Providence and Warwick.

In 1640, an order was passed that the chief magistrate should be called Governor, the next Deputy Governor, and the other magistrates, assistants. This body afterwards developed into what is now known as



the Senate. To this body of assistants Mr. Arnold was elected in 1655-1656-60-61.

In 1647, an order was passed that the chief officer of the four towns should be called President, and to this highest office of the General Assembly of these towns, Mr. Arnold was elected for the years 1657-58-59, 1660-62-63. On May 22, 1662, at a meeting of the General Court of Elections, held at Warwick, Benedict Arnold was chosen President of the four towns, an office which he continued to hold until his elevation to the office of Governor of "a body corporate and politic, in fact and name, by the name of *The Governor and Company of the English Colony of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations, in New England in America.*"

A word should be said of the Rhode Island end of the Narragansett Bay Plantations with reference to the opportunity of recognition, as seen in the case of Benedict Arnold. The Newport type of Pilgrim was of a superior class among the heterogeneous mass of New England people. It is fair to say that the average Newport freeman of 1640 was a more intelligent and lawabiding man than most of his compatriots at Providence. As a result there was greater harmony in the on-goings of the settlers, a more appreciative understanding of likenesses and unlikenesses and a greater charity in theory and practice. The contentions as to the division of town lots and wilderness farm lands never distracted Newport, as they did Providence for half a century. While Providence Plantations had its birth in Puritan Salem, with Roger Williams as its God-father, Newport had its birth at Boston, the centre of Puritanism, with Anne Hutchinson as its God-mother. Mrs. Hutchinson was a real leader. Among her followers was the brilliant Harry Vane, the Rev. John Cotton, and a majority of the Old South Church, Boston. She had all of old Boston by the ears in the debates over "free grace" and wicked "works." John Winthrop, the political king of Boston, and Rev. John Wilson, its ecclesiastical Bishop, were opposed to Mrs. Hutchinson's doctrine, known by the hard and to-day meaningless name, "Antinomian." The hot debate of theological controversy set all Boston on fire, and a general conflagration was threatened. Banishment was the only means of saving the Puritan Church and State, and as Roger Williams had been summarily disposed of in 1635-36, by a church edict, so Mrs. Hutchinson and her followers were made to feel the same cruel pangs of divorcement from the orthodoxical society of Boston and banishment to some unknown corner of New England. In November, 1637, Mrs. Hutchinson received marching orders, and four months later, Mr. William Coddington, Mr. John Coggeshall, Mr. William Baulston, Edward Hutchinson, Samuel Wilbour, John Porter, John Compton, Henry Bull, Philip Sherman, William Freeborn and Richard Carter had "license to depart, to avoid the

censure of the Court." These men and women were the seed-wheat, social, civil, political and ecclesiastical, that was planted at Portsmouth and Newport, in March, 1638, with John Clarke, a germinal seed of consummate value to the Rhode Island Plantation. Choice spirits these, true to the doctrines of civil and religious liberty, and more constant in obedience to the tenets of faith; intellectually the superiors of the Providence planters, better educated, and consequently better fitted to illustrate in this local government, in their Courts and in their business and social affairs, the principles of Equality, Justice, and Democracy, for which the Aquidneck towns were noted. In religious and church concerns, a division of the local society gravitated about the two great leaders, Dr. John Clarke, who represented the Orthodox element, and William Coddington, who embraced views later accepted by the Quakers, and in 1641, the General Court ordered "That none be accounted a delinquent for Doctrine; provided it be not directly repugnant to the government or laws established," and later it was enacted that the law made concerning "Libertie of Conscience in point of Doctrine be perpetuated." It is absolutely certain that the Rhode Island people were sound on Liberty of Conscience. In other matters, they were far in the lead, especially in the provision for the execution of law and the administration of justice. The Portsmouth settlers, in 1638, were the first to organize a quarterly Court with its English jury trial. Newport, in 1640, established an orderly judicial system with monthly Courts, right of appeal to quarter sessions and trial by jury. Stocks and a whipping post were established in each town and a jail was built at Newport. At Providence, there was no Court, no Judge, no Jury. Harry Vane at Roger Williams' suggestion, wrote in 1654, to the Providence Colony, a biting letter of reproof, in which he says, "How is it there are such divisions among you? Such headiness, tumult, disorder and injustice? The noise echoes into the ears of all, as well friends as enemies, by every return of ships from these parts. \* \* \* Are there no wise men among you?" It is clear from such facts as these that Newport was the most attractive settlement on Narragansett Bay. Her settlers were in the main educated men. Coddington, Clarke, Coggeshall, the Hutchinsons, Jeffries, were men of education, wealth, and social rank. Here early provision was made for education and on August 20, 1640, Robert Lenthal was called by the town to keep a public school. Here the Quaker element first found a peaceful habitation, and this remarkable sect drew to its embrace the ablest men and women of the Colony. With the exceptions of Gregory Dexter of Providence, as President of the four towns in 1653, Roger Williams as President, in 1654 to 1657; and Joseph Jenckes as Governor of the Colony from 1727 to 1732, Newport and Portsmouth held the offices of President, Governor and

Deputy Governor of the former towns and the Colony from 1638 to 1743, a period of 105 years. Wealth, intelligence, population, and political influence made Newport the leader in the affairs of the Colony, while her commercial position and tonnage brought wealth to her merchants and business to the people of the Island towns. It is in evidence of the stability of government and the integrity of governors and governed, that William Coddington held the chief offices in Town and Colony for twelve years, dying in office in 1678; that Samuel Cranston of Newport held the governorship for 29 years, from 1698 to 1727, dying in office; that the Wantons, father and son, of Quaker faith, ruled the Colony for fifteen years, and that Benedict Arnold held the offices of President and Governor for ten years, he, too, dying in office, June 20, 1678. Until the American Revolution, a period of 140 years, Newport, Warwick and Westerly ruled the Colony, with the exception of fifteen years.

This brief survey of the social, civil (or uncivil) and political conditions prevailing at Providence and Newport proves conclusively that Benedict Arnold made no mistake in making Newport his home town in 1651, and it is equally clear that Newport and the people of the four towns, exercising the prerogatives of "Democracie" as set forth in the Rhode Island Declaration of Rights, made no mistake in choosing Benedict Arnold for President and Governor for so long a period.

In 1651, Mr. Williams and Dr. Clarke were sent to England to secure from the Cromwell government the recall of the Coddington Charter. This done, Mr. Williams returned to Providence, leaving Dr. Clarke, Rhode Island's great diplomat, to secure a new Bill of Rights. This job was worthy of Clarke's ablest efforts, costing him twelve years of time, and a large sum of money, only a part of which was repaid him by the Colony. Cromwell's death in 1658 closed the period of the Commonwealth and cut short the career of Harry Vane, the long-time friend of the Colony. The restoration of the English monarchy in the person of Charles the Second compelled a complete change in diplomacy and diplomatic relations. Rhode Island was quick to adjust itself to the new political regime of colonial sovereignty. On October 18, 1660, the General Court of Commissioners met at Warwick with the 24 members present. A letter was read from Dr. John Clarke, telling of the Restoration. Accompanying it was a copy of the letter of His Majesty to the House of Commons, with his declaration and proclamation. These were all openly read, and it was at once ordered that His Royal Majesty, King Charles the Second, King of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, with all the dominions and territories belonging, should be proclaimed on the morrow, October 19, at eight o'clock in the morning, in the presence of the Court, and the officers and company of the train band of the town of

Warwick. It was also ordered that on Wednesday next, each town in the Colony shall at the head of the Company of each train band, solemnize the proclamation of the Royal Majesty, "if the weather doe permitt; if not, it is to be done the next fayre day, and that all children and servants shall have their libertie for that day."

That important act of October, 1660, saved the political existence of the two Colonies of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations. Massachusetts Bay and Connecticut Colonies had for years planned the dissection and division of the vexed little territory of Narragansett Bay and its environs. Dr. Clarke had stood at his post in London since 1651, the only barrier to the rapacity of the two neighbor colonies. The Cromwellian government had been too much occupied with its own safety and methods of preserving its own life, to spend much time on a question of the proprietorship of a few thousand acres of land about Narragansett Bay. But a change has come. President Arnold was the man for the hour. He heads a committee to draft and send a new commission to Dr. John Clarke at London, in which due credit is given Charles I., father of the new king, for "the free charter of incorporation" of 1643, "by virtue of which this Colony hath been distinguished from the other colonies of New England." Reference is also made to "sundry obstructions," growing out of "claims of neighbors about us," and "our trusty and well-beloved friend, Mr. John Clarke, Physician, one of the members of this Colony, late of Rhode Island and now of Westminster," was made "our undoubted agent and attorney," to "his most gracious and regall Majesty, Charles the Second, by the Grace of God, the most mighty and potent King of England," etc.

Later, but at the same session of the Court in Warwick, the Assembly, probably by the hand of President Arnold, indites a paper, which for expressions of loyalty, obedience and affection for the New King is unsurpassed in the literature of Rhode Island diplomacy. "Dutiful obedience," "legally and unfayned humble affection," "humble submission," "unexpressible joy and wonder," "unparalleled clemencie," "do present and prostrate ourselves at His Majesty's feet," "poor and unworthy subjicks in these remote parts of the world," etc., etc., are a few of the sentences of a paper by which the Four Towns are the first to acknowledge and declare their "unfayned affection" for the new King.

Dr. John Clarke has been a resident of London for ten years in the interests of the Colony. He has seen the death of Cromwell and the Commonwealth and the Restoration of Charles on the Breda platform of religious freedom. His new commission and the suppliant letter of the General Assembly to King Charles fit Clarke with a knight's armor and he is inspired with new strength and zeal, especially when he receives a

check for two hundred English pounds to pay his expenses. Then follows the two most remarkable letters ever penned by human diplomat to a Sovereign in behalf of the civil and religious rights of the King's subjects on Narragansett Bay. Listen:

To Charles the Second:

By the wonderfull, provident and gracious disposing hand of the Most High, etc.

High and Mighty King: The humble petition of John Clarke on the behalf of the purchasers and free inhabitants of Rhode Island and of the Colony of the Providence Plantations in the Narragansetts Bay in New England;

That your petitioners were necessitated long since for cause of conscience, with respect to the worship and service of God, to take up a resolution to quit their deare and native country and all their near and precious relations and enjoyments therein to expose themselves and their families to all the hazards and inconveniences which they might meet with upon the vast and swelling ocean, over which they must pass, or in the barbarous and howling wilderness to which they might come.

And why? That "they might with freedom of conscience worship the Lord their God as they were persuaded." Listen again, as he tells the King with what "joyful reception" the news of his "Majesty's return to his Royall throne" was received in the Narragansett towns, and that his Majesty was proclaimed their King in all the towns with all possible solemnity. Listen once more to the grandest inspired declaration of liberty that human lips have ever uttered or pen writ:

They (your petitioners) have it much on their hearts (if they may be permitted) to hold forth a lively experiment, that a flourishing civill State may stand, yea, and best be maintained and that among English spirits with a full liberty in religious concernments and that true pyety rightly grounded upon gospel principles will give the best and greatest security to true sovereignty and will lay in the hearts of men the strongest obligations to truer loyalty. \* \* \* So shall your servants take themselves greatly obliged, while they are quietly permitted with freedom of Conscience to worship the Lord their God, as they are persuaded to pray for the life of the King even that he may live for ever and ever, and to make it their study which way they may best approve themselves.

In the name of President Benedict Arnold and the Rhode Island people of 1662, did the great high priest and prophet of American liberty, Dr. John Clarke of Newport, like the great Hebrew prophets declare to the King and through him to the world that a people governed by righteousness become self-governing by the dictation of the highest law that men are ever called to recognize or obey, the law of conscience and of enlightened human judgment—a Republic of Liberty under Law, in which every man is king and no man subject.

The Royal Charter of 1663, the grandest instrument of human liberty ever constructed, was the mental product of the same great Statesman-diplomat, who after a self-banishment of ten years, embodied in permanent form, for the study of mankind, not only the sentiments of his compatriots at home but the essential features of a Democratic government, which has become the inspiration and guide to the Declaration of Independence and to the State Constitutions of every Commonwealth in the American Republic.

Benedict Arnold's name was the first in the list of charter members of this great title of freedom, with Brenton, Coddington, Easton, Baulston, Porter, Smith, Gor-ton, Weebs, Williams, Olney, Dexter, Coggeshall, Clarke, Holden, Greene, Roome, Wildbore, Field, Barker, Tew, Harris and Dyre, as his associates. Out of this list of men of distinction in our Colonial history, the King, by the advice of Clarke, selects as the first officers of the first American commonwealth, "for the better execution of our royal pleasure herein," Benedict Arnold to be the first and present Governor of the said Company, and the said William Brenton to be the Deputy Governor, and the said William Baulston, John Porter, Roger Williams, Thomas Olney, John Smith, John Greene, John Coggeshall, James Barker, William Field and Joseph Clarke, to be the ten assistants of the said Company, until the first Wednesday of the next May.

It is singularly worthy of note that the name of Dr. John Clarke does not appear among the officers of the Colony. At the first election under the Charter, we find Dr. Clarke's name stands first as a Deputy and at the session of the General Assembly, October, 1664, Dr. John Clarke, Roger Williams, Capt. John Sanford, Capt. John Greene and Joseph Torrey, Secretary of State, were chosen as a committee to revise the laws of the Colony to conform to the Charter, or patent as it was often called.

Volumes two and three of the Rhode Island Colonial Records contain the leading doings and events of the Arnold Governorship of ten years, during which period the disorganized and fragmentary governments of the four towns were united and brought under well ordered conditions, courts were established and the machinery of organized society was set in motion. From 1672 to 1677, Governor Arnold declined the governorship in favor of William Coddington for two years and Walter Clarke for three years.

In 1675-1676 occurred the disastrous war with Philip of Mt. Hope. April 4, 1676, it was voted "that in these troublesome times and straits in this Colony, this Assembly desiring to have the advice and concurrence of the most judicious inhabitants, if it may be had for the good of the whole,



do desire at their next sitting the company and counsel of Mr. Benedict Arnold," and fifteen others.

Governor Benedict Arnold died in office June 19, 1678, in the 64th year of his age, and was buried on the 20th of June. In a letter of Samuel Hubbard of Newport to Dr. Edward Stennett of London, he writes, "All this island was invited, many others was there, judged near a thousand people; brother Hiscox spoke there excellently led forth, I praise God."

1677, Dec. 24. Will codicil, 1678, Feb. 10. He desired that his body should be buried in the Northeast of a parcel of ground containing three rods square in or near the line or path from his dwelling house "to my stonebuilt wind mill in the town of Newport." In the center of this burial lot was a tomb built over the grave of his grandchild, Damaris Goulding, buried August 14, 1677.

He ordered that he and his wife should be buried in this ground and that the lot should be reserved for his kindred forever.

Governor Samuel G. Arnold thus speaks of his ancestor, Governor Benedict Arnold, in his "History of Rhode Island:"

His liberal views and thorough appreciation of the Rhode Island idea of intellectual freedom appear in the letters that, as President of the Colony he wrote in reply to the arrogant demands of the United Colonies, when they urged the forcible expulsion of the Quakers. That he was no friend of the doctrines, or advocate of the conduct of the followers of Fox is evident from his writings; but that, like Williams, he recognized the distinction between persecution and opposition, between legal force and moral suasion as applied to matters of opinion, is equally apparent. In politics and in theology he was alike the opponent of Coddington and the friend of John Clarke and throughout his long and useful life he displayed talents of a brilliant order which were ever employed for the welfare of his fellow men.

Hon. John R. Bartlett writes:

Governor Benedict Arnold was among the early Puritan Emigrants from the Old Country to Massachusetts. Sympathizing with Roger Williams in his views on civil and religious liberty, he was among the first settlers of Providence. His name appears on the first conveyance in the records of the towns. His name also appears in the Civil Compact in which the signers declared, "We do promise to subject ourselves in active and passive obedience to all such orders or agreements as shall be made for public good of the body, in an orderly way, by the major assent of the inhabitants, etc."

"It will then appear that from the very outset, and when he was a young man (about twenty-three) he took an interest in matters affecting the welfare of the Colony. In 1642, he was one of the four inhabitants, who, becoming dissatisfied with the conduct of Samuel Gorton and his



company, placed themselves and their lands under the government and protection of Massachusetts where they all remained for sixteen years, with the exception of Mr. Arnold, who removed to Newport." After reciting the leading events of his life, he closes, "Governor Arnold was a leading man of the times in which he lived and occupied a conspicuous place in Rhode Island history."

Acts of General Assembly during Benedict Arnold's administration:

1657.—Fornication, for first offence was punishable by fifteen stripes or 40s. in the town where committed; for second offence to receive fifteen stripes in each of two towns or pay £4.

The treaty of peace between England and Holland was declared to establish commerce between Rhode Island and the Dutch.

Roger Williams brought charges of High Treason against William Harris. On July 4, 1657, the Assembly, without further action, referred the matter to John Clarke, in London, for his opinion therein.

A letter from the Commissioners of the United Colonies, 1658, recited the facts as to the arrival of Quakers at Boston in 1657, and commended to all the United Colonies that all "Quakers, Ranters and such notorious heretiques" be prohibited coming among them, and if any arise among their own people, speedy care be taken for their removal. As the Colony of Rhode Island had intercourse with the United Colonies in trade, it was desired by the latter that the Quakers that had been received at Newport be removed and that no more be allowed to enter the Colony. They further declared that they knew not what further provision God might call them to make to prevent future mischief.

President Arnold was not a friend of the Quakers, but his reply endorsed by the four assistants, shows a firm adherence to the Rhode Island doctrine of religious toleration. "Concerning these Quakers (so-called), which are now among us, we have no law among us, whereby to punish any for only declaring by words, &c., their mindes and understandings concerning the things and days of God, as to salvation and an eternal condition. \* \* \* We find that they delight to be persecuted by civill powers, and when they are soe, they are like to gain more adherents to the conseyte of their patient sufferings, than by consent to their pernicious sayings. And yet we conceive, that their doctrines tend to very absolute cutting down and overturning relations and civil government among men, if generally received." President Arnold promised President Bradstreet that, at the next session of the General Assembly, "their extravagant outgoings" would be considered and he hoped some action would be taken "to prevent the bad effects of their doctrines and endeavors."

At the March session of the Assembly, 1657-58, the Rhode Island doctrine of "freedom of different consciences was reaffirmed" and a letter

was sent to the Commissioners, stating that if civil troubles arose from harboring Quakers, they would present the matter "unto the Supream Authority of England."

This was "a sop to Cerberus," and no complaints came from the neighboring colonies thereafter as to the Quakers. President Arnold little thought that he would live to see the pernicious Quakers so numerous as to elect Colonial Governors and control the General Assembly in policy and acts. "The stone the builders rejected became the head of the corner."

The liquor law was amended by requiring a tax of five shillings per anker for all liquors brought into the Colony. Towns were ordered to appoint officers to search vessels and seize cargoes not lawfully entered and the excise not paid.

In 1658, the General Assembly sent a letter to Dr. John Clarke at London, commending his ability and diligence and asking his advice as to the Quakers, and his interposition in case the United Colonies should intercede with the English Government to allow them to cut off the Rhode Island Colony from trade and commerce with her neighbors. As Boston was the chief trading port of New England and had coastwise shipping, the Colonies were in a position to destroy their neighbor on Narragansett Bay, by a refusal to exchange English goods for the agricultural products, corn, tobacco and cattle. The Assembly asked Mr. Clarke so to plead their cause, "as wee may not be compelled to exercise any civill power over men's consciences, soe long as humane orders in point of civilitie are not corrupted and voyalated." It was ordered that the General Assembly, except for special reason, hold only an annual session.

The principle of the referendum was enacted in 1658; a copy of the laws as made by the General Assembly was to be sent to the Town Clerk of each town within ten days from adjournment. Then ten days were allowed for the freemen of each of the four towns to meet and consider the laws, and, if so disposed, to vote down any law by a majority vote—the votes to be sent to the Secretary of State in a sealed package. If it appeared that the majority of the freemen had disapproved of the law, then and thereafter it ceased to be in force.

WILLIAM BRENTON was born in Middlesex county, England, and was entered as a freeman at Boston, in 1634. The same year he was "desired to oversee the howse of correction, to be builte at Boston," Mr. William Coddington being the town treasurer to pay the bills. In 1635, he was ordered to "finishe att the public charge, all that which is necessary to be done att the prison at Boston." In 1636, his "account was accepted, and the £4, od money deu by him was remited to him." In 1637, he was

of a committee to see that just pay should be made to the soldiers of the Block Island expedition. Mr. Brenton's name is to be found among the Deputies to the General Court at New Town (now Cambridge) for the years 1635-36-37. Mr. John Endicott boldly altered the Cross in the ensign at Salem, and Mr. Brenton was at the head of a large committee to consider and report on the matter. The committee reported "that they apprehend hee had offended therein many wayes, in rashness, uncharitableness, indiscretion and exceeding the limits of his calling," wherefore he was censured of the Court and disabled from holding office for a year.

Mr. Brenton seems to have been an unusually serviceable man at Boston until August, 1638, after which we find him in the Coddington company at Portsmouth, having voluntarily and without Colonial constraint cast in his lot with the heretics of Rhode Island. It is interesting to note the value of his Boston experience in prison building, for at the first general meeting of the town, after his admission as a freeman, "it is ordered that a Howse for a prison, containing twelve foot in length and tenn foote in breadth and ten foote studd, shall be forthwith built of sufficient strength and the charges to be payed out of the treasury," this oversight being committed to Mr. William Brenton.

At the first election of elders "to assist the Judge in the execution of Justice and Judgment," Mr. Easton, Mr. Coggeshall and Mr. Brenton were elected. All with Judge Coddington were elevated to the Governorship.

In 1639, Mr. Brenton joined Mr. Coddington, Mr. Clarke and others "to propagate a Plantation in the midst of the Island or elsewhere," which was the foundation of Newport.

At the first election, after the union of the two towns, Portsmouth and Newport, Mr. Coddington was elected Governor, and Mr. Brenton Deputy Governor, an office which he held by annual election from 1640 to 1647. That he was a soul liberty man appears in the order, "that the Law of the last Court made concerning Libertie of Conscience in point of Doctrine, is perpetuated," in that he was chairman of the committee reporting it. In 1655, Mr. Brenton was a freeman at Newport; in 1658, he had a grant of a large tract of land on the Merrimac river.

Mr. Brenton was elected President of the two Colonies for the years 1660 and 1661. One of the early acts of his administration was a proclamation that "his Royall Majesty, King Charles the Second, King of England, Scotland, France and Ireland," be recognized as the Supreme Civil Magistrate of the Colony, and the 21st day of October was set apart for the public recognition of the event, "if the weather doe permitt; if not, the next faire day, and that all children and servants shall have their liberties for that day."

Another was the issuance of a commission to John Clarke, then resident agent of the Colony at Westminster, London, to represent the interests and desires of the Colony before the new king, "unto the preservation of all and singular the privileges, liberties, boundaries, and emunities of this Colony as according to the true intent and meaninge of all containyd in our said Charter."

The President was made one of a committee to treat with Major Atherton and others who had made purchases and had established claims in the Narragansett country.

An Act was passed imposing a fine of £5 upon any general officer who refused to serve. An address was sent to King Charles, acknowledging the humble submission of the Colony to "his most excellent Majestie, our dread Sovereign Lord, the King of England," etc., and a committee was appointed of three from each town to draw up "instructions and orders" for the agent or agent in London, in his efforts to obtain a new charter. This committee consisted of William Field, Roger Williams and Zachariah Rhodes of Providence, William Baulston, John Roome and John Porter of Portsmouth, President Brenton, Benedict Arnold, and Joseph Torrey of Newport, and John Greene, John Weekes, and Samuel Gorton, Senr., of Warwick. These men with John Clarke of Newport, then in England as Agent of the Colony, are the authors of the Colony side of the Royal Charter of Charles the Second, of 1663, which was the foundation of the Rhode Island government till the adoption of a State Constitution in 1843, at which time this ancient document was the oldest constitutional charter in the world.

During this administration Mr. John Clarke was making for himself the wonderful diplomatic reputation of securing from the new government in England the most liberal and enlightened charter the world had then known.

Mr. Brenton was chosen as Deputy Governor under the Charter in 1663-64-65-66, and in May, 1666, was elected Governor, holding the office until May, 1669.

On May 4, 1669, Mr. Brenton was again elected Governor, but declined the office on account of important business interests in another Colony. In 1670, he seems to have removed to Taunton, where he had large land interests. He had also bought the Indian territory of Mattapoiset, between Coles and Lees river in Swansea. At his death in 1673, at Newport, Governor Brenton was one of the largest land-holders in New England and his inventory was £10,000 13s. 4d., a rich man for those early days.

Governor Brenton was a man of great executive ability, holding the confidence of the citizens of the Bay Colony and of Rhode Island to a

remarkable degree, so much so that he was an office holder and a legislator for almost the whole of the forty years of Colonial life. He was accounted an honest and upright citizen, a true disciple of soul liberty and a leader in all the movements to advance and maintain the integrity and stability of the Rhode Island towns, which he found separate units, and at his surrender of public office, left them united in the strong bonds of civil and religious freedom, as one Commonwealth.

WALTER CLARKE, son of Governor Jeremiah Clarke (1648 to 1649) was born at Newport, 1640, and was the first native-born Governor of the Colony. Like his father, he became a devoted member of the Quaker body, which came to be the strongest and wealthiest sect in the Colony, "from which," says Governor Arnold, "has flowed nearly all the good and perfect gifts in the early history of Rhode Island." It already claimed among the Governors, Coddington, Easton, Clarke (Jeremiah), and afterwards the four Governors Wanton—William, John, Gideon, and Joseph.

By his four marriages, he connected himself with the families of John Greenman, Richard Scott, Roger Williams, and Matthew Prior, all of whom contributed to his social standing and political influence. His active political life began in 1667, when he was elected as a Deputy to the General Assembly from Newport. He was returned to the same office in 1670-72-73. In the year 1673, Mr. Clarke was elected an Assistant, an office created by the Charter of 1663, whereby the legislative department of the Colony was vested in a Governor, Deputy Governor, ten Assistants, with a House of Deputies, six from Newport, four each from Providence and Warwick, and two from every other town. The whole body was called the General Assembly, meeting twice a year in May and October.

The Assistants were invested with legislative power and acted conjointly with the Deputies. The Assistants also acted with the Governor and Deputy Governor as the Judiciary of the Colony. They also acted as coroners in certain localities. The Assistants continued to act with the Deputies, as one body, for thirty years after the Royal Charter was adopted, when the Deputies became a coördinate branch called the Lower House, and the Assistants the Upper House or House of Magistrates, later the Senate. Eighty years elapsed before a Supreme Court was created to take the place of the Charter judiciary. Mr. Clarke was re-elected as Assistant in 1674 and 1675, and again in 1699, and on May 2, 1676, was elevated to the governorship, holding the office by annual elections during the years 1676-77-86-96-97-98, and holding the office of Deputy or Lieutenant-Governor during the years 1679 to 1686, and from 1700 to 1714. He was thus in public life from 1667 to 1714, a period

of forty-seven years—four years as a Deputy, four as an Assistant, six as Governor and twenty-three as Deputy Governor, dying in office, May 23, 1714, at the age of seventy-four.

When Mr. Clarke was a Deputy in 1667, the burning question was the protection of the Colony from the threatened invasion of the Massachusetts Bay Colony. The Governor and Council was authorized to raise and equip men, horses, vessels, to erect beacons, to alarm the towns, to establish and maintain forts and other defences, to appoint and commission officers and commanders for special service and to dispose of the military and artillery as they should see fit. The threatened invasion was based on the claim that the Bay Colony made to certain territory within the Rhode Island Patent.

In 1668 the contest as to the disputed jurisdiction of Connecticut over the Narragansett country and the Pawcatuck river, including the present town of Westerly, waxed warm and decisive, and as a result the town of Westerly was created in 1669, the fifth town in the Colony. When Mr. Clarke came to the Governorship in 1676, as successor to Governor Coddington, the terrible ravages of Philip's War had wasted the towns of the Colony for nearly a year. Rhode Island disapproved of the war, for the reason that she was not a member of the New England Confederacy and not bound to take part in hostilities provoked by the other Colonies. The government too was in the hands of the Quakers, whose policy was peace, not war.

The Narragansett Swamp Fight on December 19, 1675, in which a force of eleven hundred and thirty-five men from Massachusetts Bay, Plymouth and Connecticut Colonies nearly annihilated the Narragansetts, was an invasion of Rhode Island territory, which the Colony had occasion to resent. Notwithstanding these things, the law of self-preservation asserted itself and Governor Clarke used every effort to protect the people. Most of the Colonists on the mainland fled to the islands as places of refuge, especially to the Island of Rhode Island. Providence and Warwick had been burned and only one house, the old stone fort at Warwick, was left between Providence and the Connecticut line at Pawcatuck.

A flotilla of sloops or gunboats was ordered for the defence of the main island. These boats, each armed and manned with five or six men, were employed in constantly sailing around the island to prevent invasion from the main. It is believed that this is the first instance in the history of the Colonies where heavily armed boats as a naval armament were used for defence—the germ of a future Rhode Island squadron, one century later, and of an ultimate American navy.

In March, 1676, an act was passed by the General Assembly "that no Indian in this Colony be a slave." A classified census was taken of all the



people on the Island, including negroes and Indians. Two heavy cannon were mounted at Portsmouth. The Assembly invited sixteen "of the most judicious inhabitants" of the Colony to attend the sessions to advise with that body "in these troublesome times." Among them were John Clarke, Gregory Dexter, Randall Holden and John Greene. For the well ordering and managing of the military affairs of the Colony the office of major-general was created and Capt. John Cranston was commissioned. The election of Walter Clarke as Governor was held on May 2, 1676, in the kitchen of Henry Palmer's house at Newport. When appealed to from Providence for assistance, Governor Clarke replied:

What you can secure for your own people is best, and what you cannot secure is best to be transported hither (Newport) for security, for we have no hopes, but sorrows will increase and time will wear you out and if men lie upon you, their charges will be more than your profit twice told. I know your losses have been great and your exercises many, which do and may exasperate to passionate words, yet men should keep within the bounds of reason, lest what they threaten others with, fall upon themselves; and if reports are true, we have not deserved such reproach, and I can truly say I have done to the uttermost of my ability for your good, and do, and shall do.

These words of Governor Clarke suggest the straits of the people, the acrimonious complaints, awakened by their terrible trials and losses, and the devotion of the Quaker magistrate to his principles of peace and self-sacrifice. After Providence was burned, Governor Clarke agreed to "bear the charge of ten men on the Colony's account." Victors and vanquished at the close of the war were alike exhausted. Rhode Island, excluded from the League and always opposed to the war, had suffered most severely of all. The rural districts were everywhere laid waste. Her mainland had become a desert, her island fortresses for defense and cities of refuge.

In 1673, a law was passed exempting from military duty or fines, "persons declaring that it is against their consciences or judgments to beare arms in martiall or millitary manner." In May, 1676, this law was repealed and all of military age were to train or pay the penalty for failure. This legislation was aimed at the Quakers. In October of the same year the act of the May previous, as to military duty, was repealed and the exemption law of 1673 was reenacted, on the ground that the later act "infringed true liberty of conscience."

The October Assembly of 1676, sent letters of remonstrance to the Colony of Connecticut against their claims and usurpations in the Narragansett country, and public orders were issued forbidding all persons exercising jurisdiction therein without the consent of this Colony.



In May, 1677, the war party had gained power in the spring election of Deputies, and the choice of Governor fell on Benedict Arnold as the leader of the war forces, now in the majority, and for the next two years Mr. Clarke retired to private life, from which he was called in 1679 to be Deputy Governor, in which office he served twenty-two years. In May, 1686, Mr. Clarke was again elected Governor after a lapse of ten years, and again under circumstances of great stress and strain to the Colony.

The death of Charles II., the proclamation of his brother, James II., as king, and the adoption of a new royal policy, under the guidance of Edward Randolph, threatened the prerogatives of the Colonies, if not Colonial existence. Writs of *quo warranto* were issued against the Colonies of Massachusetts Bay, Rhode Island, Connecticut, East and West Jersey and Delaware, and Randolph came to America to establish a temporary government, until a Royal Governor could be sent out for all New England. Randolph arrived in Boston ten days after Governor Clarke's election, and the Governor wrote a letter, offering friendship and services. The second proclamation struck at the vitals of the Rhode Island grant in establishing a royal government in Narragansett, and prohibiting Connecticut and Rhode Island from exercising authority in that country. Sir Edmund Andros, formerly Governor of New York, was appointed Royal Governor over all the New England Colonies. Joseph Dudley and Council held court at Narragansett in June, 1686, and a new government was set up over Southern Rhode Island. Kingston, the chief town, was called Rochester, Westerly, Faversham, and Greenwich, Deptford. This included all the mainland of the Colony, south of the Warwick grant. The government of the King's Province was thus set up on what was supposed to be a permanent basis on chartered territory of Rhode Island.

The June adjournment, 1686, of the May session of the General Assembly was the last that was to meet in Rhode Island for nearly four years, and Governor Clarke was superseded by Edmund Andros, the Royal Governor of New England. In 1689, James II. fled to France. William and Mary ascended the English throne, and the Andros usurpation was overthrown.

During this period of eclipse of Colonial government in Rhode Island, affairs of state were managed locally with great shrewdness and restraint. Governor Clarke, at the outset, consulted the freemen of the Colony as well as the General Assembly as to the course to be pursued, and it was wisely decided not to resist the royal demands, but to protect in all legitimate ways the rights, privileges and liberties hitherto guaranteed by the Royal Charter.

The most significant and profound act of the General Assembly was the transference to the towns of the Colony, the prerogatives of local home-

rule and the powers which had been delegated to the Assembly. The towns were authorized to meet for local legislation, each year, five days, be it more or less, to elect officers, to make town rates and to do all acts as freemen by authority of the Assembly. Each town was a commonwealth, the acts of the majority of freemen was the supreme law, unless interfered with by the usurping power, which fortunately in the case of the Rhode Island towns did not take place.

The first declaration of the Andros régime as to Rhode Island was to reduce its political unity to a single county with Governor Clarke as one of seven councillors for this Colony. When Andros visited Newport to take possession of the Charter he was foiled by the Quaker forethought of Clarke, who sent the document to his brother, with orders to have it concealed in some place unknown to himself. Governor Andros was invited to his house, when a search was made for the Charter, but it could not be found while Andros was there, although the seal was found and broken by Andros. The ruse of Governor Clarke was as successful as the more brilliant performance of the Connecticut Assembly in hiding its charter in the majestic oak.

In 1696, after another ten years of interregnum, Governor Clarke was again elected to the chief magistracy, continuing to hold it till May, 1698. The Charter, unimpaired, with all the royal prerogatives granted by Charles II., had been confirmed by the new monarch, never again to be set aside except by the will of the Democracy which it established, and that at the end of a long period of one hundred and eighty years.

The Andros government may be credited with one important act that restored to Rhode Island the territory granted to the Narragansett Company. To John Greene, our agent to England, and to Governor Clarke, large credit is also due. In May, 1696, the House of Deputies declared itself a distinct and separate body for legislation, with liberty to choose its speaker and clerk. The Assistants formed the upper House. The two Houses meeting together, formed the Grand Committee, or Senate. At the July session of the General Assembly duties were laid upon all wines, brandy, and strong liquors imported into the Colony, and Capt. Samuel Cranston was chosen collector of duties.

Governor Clarke's political activity continued till his death in 1714, at the age of seventy-four. His long and honorable career shows that he was one of the noblest citizens and truest patriots of his time.

JOHN CRANSTON was the founder of a family that has figured very largely and honorably in the history of Rhode Island. He was born in the year 1626, and became a physician by profession. In 1644, he was drummer of a military company in Portsmouth. In 1654, he was Attor-

ney General for Providence and Warwick and of the United Colony in 1654-55-56-59-60-61-62.

In 1655 Capt. John Cranston was on a committee "to ripen against morninge some way to suppressinge of sellenge liquors." This was the first hint of a prohibitory liquor law in Rhode Island, and the forerunner of a license act and a duty on imported liquors. The same year, he was on a committee to prevent the sale of ammunition to the Indians. For the years 1655-56-57-58-60-61-62 he was commissioner from Newport and Deputy for the years 1664-65-66-67-68.

The General Assembly in 1664 passed the following order: "Whereas, The Court have taken notice of the great blessing of God on the good endeavours of Capt. John Cranston of Newport, both in physick and chirurgery, to the great comfort of such as have had occasion to improve his skill and practise," it was therefore unanimously voted that Capt. Cranston be licensed to administer physick and practise chirurgery throughout the Colony and was recorded as "Doctor of Physick and Chirurgery."

To add to legal, legislative and medical knowledge, experience and honors, Mr. Cranston was elected an Assistant for the years 1668-69-70-1671-72, and Deputy Governor for the years 1672-73-76-77-78. Military honors and responsibilities were added April 11, 1676, when, in urgent legislation for defense in Philip's War, Capt. Cranston was made major-general and chief captain of all the forces of the Colony, there appearing "absolute necessity for the defense and safety of the Colony, and of the King's interests." He continued in the military office until his election as Governor to succeed Governor William Coddington, who died in office. It is a remarkable fact that the Colony had three Governors between May 1 and November 8, 1678. Governor Benedict Arnold was elected to that office on May 1 and died in June. His successor, Governor William Coddington, was elected August 28 and served till his death, Nov. 1, and to fill the vacancy Deputy Governor Cranston was promoted to the chief magistracy on November 8 of the same year.

Governor Cranston came into his high office in the possession of his best powers, from a varied and long continued public service. Success had marked his labors in all departments of life, private, professional, and public. He seems to have been born for and naturally gifted and fitted for his times. The legislation of this period was of singular interest. An Act of May, 1678, affirmed the rights of the towns in all matters relating to taxation enacted by the General Assembly. This act was repealed in 1679. An important amendment was made to the bankrupt law to make it conform to the statutes of Queen Elizabeth and King James. The major-general was given supreme power in the control of the military of the Colony.

"Fast and hard riding of horses" in Newport was prohibited. An order was passed that no person should enter upon or possess lands in the Narragansett or Niantic countries without authority of the Assembly. In 1679, a law was passed for the proper observance of the Sabbath. An act was passed to prevent non-payment of public rates, fines, and forfeitures when imposed on towns by the General Assembly.

The same year, the Crown confirmed the jurisdiction of Rhode Island over the Narragansett country, within which the towns of Westerly, Kings Town and East Greenwich had been founded, and a letter of grateful acknowledgement was sent to King Charles II. at the same time, imploring that the King should grant to Rhode Island the territory of Mount Hope Neck, as conquered lands, for the reason that these lands were within the three-mile limit claimed by and afterwards granted the Colony, and also on account of the terrible losses of the Colony by Philip's War. The last important act of Governor Cranston was a letter to the King, under date of January 6, 1679-80, relative to the disputed jurisdiction of the Narragansett country by Connecticut Colony. Governor Cranston died during the March session, being the third Governor who had died in office within two years.

In 1658, Dr. Cranston married Mary Clarke, daughter of Jeremy Clarke, of Newport. Ten children were born to them—Samuel, Caleb, James, Jeremiah, Mary, Benjamin, John, Elizabeth, Peleg and William. His son, Samuel, was Governor from May, 1698, to April, 1727, and his son, John, was a Deputy from Newport nine years and speaker of the House of Deputies for 1711 and 1716.

Governor Cranston was descended from the noble Scottish Lord Cranston, and carried in his veins, streams of the ancient Earls of Crawford, Bothwell and Traquair, having for his father, James Cranston, clerk, chaplain to Charles the First, for his grandfather John Cranston, Esq., of Bool, son of James, son of Lord William.

Governor Arnold writes of him:

Governor John Cranston had borne a distinguished part in the history of the Colony, and filled the highest military and civil positions in its gift. He was the first who ever held the place of major-general, having been selected to command all the militia of the Colony during Philip's War, and he was the father of a future governor, who became more distinguished for his protracted public service.

His gravestone in the cemetery at Newport bears this inscription:

Here lieth the body of John Cranston, Esq., Govr of the Colony of Rhode Island, etc. He departed this life, March 12th, 1680, in the 55th year of his age.

PELEG SANFORD was a Governor "to the manner born," being the son of John Sanford, Governor of Portsmouth and Newport (1653-54). Peleg was born May 10, 1639, one year after the Portsmouth settlement. He married (first) Mary Brenton, daughter of Governor William Brenton, and (second) Mary Coddington, daughter of Governor William Coddington, so that it may be said that he was well born and well married.

His first public office was an appointment as captain of a troop of horse, for the Island of Rhode Island, July 24, 1667, at the age of twenty-eight. He was elected by the freemen as an Assistant from Newport for the years 1667-68-69-70-77-78-79, and a Deputy in 1670 and 1677.

It is recorded that on August 11, 1676, Capt. Sanford and Capt. Goulding informed Capt. Benjamin Church, then at Pocasset, of Philip's hiding place at Mount Hope, which led to Philip's death the next day, August 12. In May, 1677, Capt. Sanford and Richard Bailey were chosen agents of the Colony to intercede with the King as to a settlement of the controversy with Connecticut over the Narragansett country, a service which was accepted but not fulfilled.

Mr. Sanford was elected general treasurer of the Colony for the years 1678-79-80 and 1681, and a commissioner of Bankrupts, 1678, also a surveyor of the Narragansett lands. On the death of Governor Cranston in March, 1680, Maj. Sanford was elected to fill the vacancy and continued to hold the office of Governor by annual election till May, 1683, when, after a reelection by the General Assembly, he refused to engage, and William Coddington was chosen to the position. Among the more important acts of Governor Sanford's administration are the following:

A committee was chosen to codify the laws and acts of the Colony.

It was enacted "that in all actional cases brought to the General Court of Tryalls," an appeal could be made to the next General Assembly from the judgment of the Court.

It was enacted that the town councils of the towns should regulate and license the sales of liquors in their respective towns.

It was enacted that in case any town should neglect to hold elections of town officers that the Governor, Deputy, and six assistants might appoint officers to manage the affairs of said town.

In 1681 an ordinance was passed relative to "rideing a gallup" on the town street in Providence, between Pardon Tillinghast's land and John Whipple's, with a penalty of five shillings for each offence.

In 1682 an act was passed creating the public office to be filled by a naval officer, where the officers of all vessels should report arrivals, loading, etc., and give bond as required by act of Parliament for regulating the plantation trade.

In October, 1682, the General Assembly declared that it was in the power of any town council to reject any person from residence and citizenship, unless sufficient bond be tendered as the major part of the Council might fix.

Providence and Warwick were authorized to set up a troop of horse to the number of thirty-six, besides officers.

At the last session of the Assembly of 1682, Governor Sanford related "how it hath pleased God to preserve his life from the privateers," then in prison in Newport, and that he was saved by a negro of the Company, who told the Governor the purpose of his associates to kill him. As the negro was in danger of his life for revealing the plot the Governor interceded, and the Assembly set the negro at liberty, and punished the pirates.

On the suspension of the Colonial governments of New England and the occasion of Sir Edmund Andros to power, Lieut.-Col. Peleg Sanford was appointed on Andros' council and was the second member of the Andros judiciary for Rhode Island, Francis Brinley being chairman and chief justice. On presenting his commission to Governor Walter Clarke, the Governor retained it, claiming that it was an infringement of the Royal Charter for which he contended as a patriotic man. Col. Sanford wrote Lord Bellomont: "My Lord, let a man's intentions be never so resolved faithfully to discharge his Majesty's commands, it's not to be effected so long as the government is as now constituted."

One of the cases which came under the consideration of this bench as a Court of Admiralty, was that of the notorious pirate Capt. William Kidd, whose piratical ventures were made in and around the waters of the Colony. Kidd was finally captured on Long Island, taken to Boston, and thence to England, where he was executed. Whatever criticism attaches to the action of Governor Sanford in accepting office under the Andros government, there is no doubt of his nobility of character and of his devotion to the interests of the Colony as he understood them. Governor Sanford died about the year 1700.

John Sanford, eldest son of Governor John Sanford, 1633-1687, brother of Governor Peleg Sanford, devoted his whole adult life to the service of the Colony. He was general treasurer from 1655 to 1665, commissioner from 1656 to 1664, secretary of state for sixteen years, 1656-1676, attorney-general four years, deputy sixteen years and assistant four years.

WILLIAM CODDINGTON, JR.—The value of the Coddington name and the power of the Quaker influence in Rhode Island is seen in the elevation to the governorship of William Coddington's son, William, born of his third wife, Anne Brinley, Jan. 18, 1651.

Mr. Coddington was admitted a freeman of the Colony in May, 1675, while his father was Governor, and was elected a Deputy from Newport, May, 1679. In 1680, he was elected an Assistant, continuing by election in the same office during the years 1681 and 1682. In 1683, Mr. Coddington



ton was again elected an Assistant and on the refusal of Governor Peleg Sanford to accept the governorship to which he was elected, Mr. Coddington was chosen in his stead. He held the chief magistracy for two years until May, 1685, and declined to serve longer. Henry Bull, of Newport, became his successor.

The General Assembly decided to hold its next October session in Providence, and probably the October sessions thereafter in Providence or Warwick. An official order signed by Governor Coddington, Walter Clarke and others to Hon. Edward Cranfield, Governor of New Hampshire and others of New Hampshire and Massachusetts, forbade their holding court or exercising authority in the Narragansett country, not showing any commission from the King. At that time a Court or Assembly was in session at the house of Richard Smith in Kings Town, presided over by Governor Cranfield.

Capt. Arthur Fenner and Maj. Peleg Sanford were appointed agents of the Colony to be sent to England to prevent if possible any further incursions upon the Narragansett country, which was included in the Rhode Island Patent and confirmed by Royal Charter. The town of Warwick also sent a letter of protest to the King. A personal letter was also written to the King by Governor Coddington in behalf of the Colony's interests and rights in Narragansett.

In 1684 an Act was passed by the General Assembly confirming titles to lands in the towns of Newport and Portsmouth, with the present owners and proprietors.

An important act was passed for restraining and punishing privateers and pirates, "that all treasons, felonies, piracies, robberies, murders, or confederacies, committed or that hereafter shall be committed upon the sea or in any haven, creek, or bay, shall be inquired, tried, heard, determined and judged within this Collony in such like form, as if such offence had been committed in or upon the land." This act was ordered to be forthwith published in the town of Newport, by the Recorder, with "drum and attendance."

The first legislation as to Jews appears at this time in the following act of the General Assembly:

Voted in answer to the petition of Simon Medus, David Brown, and Associates, being Jews, presented to this Assembly, bearing date June the 24th, 1684, we declare, that they may expect as good protection here, as any stranger, being not of our nation residing amongst us in this his Majesty's Collony, ought to have, being obedient to his Majesty's laws.

At the annual election held at Newport, May 6, 1685, Mr. Coddington was elected Governor, "by the free and absolute vote of the freemen of



this Colony," as stated to him in a letter from "your affectionate friends and servants," by John Sanford, Recorder.

Governor Coddington appeared before the General Assembly, "positively denying to give the engagement," when Henry Bull, the bold and fearless champion of the rights of the Colony was elected Governor. A great and irreparable loss to the Rhode Island Colony occurred during the Coddington administration in the death, on Feb. 6, 1683, of King Charles II., who gave them the Royal Charter of 1663, and who had so far protected the Colony in its charter rights. Governor Arnold pays tribute to Charles:

Rhode Island is bound to speak well of his civil administration, so far as it concerns herself, for to him she owed the confirmation of her glorious privilege in the second charter, and was uniformly protected by him against the assumptions of her arrogant neighbors. The broad principles of universal toleration which a distracted nation hailed in the famous declaration of Breda, and which Clarke incorporated in its very terms in the Charter of Rhode Island were secured to her, although they were denied to his other subjects.

HENRY BULL was a veteran in years and in political experience when called to the governorship of Rhode Island in the year 1685. He was now seventy-five years old, having been born in 1610, in South Wales, coming to America in the ship "James," from London in 1635, and joining the church in Roxbury with his wife, Elizabeth, in 1636. The Roxbury church record says of him: "Being weak and affectionate, was taken and transported with the opinion of familism," etc.

He was a companion of Coddington, Clarke and others in the legislation of the Bay Colony, by reason of which they were compelled to leave Boston in the spring of 1638. He was one of the twenty-three to sign the Portsmouth Compact of March 7, of that year. At Portsmouth, he was a corporal of the Train Band and a sergeant, whose duties were to keep the prison which was near his house.

In 1639, Mr. Bull was one of the nine who signed the Newport Compact, and, with them, transferred his residence and allegiance to the new town on the south end of the Island. In the government of Newport, Mr. Bull was chosen an elder, under Mr. Coddington as judge. He was also called to be a sergeant at Newport as at Portsmouth.

In 1655, Mr. Bull was elected a commissioner to the General Court of the four towns, Newport, Portsmouth, Providence and Warwick, in which he continued two years. He served as a deputy in the General Assembly under the Royal Charter for the years 1666-72-73-74-79-80-1781-90. In 1655, Mr. Bull was on a committee with Capt. John Cranston "to ripen against morninge, some way for suppressing of selling liquers."

The political conditions, at home and abroad, in the year 1685, when Mr. Bull was elevated to the governorship called for a man of clear vision, of a resolute purpose, and of great executive ability. That the Colony should have called a man of his years, and a Quaker at that, is a compliment to his abilities and patriotism.

The dissolute Charles II. had paid the penalty of an unholy life by an early death, at the age of fifty-five, on Feb. 6, 1685, three months before the election of Mr. Bull as Governor of Rhode Island Colony. James II., brother of Charles, succeeded to the throne, a man more to be feared than his pleasure-loving predecessor, for his firm purpose was to restore the Roman Catholic church to the primacy in England, and to establish an absolute monarchy over Great Britain and her dependencies. This policy meant death to the civil and religious liberties of Rhode Island and the other Colonies. The gathering storm had been made evident to Governor Coddington, whose nature led him to shrink from the guidance of the ship of state, and the aged but fearless pilot of a half century of Colonial life was called to the command. On May 5, 1685, the day on which the General Assembly of the Colony met to elect general officers, Edward Randolph took the first step against the liberties of the Colonies by urging the Board of Trade of London to grant writs of *quo warranto* against Rhode Island and Connecticut for the purpose of revoking their charters, on account of alleged irregularities. An order was issued for him to prepare articles of misdemeanor as the basis of the writs.

While these hostile acts were performed in England, Rhode Island elected Walter Clarke, of Newport, to the governorship, and an address was prepared in the usual adulatory style of congratulation to the new King on his accession to the throne, and asking a continuance of the royal regard for the Colony.

At the October session of the General Assembly the easterly bounds of Westerly were established at the Pettaquamscutt westerly line, etc. A committee was appointed to consider a petition for settling the Narragansett and Niantic countries, among about one hundred and fifty families. The committee, of which Joseph Jencks, afterward governor, was chairman, reported favorably for the petition and the Assembly ordered the settling of the countries with all convenient speed, "and if they see cause, to divide them into more than one town."

By the same Assembly, the first divorce law of the Colony was enacted, it being ordered, "that if either husband or wife have or shall so desert their husband or wife that they cannot be heard of in five years time after their departure of such husband or wife, the said husband or wife shall be free from their said husband or wife," the absent party

being regarded as dead. As the articles of Colonial misdemeanor against Rhode Island were drawn during Governor Bull's administration, it is well to insert them under his term:

1. They raise great sums of money upon the inhabitants of that Colony, and others by fines, taxes and arbitrary imprisonment, contrary to law, and deny appeals to his Majesty.
2. They make and execute laws contrary to the laws of England.
3. They deny his Majesty's subjects the benefits of the laws of England, and will not suffer them to be pleaded in their Courts.
4. They keep no authentick Records of their laws, neither will they suffer the inhabitants to have copies of them.
5. They raise and cancel their laws as they please without the consent of the General Assembly.
6. Their Governor, Deputy Governor, Assistants, Deputies, and other officers for the administration of Justice as well as Juries and witnesses are under no legal oaths.
7. They violate the acts of trade, etc.

These charges were the basis of the writ of *quo warranto* which was served on the Colony during the administration of Walter Clarke, Governor.

For a full account of the Andros usurpation and the Narragansett controversy reference is made to the Rhode Island Colonial Records, Vol. III., to History of the State of Rhode Island, S. G. Arnold, Vol. I., and to the History of the United States, Bancroft, Vol. II.

When the news of the accession of William and Mary to the throne reached Boston, April 4, 1689, Andros and Randolph were arrested and confined in the fort. The aged Simon Bradstreet, "glorious with the dignity of four score years and seven," the last Governor of the Bay Colony, led in the movement for a restoration of Colonial charter government.

In Rhode Island, Walter Clarke, the last Governor of the Colony, led in calling the freemen to an election at Newport to resume the functions of the Royal Charter. "The wary Clarke," as Arnold calls him, hesitated to accept the governorship and Rhode Island was reorganized under the intrepid Deputy-Governor John Coggeshall, with several of the old assistants. The first General Assembly convened since 1686, was held at Newport, February 26, 1690, John Easton, moderator. Governor Clarke declined to serve, as did several other leading officers, and Henry Bull, now eighty years of age, was again called to leadership, and Colonial legislation was renewed under the Charter of 1663. In March, the Assembly adopted a seal for the Colony—an anchor with the word "Hope" super-scribed. The King's proclamation of a war with France was published by beat of drum and the towns were ordered to establish a military watch

and ward. Bancroft gives the following review of the re-installation of charter government in this Colony:

The Royalists had pretended that "the Quaker grandees" of Rhode Island had imbibed nothing of Quakerism but its indifference to forms, and did not even desire a restoration of the Charter. On May-day, their usual election day, the inhabitants and freemen poured into Newport, and the whole "democracie" published their gratitude "to the good Providence of God, which had wonderfully supported their predecessors and themselves through more than ordinary difficulties and hardships." "We take it to be our duty," thus they continue, "to lay hold of our former gracious privileges in our Charter contained." And by unanimous vote, the officers, whom Andros had displaced, were confirmed. But Walter Clarke wavered. For nine months there was no acknowledged chief magistrate. The Assembly accepting Clarke's disclaimer, elected Almy. Again excuse was made. Did no one dare to assume responsibility? All eyes were turned to one of the old Antinomian exiles. The more than octogenarian, Henry Bull, and the fearless Quaker, true to the light within, employed the last glimmerings of life to restore the democratic Charter of Rhode Island. Once more its free government is organized; its seal is renewed; the symbol, an anchor; the motto, Hope.

On May 6, 1690, at the general election at Newport, Governor Bull, in recognition of his long and useful life in the Colony, and of his fearless action in times of personal and Colonial peril, was reelected to the chief magistracy—an honor which his great age and satisfied ambitions led him to decline.

Governor Bull died at Newport, Jan. 22, 1694, full of years and honors. The Friends' Records make mention of his death: "Henry Bull, aged about eighty-four years. He departed this life at his own house in Newport (he being the last man of the first settlers of this Rhode Island) ye 22nd 11 mo. 1693-4."

JOHN EASTON was a lad of fourteen when his father and family were exiled from the Bay Colony and cast in their fortunes with the Newport founders in 1638. His father's remarkable career was a guide and an inspiration to his son, who in one way and another obtained a good education, and in his twenty-ninth year was elected as attorney-general for Newport and Portsmouth. The next year, 1654, at the age of thirty, he was chosen a commissioner for Newport, holding the office by annual election for the years 1655 to 1660 and 1663. This was the period covering the union of the four towns under presidents, prior to the Royal Charter of 1663.

As further evidence of the ability and legal learning of Mr. Easton, and also his increasing popularity, he was chosen attorney-general for

the whole Colony for the years 1656-57-60 to 1670 and 1672 to 1675. During four of these years, 1665-66-71-72, Mr. Easton was elected and served as a Deputy from Newport and served the town and Colony as an Assistant and a member of the upper House of the Assembly for the years 1666-67-68-69-70-71-72-73-74-76-81-82-83-84-85-86-89-90, a period of eighteen years.

As the attorney-general was a part of the executive of the Colony, it is probable that Mr. Easton not only represented the law-making power in the Courts, but by his familiarity with the laws of the Commonwealth and the mother realm and most conscious of war needs, he drafted many of the laws of the Colony. His seventeen years as the leader of the judiciary and his twenty-seven as a legislator, not only made him an experienced law maker as well as expounder, but they witness a public recognition of his most valuable services in behalf of "Democracie," in the formative period of our Colonial life. Although a Quaker, and inspired with the gospel of peace, there is no evidence of any want of virility and force in the administration "of Justice and Judgment."

In 1674, he was elected Deputy Governor under William Coddington as Governor, continuing in office two years. These were the years of Philip's War, with its terrible devastations over New England, and its awful results to the Rhode Island Colony. Even Roger Williams, with all his diplomatic influence with the Indians could not ward off the pestilence that walked in darkness nor the desolation that wasted at noonday. All that the Quaker government could or did do, was to offer the island as a city of refuge, and to open hospitable doors to all seeking protection from the torch, the tomahawk and scalping knife of the savages.

Mr. Easton, in 1675, wrote an account of the Indian war entitled: "Ye True Relation of what I know & of Reports & my understanding concerning the Beginning and Progress of the War now between the English and the Indians."

August 24, 1676, Mr. Easton was a member of a court martial held at Newport for the trial of certain Indians charged with being engaged in King Philip's War. In July of this year, the Assembly passed an order that Indians, men or women, able for service, might be sold for the period of nine years, except Indians guilty of notorious offences, half of the sale to be paid to the person bringing in the Indian and one-half to the Treasury of the Colony.

On May 6, 1690, the General Assembly met at Newport for election of general officers, and on the refusal of Governor Bull to accept the governorship, Mr. John Easton was chosen to that office, to which he was elected annually, and served till May, 1695. The war with France and England was now on, and the Colony replied to letters asking for troops

to aid the other Colonies, that its own unprotected condition demanded all the men enlisted in the Colony for the home defence at Newport and other unprotected places on Narragansett Bay. The Assembly agreed to raise three hundred pounds for the prosecution of the war. The Colony then had nine towns: Newport, Providence, Portsmouth, Warwick, Westerly, Jamestown, New Shoreham, Kings Town and East Greenwich, which were taxed for their proportion of the levy.

The Assembly passed an order to furnish the town house at Newport, begun under the Andros régime. The Assembly voted that as the Governor, Deputy-Governor and Assistants serve without pay, that "they shall for the future pay no Colony rates." The inability or unwillingness of some of the towns to meet the levy for the war was manifest in mandatory legislation for its levy and collection. Legislation was also applied to the matter of appraisal of property in the several towns, suggesting that rules be drawn for the proper appraising of lands and cattle in lieu of the "guess" method then prevalent. The Assembly ordered that all ships belonging to other Colonies, in excess of ten tons shall pay for all cargoes unloaded at Newport, one shilling per ton for the support of a magazine for the islands.

At the meeting of the Assembly in October, 1690, the Royal Charter could not be read on account of smallpox in the family of the secretary.

In 1692, Sir William Phipps made declaration to the Colony of Rhode Island that he had been appointed commander-in-chief of all the militia and other forces of the New England Colonies by sea and land. Failing to show his commission to a committee, the Assembly voted to retain the control of their own forces and that the military of the Colony "be Kept in a suitable posture of defence against their enemies." The Commission was also instructed to treat concerning the settlement of a post office for intelligence.

As it appeared to the Rhode Island government, Phipps' peremptory action as to troops grew out of the Narragansett country troubles. Capt. Christopher Almy was sent to England with an Address as to the Phipps order, and a full statement of the attitude of the Colony in regard to the War. In this address, the dangers of the Colony as a frontier position were set forth and the brilliant action of Capt. Thomas Paine against the French fleet at Block Island was set forth. The two addresses to the throne were referred to the Attorney-General, who rendered an opinion to the London Board of Trade that the Charter of 1663 gave the control of troops to the Colony, and concluded with the sound advice that "Their Majesties gratify the petitioners and confirm their charter and explain their eastern boundaries as desired."



The naval feat of Capt. Paine demands more than a passing notice. In 1683, Capt. Thomas Paine entered Newport harbor, in command of an English privateer and reported to Governor Coddington his errand to serve the Colony and nation against the French fleet in American waters. Orders from Boston to seize the captain and his vessel were disregarded and protection was assured to Paine and his vessel by Rhode Island Colony. In 1690, a fleet of seven French privateers appeared off the Massachusetts coast, captured Nantucket and Marthas Vineyard, and sailing westward, took Block Island, indulging in horrible excesses. Bonfires were lighted at Pawcatuck and along the Narragansett coast to arouse the people to a knowledge of their great danger. Capt. Paine's opportunity had come. A sloop with 34 men went out from Newport to reconnoitre. A small detachment from the French fleet entered Newport harbor by night to surprise the town. Finding the town awake to their coming, they proceeded west to the harbor of New London, where they were beaten back, but burning one, the only house on Fisher's Island. A small body of Stonington men surprised a party of French and killed an English renegade named Trimming, who had acted as their decoy at Block Island.

Two sloops, with 90 men, under command of Capt. Paine, left Newport harbor, July 20, to attack the French fleet. Capt. John Godfrey was second in command. The next day Paine fell in with five French sail off Block Island. Sending a few men on shore to prevent the French from landing, Capt. Paine ran his sloops into shallow water to prevent being surrounded. At five o'clock in the afternoon, the French fleet, under command of Capt. Pekar, a French officer, who had sailed in privateering with Capt. Paine some years before, with two hundred men began the fight, and sent out their fighting force in boats to board Paine's vessels. A bloody naval battle followed, ending only until the darkness of night separated the combatants. Paine's loss was only one man killed and six wounded, while the French loss was nearly one-half of their men in killed and wounded. The next day the French fleet put to sea, Paine gave chase and compelled the enemy to sink a prize vessel, loaded with wines and brandy. This first naval victory of Rhode Island was hailed with great rejoicing in all the English Colonies and gave to Newport and the Rhode Island a new rating as a factor in war as well as in peace.

Governor Easton was one of the best qualified and most efficient of Colonial governors. His knowledge of the history of the Colony was complete, his judicial ability was tempered by long experience and careful study, and his great activity and energy, mental and physical, partook of the quality of men at life's meridian. Weakness in policy or vacillation in opinion found no lodgment in Governor Easton's administration. Governor Arnold says of his official career: "It was the first grand period of



Rhode Island history. The formation period was ended. The era of domestic strife and outward conflict for existence had almost passed. The problem of self-government was solved and a new era of independent action begun." It fell to Governor Easton's lot to set a high standard of uprightness, justice and public virtue, as an example for his successors.

Governor Easton died at Newport, Dec. 12, 1705, at the age of 81, and was buried in the Coddington Burial Ground. He was the last of the Rhode Island Governors, who came out of the exile of the Bay Colony.

CALEB CARR—Caleb and Robert Carr, brothers, the founders of the Carr family in Rhode Island, came to America in ship "Elizabeth and Ann," from London, in 1635. Caleb was a lad of ten years on his arrival at Newport. He came into the service of the town and Colony in 1654, being elected a commissioner from Newport to the General Court in that and the following years 1658-59-60-61-62. Mr. Carr became a large land-holder on Conanicut Island, opposite Newport, where his descendants still live and occupy the Carr estates. He was general treasurer of the Colony for one year, 1661-62, and a Deputy from Newport 1664-65-1667-68-69-70-71-72-74-78-79-80.

In 1670, Mr. Carr and five others were appointed to make a rate for Conanicut, and the next year was allowed £4 for services with his boat. In 1676, he was one of the commissioners "to take care and order the several watches and wards on this Island and appoint the places." He bought the services of an Indian captive, paying twelve bushels of corn therefor.

Mr. Carr was chosen an Assistant and member of the upper House of the General Assembly from Newport in 1679-80-81-82-83-84-85-86-1690-91. For the year 1687-88 he was a Justice of General Quarter Sessions and Inferior Court of Common Pleas. In 1690 he was one of a committee in finishing the town house at Newport.

At the general election at Newport in May, 1695, Mr. Carr was chosen Governor. The matters of greatest concern at this time to the Colony were under consideration at Whitehall rather than at Newport, and the people were awaiting in great anxiety the decision of the weighty matters that had been referred to the Crown. During this period of suspense, the General Assembly appointed a committee to propose a method of raising the £300 voted for the War. In lieu of ready money the tax could be paid in wool at seven pence half-penny per pound; butter at fourpence per pound; Indian corn at two shillings per bushel; rye at two shillings threepence; pork, the barrel at £1 18 shillings.

It was proposed that each town should yearly choose two or three able and honest men to take the view of the lands and meadows of farm-

ers, and of merchants and tradesmen, to judge of their yearly profit. Other laws were made as to a just appraisal of property and a prompt collection of taxes. It was voted that the town house at Newport "shall not be improved for any other use than judicial and military matters, and not for any ecclesiastical use or uses of that nature."

The General Assembly chose Joseph Jencks and four others to run the eastern line of the Colony on July 16, "if the weather hinder not," and in case they do not meet with hostile opposition from Massachusetts. Another committee was appointed to run the northern line according to the bounds of the Patent.

Complaint having been made of the thinness of the attendance at the sessions of the Assembly, it was ordered that the Governor should have a salary of £10, the Deputy £6, each Assistant £4 a year, and each Deputy three shillings a day, with a forfeit of six shillings a day for default.

Governor Carr died in office, Dec., 1695, losing his life by drowning. He was a man of large estates and warehouse property, and of the Quaker faith.

SAMUEL CRANSTON—The remarkable administration of Samuel Cranston occupied the two closing years of the seventeenth and the first twenty-seven years of the eighteenth century—the long period of twenty-nine years, and thirty annual elections. His nearest competitors for length of gubernatorial honors were James Fenner, who occupied the chair thirteen years, Arthur Fenner, who held office for fifteen years, and William Coddington, twelve years.

Samuel Cranston, son of Governor John Cranston, was born in 1759, and attached himself to the merchant class of the Colony as a goldsmith. The public favor in which his father lived was an introduction of the son to the civic life to which he gave his best years. The population of the Rhode Island Colony at this time was divided into two classes, farmers and merchants, the latter including the men of commercial affairs, who had made Newport the center of trade for Southern New England.

The farmer class had large estates but were land poor, there being no markets for their produce, and few buyers except in the form of barter between man and man. There was little money in circulation and the homes of the farmers were possessed of only the barest necessities of life. Trade, markets, banks, exchange, credit—a currency medium, were either unknown or in the crudest conditions in the agricultural districts, which were the Colony, except Newport and Providence. These two towns had entered on the rudimental period of mercantile and commercial life. The wealth of the Colonists was centered in Newport. The Quaker

population, with its usual prudence, possessed property, business thrift, and social and political influence, and was called by its enemies, "The Quaker grandees." With their money in hand and in possession of a splendid harbor, these enterprising people of Newport built small vessels, at first, for the coasting trade within the Colony, then with their Connecticut and Massachusetts neighbors, and then with New York, the commercial center of the New World. Later, however, armed vessels were sent out to prey upon the commerce of England's enemies, and in the end, to become privateers, pirates, and slave traders, on the coast of Africa and the Barbadoes. Up to the time of the accession of Mr. Cranston to power, the Quakers had, in the main, held the reins of government and guided the policy of the Colony from the first. Their peace principles had lost to the Colony a strong protective policy and the sympathy of the sister Colonies. Rhode Island had a host of enemies on both sides the Atlantic and had it not been for the astute diplomacy of John Clarke, the friendship of Roger Williams with the Winthrops of Massachusetts and Connecticut, and the friendly relations with the Wampanoags and the Narragansetts, the Colony would have been crushed between the upper and nether millstones of Colonial jealousy and hostility. John Clarke, John Cranston and other diplomats, were not only good physicians of physical ills, but were more especially skilled in the dangers that threatened and the diseases that afflicted the body politic.

Mr. Cranston was the immediate successor of Walter Clarke and a long line of other Quaker Governors. His only experience in political office before the governorship was one year as an Assistant for Newport in the upper House of the General Assembly. He had, however, a successful business, considerable wealth for his time, and good blood, being descended from the noble Scottish Lord Cranston, carrying in his veins a strain of the ancient Earls of Crawford, Bothwell and Farquair, having for his grandfather James Cranston, clerk, chaplain to King Charles the First. Withal, he was a man of the people, of the genius "democracie," with enough knowledge of men and political sagacity to manage public affairs to satisfy the popular will, yet without that historical sense and statesmanship that would enable him to combat erroneous financial policies.

Samuel Cranston assumed the governorship where Walter Clarke left it, in March, 1698, and laid down his office with his life, April 26, 1727, being the fifth governor to die in office. The Quaker régime went out with Mr. Clarke and that of "the world" came in with Mr. Cranston. His whole life was romantic as well as eventful. He married Mary Hart, a granddaughter of Roger Williams, after which he went to sea, and being captured by pirates was not heard of for many years. Supposing him dead, his wife engaged to marry a Mr. Russell of Boston, and the

day was set for the wedding. Cranston, on gaining his liberty, arrived in Boston, and hastening home to Newport, learned at Howland's Ferry that his wife was to be married that evening. The wedding guests had begun to assemble when Mrs. Cranston was called from her toilet to the kitchen, by a servant, to meet a man in sailor's garb, who said he had come to tell her that her husband was in Boston on his way home to his family. On questioning him further, he told her that he had seen him at the Ferry that evening. Then stepping towards her, he lifted his cap and pointing to a scar on his head, said, "Do you recollect that scar?" by which she recognized her long lost husband. The proposed marriage ceremony was converted into a feast over the lost husband's return, Mr. Russell surrendering his expected bride to her lawful husband with a good grace.

The legislation of Governor Cranston's administration is spread on more than 60 pages of the Colonial Records. It will be necessary, however, to refer to such measures as represent new or important principles in government, as indicative of progress, or of new policies of state.

One of the first acts of the General Assembly was aimed at the terrible crime of piracy which had sprung out of the licensed privateering that the Colonies had fostered. The act of 1698 prohibited piracy, confiscated all property taken from pirates and punished the offenders. Correspondence of the most wordy sort passed between the Colony and the English government on the subject, and led to vigorous measures to bring piracy to an end and pirates to condign punishment. One of the most grave complaints of Lord Bellomont against Rhode Island Colony and some of the leading citizens was alleged complicity and authorization of piracy. That the crime existed is true, but the charge of complicity has failed of proof.

The Colony adopted the Boston system of weights and measures and required each town to appoint a sealer, under the seal of the anchor. The subject of the levy and collection of taxes was acted upon in the interest of equitable taxation. The Governor's salary was increased from £10 to £30.

An act was passed forbidding the entrance of traders to sell goods, except their invoices of species and values were entered, and that they should pay upon said goods a toll of five shillings on each £10 of goods sold.

An act was passed making the town clerk of each town the official register of births, marriages and deaths.

It was enacted that the Town Council of each town appoint a jury of twelve men to lay out sufficient highways suitable for posts to pass from one town to another. In 1699, Lord Bellomont traveled from Boston to

Newport by way of Rehoboth and Bristol and returned in eleven days, writing a journal of his trip and his interview with Governor Cranston.

In 1701 a singular act was passed putting into execution the laws of England in this Colony, where no "provision was made by the laws of the Colony," a covert assertion of sovereignty. The same year a new militia law and a law for preventing unlawful marriages were enacted.

In 1701, Lord Bellomont, the most persistent and malicious enemy of the Rhode Island Colony, died in New York. His vindictive spirit towards the Colony and its officials, born of a hatred of its spirit and prerogatives, would in the end have humiliated if not destroyed our Colonial integrity. Again an overruling power interposed to save Rhode Island from the man who, of all in England or America, was bent on its overthrow. Arnold says of Bellomont: "He could neither be moved by flattery nor softened by courtesy." "He rebuked the free spirit of a people who set at defiance the laws that he was appointed to execute."

In 1702, the Assembly ordered a fortification built at Newport to mount twelve pieces of ordnance for the better protection of his Majesty's interests and those of the Colony.

The same year Governor Joseph Dudley of Massachusetts, claiming to act under the authority of the King and Queen, as captain-general "of all the forces, forts and places of strength," within the Colonies of Rhode Island and the Narragansett Province, visited Newport and demanded a review of the Colonial militia, which Governor Cranston denied him, on the ground that the Royal Charter conferred the control of the Colonial militia in the body politic of the Colony of Rhode Island. By the same authority, Governor Dudley claimed admiralty jurisdiction over the Colony, which was as firmly denied, but was finally granted by order of the new Queen Anne, who had succeeded to the throne in 1702.

The ambitious designs of Governor Dudley to overthrow the Charter of Rhode Island were seconded by the English Board of Trade, which recommended his appointment as Governor of Rhode Island. Fortunately for the Colony, the great influence of William Penn with Queen Anne and her Privy Council saved the Colony from a suspension of its Charter and the imposition of a Massachusetts Governor over the Colony. Had the advice of the Board of Trade been adopted it is very probable, that with the domestic troubles and English Court prejudice against the Colony, Rhode Island would have been merged in Massachusetts, and her political existence submerged by Colonial jealousies and hostilities.

In 1703, the boundary line between Rhode Island and Connecticut was agreed upon on the same line as outlined in the Charter, and as it stands to-day. The Colony was divided into two counties, the islands forming the county of Rhode Island with Newport as shire town, and the

mainland forming the county of Providence Plantations with Providence as the shire town. A law was passed forbidding the sale of captured Indians.

In 1704, the Church of England sent Rev. James Honeyman as a missionary to Rhode Island. He became the rector of Trinity Church, Newport, founded in 1702, and also visited the mainland towns. There was abundant need of his services, if Lord Bellomont's reports of the conditions were true: "It will be a means I hope to reform the lives of the People in that Island, and make good Christians of 'em, who at present are all in darknesse." In 1706, the second Episcopal Society was formed at Kings Town and a church was built in 1707.

The sale of bread was regulated by law. A singular case of posthumous punishment is cited, where a slave, having murdered the wife of his master, had drowned himself. The body being recovered, the Assembly ordered that his head, legs and arms should be hung up in some public place near Newport, and his body burnt to ashes.

In 1708, a duty of £3 was laid upon every negro imported into the Colony. The African slave trade had been opened to all English merchants in 1702 by act of Parliament, "for the well supplying of the plantations and colonies with sufficient number of negroes at reasonable prices." Rhode Island reported that but one vessel had arrived direct from the Coast bringing forty-seven slaves, fourteen of whom were sold in the Colony at thirty to thirty-five pounds each, and the remainder were sent to Boston. Barbadoes was the source whence Rhode Island obtained most of her slaves. The annual supply was about twenty-five a year at an average cost of £35.

The first general census of the Colony was made in 1708. The number of inhabitants was 7,181, of whom 1,015 were freemen, 56 white and 426 black servants. The militia force was 1,362 males between the ages of sixteen and sixty, each of whom was required to provide himself with a musket, a sword or bayonet, a cartridge box, one pound of powder and four pounds of bullets.

In a report to the English Board of Trade, it was stated that the principal direct trade was to the West Indies. The annual exports to England by way of Boston was estimated at £20,000, and that shipping had increased six-fold in twenty years, owing "to the inclination the youths on Rhode Island have for the sea." Within eleven years, eighty-four vessels had been built in the Colony, and twenty-nine were owned here.

Two market days were appointed at Newport to accommodate the Sabbatarians as well as the Sunday worshippers.



To meet the extraordinary expenses incurred in the fitting of men and transports for the use of the Colony in the French and Indian War, an act was passed July, 1710, for the issue of bills of credit to the amount of £5,000 in denominations from two shilling bills to £5, to equal in value the current silver of New England, eight shillings to the ounce. Massachusetts had made the financial mistake of a paper money issue twenty years before. Connecticut, New York and New Jersey had recently followed her example, and Rhode Island, usually unwilling or slow to follow Colonial leadership, was led astray into the same delusion of attempting to create values by the printing press and the official seal of the Colony. Governor Arnold writes:

Thus commenced in Rhode Island a system of paper money issues fraught with disaster to the commercial interests of the Colony, whose baleful influence was to extend over nearly a century, distracting alike the political, financial, and even the social condition of the people, and which was to be the occasion of most bitter partisan strife long after the Revolutionary War had left us as an independent State.

In 1711, schools and highways, both in the hands of the towns, received much attention in Newport. The public school was placed in charge of the town council and a place was provided for Mr. Galloway to open a Latin school. Liberty was granted to make lime from the limestone rocks in Newport harbor.

The treaty of Utrecht, which restored peace to the world, was a starting point for a new era for the Colony of Rhode Island. The founders of the four towns of the Colony and the controversies engendered, had died with them, in a great measure. Individualism was losing something of its narrow and selfish policy in the larger field of commercial, industrial, educational and religious progress. Intense theological debates and dogmas were relegated to the background, and the discussions of business, politics, trade, finance, assumed their proper place in the life of the third generation of Englishmen on Rhode Island soil.

Governor Cranston, who had approved the first paper money issue was called to repeat the folly again and again, the issue in 1713 amounting to £8,000. The continuance of this policy led to the creation of two parties, the specie or "hard-money" party and the "paper-money" party. Providence led in a protest against the bills of credit and the subject divided the freemen of the towns and extended to family divisions. Massachusetts had three parties, a currency party, and two others differing on banking policies, but favoring banks. In Rhode Island the question of hard or soft money was the issue of the election in May, 1714, at which the specie party triumphed, but six of the old deputies out of



twenty-eight being returned to the General Assembly. Bills of credit to the amount of £1,100 were burned. In the spring of 1715, occurred an election, called "the great revolution." Deputy Governor Tew, the successor for one year of Walter Clarke, was deposed and Joseph Jenckes of Providence, elected in his place. Every Assistant but one was removed and five out of the twenty-eight deputies were returned. Governor Crans-ton was too able a man and too much respected by both parties to be overthrown.

This General Assembly created a loan of £40,000 to be loaned to the people at five per cent. on mortgage security of double the value. This loan was known as the "first bank." The interest accruing was to be devoted to works of public necessity and to meet the annual expenses of the Colony. Unfortunately, the payment of interest was secured by bonds, by reason of which a large portion was unpaid and was lost to the Colony.

An act was passed requiring every freeman to endorse his name in full on the back of his ballot, to prevent fraudulent voting. The punishment for illegal voting was a fine of £5 or twenty-one stripes at the whipping post.

An important act was passed in 1716 "for the timely preventing of the using of the civil power for the enforcing of a maintenance for their respective ministers." It was enacted, "that what maintenance or Salary may be thought needful or necessary by any of the churches, congregations or societies of people now inhabiting, or that hereafter may inhabit within any part of this government, for the support of their or either of their minister or ministers, may be raised by a free contribution, and in no other way."

In 1718, a new and complete militia law was enacted, in which the Governor was declared to be "Captain General, and Commander in Chief."

The English law of primogeniture was changed, so that the whole real estate of an intestate was divided, giving to the widow one-third, and the remainder to be divided equally among the children, except that the oldest son should have a double share.

The first edition of the Laws of Rhode Island was printed in Boston in 1719.

In 1721, "a second bank" or loan of £40,000 was made, on the same terms as the former loan.

In 1723 the first almshouse in Rhode Island was erected in Newport.

The first Episcopal church in Providence and the third in the Colony owed its origin to Gabriel Bernon, in 1724. It is now known as St. John's Church on North Main street. The same year the first Congregational

church of Providence, was built on the corner of College and Benefit streets.

In the same year the Assembly made the freehold qualification £ 100, or an annual income of two pounds derived from real estate to entitle any man to become a freeman. The oldest son of a freeman had the right to vote on his father's freehold. For one hundred and twenty years the law requiring a freehold property qualification was maintained, varying at times in the value of the estate.

In 1725, the mainland towns were empowered to build a house of correction for vagrants and "to keep mad persons in," the first reference to reformatory and philanthropic institutions in the Colony.

Common drunkards were to be posted by town councils, and dealers were forbidden to sell spirits to them.

Governor Samuel Cranston, who had held the office for over a quarter of a century, died April 26, 1727, aged 68 years. His gravestone bears a long family reference closing with these lines:

"Rest happy now, brave patriot, without end;  
Thy country's father and thy country's friend."

Governor Arnold says of him:

In the strength of his intellect, the courage and firmness of his administration, and the skill with which he conducted public affairs in every crisis, he resembles the early race of Rhode Islanders. Thirty times successively chosen to the highest office, he preserved his popularity amidst political convulsions that had swept away every other official in the Colony. He was the connecting link between two centuries of its history, and seemed, as it were, the bridge over which it passed in safety from the long struggle for existence with the royal governors of Massachusetts to the peaceful possession of its chartered rights under the House of Hanover. The piratical period, the strife about the acts of trade, the desperate efforts of Bellomont and his successors, a long and exhausting foreign war, and two bitter boundary disputes involving the largest portion of the Colony, one of which he lived to see favorably and finally settled, were some of the perplexing questions of his administration. The romance of history illustrates every period of his public career.

It was most unfortunate for the Colony that Governor Cranston had no right to exercise the veto on paper money legislation. As the merchant class on which the Colony depended was bitterly opposed to its issue, it is absolutely certain that Governor Cranston, a successful merchant of Newport was, but even his great popularity and influence did not avail to counteract this financial heresy, which so generally possessed the farmer class. The chief magistrate had the qualities of honesty, firmness and courage and intelligence withal, and the pity was that he could not in an

executive way have prevented or delayed the delusive legislation that reflected so strongly on the low order of business intelligence of the agricultural freemen of that day and entailed so heavy an incubus on the prosperity of the Colony for a century. We are almost forced to adopt the terrific indictment of Lord Bellomont, that the generality of the people are shamefully ignorant, and all manner of licentiousness and profaneness does greatly abound. But Bellomont hated Rhode Island Colony more than he did its bad legislation.

JOSEPH JENCKES—By the death of Governor Cranston, in 1727, the duties of the chief executive devolved upon the Deputy Governor, Hon. Joseph Jenckes, of Providence, who had held that office, by annual election, since May, 1722. Mr. Jenckes, son of Joseph Jenckes, was born in 1656. His father, Joseph, first appears in Rhode Island, in 1669, when he was granted land on the Pawtuxet river for a sawmill, he being allowed to cut pine, chestnut or oak timber at 4s. 6d. per hundred feet to Warwick purchasers.

Governor Jenckes' grandfather, Joseph, was a resident at Lynn, Massachusetts, in 1646, when the "JENCKES' MONOPOLY" was granted as appears by the following record: "The Court, considering ye necessity of raising such manufacture of engines of mills to go by water, for speedy dispatch of much worke with few hands, & being sufficiently informed of ye ability of the petitioner to perform such works grant his petition (yt no othr person shall set up or use any such invention or trade for fourteen yeares, without ye license of him ye said Joseph Jenckes)," the Court retaining the control of exports of "engins" and the "moderation of prices." Yet further the Court allowed the said Jenckes to make "mills for ye making of Sithes and other edged tools, with a new invented Sawe-Mille, that they may be afforded cheaper than formerly." Several years later, Jenckes obtained the patent for a scythe similar to the modern scythe. The historian of Lynn says: "Joseph Jenckes deserves to be held in perpetual remembrance in American history as being the first founder of brass and iron on the Western Continent." There is a tradition that Joseph, the Second, was drawn to Providence by the forests that furnished charcoal for the bog iron ore in many parts of the town and the water power mills such as he had learned to make and use at Lynn, under his father as instructor in manufactures. In 1671, Mr. Jenckes bought 60 acres of land at Pawtucket Falls and it is presumed that he was the first to use the water power at Pawtucket for industrial ends. Austin says that Jenckes built a sawmill and forge at the Falls, both of which were burned in Philip's War, in 1676. At the close of the war, Jenckes rebuilt his forge and sawmill at Pawtucket and from 1676 to the present

time the Jenckes family has been an important factor in the manufacturing enterprises of Rhode Island, with family headquarters at Pawtucket, and the descendants of the second Joseph have held an influential position in all the affairs that have contributed to the social, political and religious interests of the communities where they have lived.

Joseph (2) was Deputy in the General Assembly in 1679-80 and 1691, and an Assistant from 1681-87-89-90-91-95-96-98. In 1690 he was one of a committee of seven to write a letter of loyalty and congratulation to William and Mary on their accession to the British throne. In 1695, Mr. Jenckes was chosen by the General Assembly to run the eastern line of the Colony.

Joseph, the third, was the oldest of nine children, four sons and five daughters. A sister, Esther, married Nathaniel Brown, the ship-builder of Swansea and Providence. A brother, Nathaniel, held the office of captain of militia in 1709, later the office of major and a deputy in the General Assembly, 1709-10-13. A brother, Ebenezer, was an ordained minister of the First Baptist Church in Providence, holding that office until his death, in 1726. Another brother, William, was a Deputy from Providence, in 1727-28-29-38, and a justice of the Court of Common Pleas for Providence county, 1734-35. The grandchildren of Joseph (2), born before 1721, numbered sixty-eight, nine of whom were born to Governor Joseph Jenckes and his two wives, Martha Brown and Alice Dexter Smith. His daughter, Catharine, married William Turpin, Jr., son of the first schoolmaster in Providence (1684), and the town treasurer of Providence, from 1737 to 1745. The genealogy of the Jenckes family shows one of the most fertile and virile stocks of Rhode Island.

Joseph Jenckes, the third, entered on his political career in 1691, as Deputy from Providence in the General Assembly, serving in that office twelve years and occupying the place of speaker of the lower House four years. He was a major in the Militia of the Mainland towns five years, 1707-1712, and an Assistant five years, 1708-1713. His ability and popularity won for him the Lieutenant-Governorship, under Governor Cranston, thirteen years, coming into the governorship at the death of the Governor, in 1727, and holding office until May, 1733.

As all the governors of the Colony since 1663 had been residents of Newport, the town had come to be considered the executive metropolis, and the final act of the General Assembly, May, 1727, was to appropriate £100 to defray the expenses of removing Governor Jenckes and family from Providence (Pawtucket) to Newport. A tradition tells us that when Mr. Jenckes was chosen Governor, and his residence in Newport ordered by the Assembly, desiring to maintain the dignity of the high office and to wear the usual dress of the other Colonial Governors, he sent an order to

England for a *cloak* of proper size and style. By a clerical error in the order of its interpretation, the word *cloak* was read *clock* and a clock was sent, much to the disappointment of the Governor, and at the same time much to the gratification of his family, to whom a good English clock was a valuable addition to household furnishings and the timely order of a Governor's family life.

On August 24, the Prince of Wales was proclaimed King, under the title of King George the Second, and a letter of congratulation and a pledge of loyalty of the Colony was despatched. In return for the Colonial good will, Governor Jenckes asked His Majesty to provide sixty cannon for the fort at Newport for the safety and preservation of the chief town in the Colony and the frontier coast of New England.

Among the acts of the General Assembly during the Jenckes administration were an act making town clerks the registers of marriages, births and burials; land of the sachem Ninigret was set apart for erecting a house of worship of such form as the sachem might choose; new commissions were ordered in the name of King George the Second; the north line of Pettaquamscutt Purchase was ordered to be run out; an act for encouraging the production and manufacture of hemp; a commission was chosen to run out the boundary line between Rhode Island and Connecticut to be aided by John Mumford and William Greene as surveyors; a ferry was established between Jamestown and Newport; bills of credit to the amount of £40,000 were ordered to be issued and the first issue of £40,000 were to be called in and sunk; the salary of the Governor was fixed at £200 (1728); an act for the preservation of deer; a loan of £3,000 in bills of credit was granted to William Borden to aid in the manufacture of 150 bolts of duck yearly for ten years—1,500 bolts in all—the money to be refunded at the end of the contract; a committee was chosen to revise the laws of the Colony and print the same at the expense of the Colony; an act for preventing peddlers from selling goods in this Colony; acts regulating the issuance and payment of bills of credit; a premium was ordained for each person who raised hemp in the Colony; Samuel Clarke of Jamestown, was allowed two pence per pound for hemp, raised and water-rotted by him in this Colony; the Colony agreed to build one-half of a new bridge at Pawtucket, provided the Colony of Massachusetts would build one-half; William Whiting of Newport, was chosen judge of admiralty, pro tem; cost of running the boundary line between this Colony and Connecticut £116 2s. 2d.; an act relative to freeing mulatto and negro slaves provided that no slave should be freed until the owner had given a bond for £100, to protect the town in case of sickness or poverty of the person set free; no slave could be accounted free until such surety had been made; acts for punishing criminal offences, for

establishing weights and measures, for the relief of poor prisoners, for enabling the town council of each town to grant licenses for the retail sale of intoxicating liquors, were passed at the February session of the Assembly, 1728-29.

At the June session of the General Assembly at Newport, an important act passed disposing of the money paid as duties on the import of negro slaves, £3 per head—one-half for street improvement in Newport, and the other half for bridges and roads on the main land.

The Colony was divided into three counties: Newport, Portsmouth, Jamestown and New Shoreham constituted Newport county; Providence, Warwick and East Greenwich constituted Providence county, and South Kingstown, North Kingstown and Westerly constituted Kings county.

An act was passed for preventing foreigners entering the Colony by sea, except from the British Isles. Any shipmaster bringing any immigrant from any other country must give his bond for £50 as security against the person becoming a public charge.

An act was passed declaring that lawyers in practice could not act as Deputies from the towns in the General Assembly. (Repealed at the next session). The boundary line between Rhode Island and Massachusetts frequently occupied the attention of the Assembly until its final settlement in 1746-47. In 1730-31, a commission was created to act in conjunction with a similar body of the other Colony. William Wanton, Benjamin Ellery, Henry Bull, Samuel Clarke, Jonathan Sprague, William Jenckes and Daniel Abbott were authorized to meet Massachusetts commissioners and settle the eastern line.

An act for easing tender consciences as to performing military duty and an act to prevent ill treatment of Indian servants were passed. A committee was appointed to consider the division of the great territory of Providence into three or four towns. Samuel Clarke, Francis Willett and William Robinson were chosen, June, 1730, and at the February session of the Assembly, 1731, at Newport, the committee reported an act limiting the bounds of Providence to the settlements about Moshassuck, and dividing the outlands into three towns, to be called Smithfield, Scituate and Glocester. The bounds of Providence were the Pawtucket river on the east, the Pawtuxet on the south, the Seven Mile line on the west to join a north line half a mile north of Pawtucket Falls. Smithfield was the territory north of Providence, Scituate lay west of Providence and north of Warwick, and Glocester occupying the northwest corner of the Colony, with Scituate on the south, and Smithfield on the west. Provision was made for the organization of the new towns that they might enjoy the like benefits and privileges of the other Colonial towns.



The most important act of the General Assembly follows. On June 14, 1731, the General Assembly passed a bill for issuing public bills of credit to the amount of £60,000. The Assembly continued in session until adjournment on June 24, and during the ten days since the bill became a law no dissent to the act was made. At the session at Newport, August 3, 1731, the secretary of state reported that on June 25, the day following the rising of the Assembly, Governor Jenckes entered these words on the records: "His Honor, the Governor, dissents from the said vote." The Assembly voted that these words of dissent should be deemed null and void for the reasons that the law had been published and taken effect, that the dissent or veto took place after the adjournment of the Assembly, too late for reconsideration, that it was not clear to what act the dissent was directed, and that the post entry of the dissent deprived the Assembly of considering the consequence thereof.

Great dissatisfaction existed in the merchant body of the Colony over the issuance and placing of bills of credit on land securities. The King had issued an order forbidding the American Colonies from further emission of paper money and this act was in direct disobedience to the home government. The amount of bills outstanding in May exceeded £120,000 and the new issue of £60,000 in June, added a new burden to the Colonial credit. A memorial, signed by leading merchants of Newport and Providence, protesting against the bill was presented to the Assembly before its passage and received little consideration from the land-holders' party. Later, the same citizens, led by the collector of customs at Newport, Nathaniel Kay, sent a memorial of their grievance to the English Board of Trade at London. Governor Jenckes addressed a letter to the King, explaining his own course and asking instructions from the Royal Court as to certain secretarial matters and the opinion of his Majesty as to the validity of the Governor's veto.

The Governor's letter, the merchants' memorial and the Colony Charter were referred to the Attorney-General and Solicitor-General to consider and report. The Crown officers decided that "in the (Rhode Island) charter no negative voice is given to the Governor, nor any power reserved to the Crown of approving or disapproving the laws of this Colony. We are of opinion that though by the Charter, the presence of the Governor, or in his absence, of the Deputy-Governor is necessary to the legal holding of a General Assembly; yet, when he is there, he is a part of the Assembly, and included by the majority; and consequently, the acts if passed by the majority of such Assembly, are valid in law notwithstanding the Governor's entering his dissent at the time of the passage."



But the most remarkable conclusion of the highest Crown law officers is a concession of the rights of the Colonists of Rhode Island under the Royal Charter of 1663. Note the language:

*Whether His Majesty hath any power to repeal or make void the above mentioned Act of Assembly, we humbly conceive, that no provision being made for that purpose, the Crown hath no discretionary powers of repealing laws made in this Province; but the validity thereof depends upon their not being contrary, but as near as may be, agreeable to the laws of England, regard being had to the nature and constitution of the place and the people. Where this condition is observed, the law is binding; and where it is not, the law is void as not warranted by the Charter.*

When we consider the prior attitude of the English Crown on Colonial rights, this opinion outranks and exceeds all Colonial claims hitherto made by any of the American Colonies.

Queen Anne, in 1704, had issued a proclamation relative to foreign coinage, which was made nugatory by the Colonial paper money act. Still further, George the First, in 1720, had issued an order in council against the passage of laws, whereby bills of credit should be emitted by any of the Colonial governments in America, and the order had been served on Governor Samuel Cranston, in 1724. A fair interpretation of the opinion rendered to Governor Jenckes and the Rhode Island Colony, was that notwithstanding Crown proclamations and Parliamentary orders, the will of the freemen as expressed in regular legislation by the General Assembly, was authority superior to the Home Government and superior to its jurisdiction and interference. Rhode Island has claimed Colonial independence as dating from May 4, 1776, in the reign of George the Third. It was fully conceded by royal authority, with no later denial, royal or parliamentary, in the autumn of 1731—forty-five years earlier.

Governor Jenckes retired from the governorship in May, 1732, and died at Pawtucket, June 15, 1740. In stature he was the tallest man of his time, standing seven feet and two inches, without his shoes. In mental stature he was a man of large proportions, seeking in all his public acts to protect and advance the interests of the whole of the Colony. His action on the paper money question cost him his office, but, true to his best judgment, he stood firm in maintaining honesty in finance. His tombstone bore this faithful memorial of his long and useful life:

In Memory of Hon. Joseph Jenckes, Esq., late Governor of the Colony of Rhode Island. \* \* \* He was much honored and beloved in Life and lamented in Death. He was a bright example of virtue in every stage of life. He was a zealous Christian, a true and prudent Governor, a kind husband and a tender father, a good neighbor and a faithful friend, grave, sober, pleasant in behavior, beautiful in person, with a soul truly great, heroic and sweet tempered.

The descendants of Governor Jenckes are numbered by many thousands and honor and adorn all walks of life.

WILLIAM WANTON—Edward Wanton, the father of William, appears at Scituate, Plymouth Colony, about 1660, as a ship-builder and a Quaker preacher. It is said that he became a convert to that faith after witnessing the persecution inflicted on them in Massachusetts. The father probably lived and died at Scituate.

William Wanton was born Sept. 15, 1670, and married in 1691, Ruth Bryant, of the William Cullen Bryant stock. That his name did not belie the spirit of his youth appears by an incident in his courtship. It seems that the parents of neither of the young people favored their marriage, whereupon it is said he thus addressed the young lady in the presence of her parents: "Ruth, let us break away from this unreasonable bondage. I will give up my religion and thou shalt give up thine, and we will both join the Church of England and go to the Devil together."

In 1694, when William was twenty-four, and his brother John twenty-two, a pirate ship having committed several robberies in which the family had suffered losses, these two young men, departing from the usages of the Quakers, headed a party of volunteers, captured the pirates and took them to Newport, where they were executed. Again, in 1697, a French armed ship appeared in Massachusetts Bay and took several prizes. The two brothers each fitted out a vessel from Boston with brave volunteers and captured her. Their father, Edward, finding he could not persuade his sons to give up the rash enterprise, said to them: "It would be a grief to my spirit to hear that ye had fallen in a military enterprise; but if ye will go, remember it would be a greater grief to hear that ye were cowards."

When William and John were in England in 1702, Queen Anne received them most graciously and presented each with two pieces of plate, a silver punch bowl and a salver, and granted an addition to the family coat of arms.

Joseph Wanton, his elder brother, removed from Scituate, Massachusetts, to Tiverton in 1688, and established a shipyard at a place called Bridgeton. About 1700, William settled at Portsmouth and began ship building at the north end of the island above the stone bridge, or Howland's Ferry.

In 1702, on reception of the news Queen Anne had declared war against France and Spain, active war measures were taken in all the towns of the Colony, and Capt. William Wanton was placed in command of the brigantine "Greyhound," of one hundred tons, mounting twelve guns and manned with one hundred men and boys, with a privateer's commis-

sion to cruise for five months within the thirtieth degree of latitude and on the Banks of Newfoundland. He gave bonds in the sum of one thousand pounds for the faithful discharge of his duty, and to return to port within two months. Within the period named, Capt. Wanton captured and brought into port three French ships, loaded with dried fish. One was a privateer of 260 tons, carrying twenty guns and forty-eight men; another was a vessel of 300 tons and sixteen guns; and the third was of 160 tons, mounting eight guns. The overbearing conduct of Dudley in the matter won for the Colony a restoration of the Royal favor, which previous acts had weakened. It was at this crisis that William Penn, the friend of Rhode Island, was entrusted with the management of our affairs on the other side of the Atlantic. These and other brilliant successes on the seas gave to Rhode Island a good reputation for naval efficiency and won for the brothers Wanton, John and William, a name for brave daring that extended throughout the Colonies and attracted the attention of the officers of the Crown.

Mr. Wanton also took an active part in civil and military as well as naval affairs. He was elected a Deputy for Newport in 1705-06, 1708 to 1712, and 1713-25, and was speaker of the House of Deputies for the whole period except 1713, when he was an Assistant, an office to which he was elected 1706-07-13, 1725 to 1731 and 1733. He was a major for the Island 1705-07-08-09, and colonel of the militia regiment 1719-20.

In May, 1732, Col. Wanton was elected Governor to succeed Governor Jenckes, and his brother, Maj. John Wanton, was elected Deputy-Governor—it being the only time when brothers held the two highest offices in the government at the same time.

Commissioners were appointed to meet others of Massachusetts to determine the boundary line between the two Colonies.

By His Majesty's instructions the Assembly repealed the act of 1711, for laying a duty on negro slaves imported into this Colony.

In 1741, an act was passed for suppressing lotteries. An act was passed for electing judges and clerks of courts annually, instead of during the term of good behavior.

An act was passed choosing the deputies annually instead of semi-annually. In 1733, an act was passed for emitting £104,000 in bills of public credit, thus adding to the burden of debt the people were struggling under.

Governor Wanton died in office, in December, 1733, aged 63. Thus died in civil office, one of the most gallant and brilliant naval officers of all the Colonies, and one of the most popular and beloved civilians of our Colony, holding the office of Governor from May, 1732, to December, 1733.

JOHN WANTON—William and John Wanton of Newport, were really "genuine sea lords," and none the less lords of the land and landlords of large estates. Their bold, adventurous spirits had not only won notable naval victories, but had also received the admiring approval of their Newport townsmen and the freemen of the Colony. John had the remarkable qualities of his brother William, cloaked in the Quaker garb, and dialect. Both had a passion for leadership, had courage equal to any endeavor, and a masterful intelligence and enterprise that brought and kept them at the front, while the terror that their names had inspired in the privateersmen of France gave them an easy introduction to court circles on both sides of the Atlantic. On the death of William in the Governor's office in 1733, John, then Deputy-Governor, was promoted to the head of the Colony affairs. He was two years the junior of his brother and followed in his footsteps from the father's Quaker home in Scituate, Massachusetts, to the merchant class at Newport, whither he came about 1700. Unlike his brother William, he held to his father's religious faith, and it is recorded of him, "that for many years he was a valuable public Friend."

In 1707, he took prizes on the seas and in 1709, was, with his brother William, a member of the Governor's Council to advise and to manage affairs for the expedition against Canada.

The freemen of Newport chose him as a Deputy for the years 1706-1707-08-09-10-13, and the House of Deputies elected him as speaker, in 1707-10-13. While William was a member of the Assistants (or Senate), he was chosen Deputy-Governor for the years 1721-22-29-30-31-32-33, holding office during the periods of political agitation over piracy, paper money and Colonial boundaries. On the death of Governor William, Dec., 1733, John, then Deputy-Governor, succeeded to the higher office and continued in office by annual election until July 5, 1740, dying in office, as had six of his predecessors.

The principal acts of his administration were the construction of a pier and harbor at Block Island; an act for the regulation of mills; legislation as to the settlement of the Attleboro Gore boundary dispute; authority to Ninigret, sachem of the Narragansetts, to deed twenty acres of land at Westerly to the Church of England; an act empowering the towns to make ordinances for the preservation of oysters in their jurisdictions; the town of Westerly was aided in its efforts for a harbor in changing the course of the Pawcatuck river; George Taylor was given "full and free liberty to keep school in one of the chambers of the county house in Providence during the pleasure of the General Assembly, provided he keeps the glass of said house in constant good repair, and erect a handsome sundial in front of said house, both for ornament and use;" an act giving the judges of the Superior Court power to veto the proceed-

ings of the Court of Admiralty within the Commonwealth; a committee was appointed to investigate the complaint of one Jacob Royal, of Boston, "that he, having a quantity of bills of credit in his coat pocket, which he left off, part thereof being this Colony bills, which the rats and mice got at, and eat and tore great part of it," and prayed for relief; in answer "to a report spread abroad in the Colony that Hon. John Wanton, Esq., our present Governor has drawn out of the treasury £70 and appropriated the same to his own use, or to treat his friends to vote for him, or to pay tavern scores," it was voted, upon inquiry that the report was groundless and false and that the same go out in the acts of the Assembly; the petition of Boston parties "to set up the business of keeping stage coaches for the transporting of passengers and goods to and from this Colony and the Massachusetts government, which would tend to the advantage of the inhabitants of both governments "was granted to continue to said parties, the rights exclusively for seven years; an act to prevent bribery and corruption in elections; an act to protect inland fisheries; an act for issuing £30,000 in bills of public credit, in exchange for torn bills; an act enabling town councils of the towns to receive or reject persons as inhabitants; an act for dividing the town of Westerly into two towns, to be known as Westerly and Charlestown; an act for the prevention of the spread of contagious distempers; an act for emitting £100,000 in bills of public credit; an act for building a new Colony house at Newport, eighty feet in length, forty in breadth, and thirty feet stud; commissioners were appointed to settling the eastern boundary line and the Gore disputes; the Governor was authorized to grant commissions in behalf of the Colony to private men-of-war against Spain, as he shall think necessary; a reward of £200 was offered against counterfeiters of bills of credit; an act for assessing and rating strangers and foreigners trading in this Colony; an act for maintaining insolvent debtors in jail; an act for raising and equipping soldiers, appointing officers to be transported to the West Indies to act in the war, declared against Spain.

Governor Wanton's services to the Colony terminated with his death in July, 1740. The popularity of the two brothers, their bold patriotic spirit, their business energy, and their devotion to public affairs infused all departments of the Colony with a new purpose and a new life. Although a Quaker by faith, Governor Wanton conducted the naval and military affairs of the Colony with an intelligent purpose and a consummate promptness and skill that would have done honor to Nathaniel Greene and Esek Hopkins. He believed that permanent peace was most securely won by the most vigorous use of the sword, and during his administration neither the Crown nor the sister Colonies complained of dilatory action or of unsuccessful enterprises, while their enemies gave a wide

berth to Rhode Island privateers, and were ever on the alert for the flag and guns of the Quaker Governor. The two brothers are certainly entitled to be ranked high among the war governors of all the Colonies, and aided most signally, as had the Colony before, in the foundation of an American navy. Self protection was the first law of an unprotected people on a frontier seacoast, and the Colony, in the midst of the usual struggles of a people in building a new society, built ships and forts, manned and gunned the same, and best of all, put at the head of all, brave, patriotic and unconquerable leaders, who brought no grief to their kin and no sorrow nor disappointment to the people.

The town of Newport made rapid strides along the road to wealth and influence, while Providence and the other towns enjoyed their share of the new mercantile and commercial life of the Colony. As the principal port of entry on the Southern New England coast, Newport early and easily became the centre of the legitimate trade of the Colony, while privateering, the slave trade and the distillation of spirits, brought to Newport the vessels for their conveyance and much of the profits of all classes of enterprises, in which all classes of citizens engaged. It is of interest to note that one of the first protests of an American Colony against the principle of taxation without representation in Parliament, to the British government, was made by Col. Partridge, the Quaker agent of Rhode Island at London. Complaint had been made that the distilling of rum, in which Newport was largely engaged, interfered with the trade of the English sugar islands and the "Molasses Act" was passed, imposing a heavy tax upon West Indian products imported from foreign islands. The voice of Partridge in opposing this measure was the first utterance in "the war-cry of the American Revolution which was ere long to rally the Colonies in the struggle for independence."

Governor John Wanton is described as a man of medium stature, thin features and fair complexion; remarkable for his gentle attentions to children, many of whom would gather around him to catch his smile in the street, or collect at his door as he sat in his portico. The portraits of the two brothers may be seen in the State House in Providence.

RICHARD WARD, descended from John Ward, of Gloucester, England, an officer in one of Cromwell's regiments, coming to America for safety on the accession of Charles II., and making his home at Newport.

Thomas, a son of John, born in Newport, 1641, belonged to the merchant class, was made a freeman in 1671, and a constable in 1672. In 1677, he was elected general treasurer of the Colony, a Deputy from Newport 1678-79-83-84-85-86, and an Assistant in 1679-80-81.



Richard Ward, son of Thomas and grandson of John, was born in 1689, and made a freeman in 1710, belonged to the commercial class of Newport, and was elected Attorney-General 1702-13. In 1714, he was chosen a Deputy and clerk of the General Assembly and held the office of General Recorder (Secretary of State) for the years 1714 to 1733. In 1740, he was elected Deputy-Governor, and, on the death of Governor John Wanton, succeeded to the governorship, holding the office from July 15, 1740, to May, 1743. The burning question of the time was the issuance of paper money, and was revived by an act of the General Assembly, September, 1740, emitting £20,000 in the new tender, and of £10,000 in the old tender for the supply of the General Treasury. A strong protest, signed by Benjamin Ellery and Peter Bours, of the upper House, and William Ellery, William Anthony, Ezbon Sanford, George Goulding and George Lawton of the House of Deputies was made against the new paper issue. Few Colonial papers of Rhode Island ever presented the pernicious policy or the ruinous results of this method of finance in a more compact argument, but all to no avail. The last reason given by the minority of the Deputies is worthy of preservation in this record. "Because the ruin of this flourishing Colony will probably in a great measure be owing to this fatal act, we would have the whole Colony and posterity know we have not deserved their imprecations on this occasion, but have endeavored to preserve and deliver to posterity the privileges and the property which our ancestors earned with so much hazard, toil, and expense." Such patriotic words should perpetuate the names of those who supported them.

Acting on the advice of the Board of Trade, and as a result of the protests of the leading merchants of Newport and Providence, Parliament had expressed its disapproval of the issue of more paper currency, in April, 1740. The Board of Trade, in answer to a demand of the Council, ordered every Colony to send a statement of the amount of tenor, and sterling value of the bills of credit issued by each, with a plan for their redemption in the most easy and effectual manner. Following this was the Parliamentary order suspending the further issue of paper money.

Governor Ward was a strong paper money advocate, and in a long letter to the English Board of Trade in reply to an inquiry, he gave the chief reasons for the several issues from 1710. In order that the reasons for this policy may be understood by the readers of this biography, a synopsis of the Governor's letter is given.

Governor Ward gave a history of the paper currency issues from 1710 to 1740, and the causes of expenditure, which included the expedition against the French and Indians in 1710 and 1711; a public jail and



repairs to the fort at Newport, "the metropolis of the Colony" in 1715; further repairs to the fort in 1721; a bounty of 9d. per pound in 1731, on all good water-rotted, well manufactured hemp, to be paid farmers for their encouragement, the soil being found very suitable for its production; and a bounty of 5s. per barrel on whale oil, 1d. on whale bone per pound, and 5s. per quintal on good merchantable codfish, taken in any vessels belonging to this Colony; a scheme for a harbor at Block Island for the encouragement of the fishing interest in 1733; and in the same year (just finished) a very handsome regular fort of stone and mortar much larger than the former one, with a large battery on the west side, and a purchase of cannons and other military stores being made for it. He says that in 1738 there was issued £100,000 for building a large brick State House for Colony use, and to erect a light house; in 1740 a fine sloop was bought of one hundred and fifteen tons, mounted with twelve carriages and twelve swivel guns, for defence against Spain if we should be attacked. He declares that we have now (1741) above one hundred and twenty sail of vessels belonging to the inhabitants of this Colony, all constantly employed in trade, some on the coast of Africa, others in neighboring colonies, many in the West Indies and a few in Europe. Besides two hundred soldiers raised for his Majesty's immediate service, the merchants of the town of Newport have equipped five privateers with near four hundred men who are now cruising against the Spaniards. Our fort is supplied with thirty-six cannon well mounted and furnished with a suitable quantity of military stores, by which, and our privateer, able to fight a hundred men on her deck, we are become the barrier and the best security of the New England trade. Within six or seven years several Newport merchants have contracted a correspondence in London and procured goods to be sent them, and thereby so well supplied our shopkeepers that our dependence on Boston hath been in some measure taken off, and in return our merchants have remitted their correspondent ships of our own building, logwood fetched from Honduras, and bills of exchange purchased of planters in the West Indies. Bills for six years past had been equal to silver at 27s. per ounce. In regard to the easiest method of sinking the bills of credit now outstanding, after our utmost efforts to do our money justice and save the inhabitants from inevitable ruin, we have not been able to find out a better way than to sink the several banks in ten annual payments. We have learned from experience that this is a safe course and therefore pursue it. He closed by saying that considering the good foundation on which our bills have been emitted and substantial security taken (according to the several acts) for paying same, no possible damage can accrue, notwithstanding revilings of that Province (Massachusetts) for the loss of her trade. The whole amount of

bills outstanding at this time (1741) is £340,000, or reduced to sterling money £88,074 16s. 10¾d. This is the Governor's apology to the Crown and officers for the existence and continuance of a policy, which was subversive of all sound financial prosperity and which caused and entailed losses and sorrows beyond recital and beyond repair.

In the midst of this monetary gloom a gleam of light shone above the horizon as to the settlement of the long disputed boundary between Massachusetts and Rhode Island. A Royal Commission was appointed of eminent gentlemen of New York, New Jersey, and of Nova Scotia, fifteen in number, to meet at Providence, Rhode Island, on the first Tuesday of April, 1741, to hear all parties in interest, obtain all evidence, and to agree upon a boundary line between the two Colonies.

In 1741, a Court of Equity was established to consist of five judges chosen annually, to try appeals from the Supreme Court.

The town of Warwick was divided, the western part to be known by the name of Coventry, and the town of North Kingstown was also divided, the western part to be known as Exeter. The next year the town of Middletown was set off from the town of Newport.

The boundary commission met and after a full hearing of all parties and of able counsel for both Colonies, the line was established which gave to Rhode Island the territory included in the present towns of Barrington, Warren, Bristol, Tiverton and Little Compton, with a part of Fall River. Both Colonies entered their protest, but the decree was made by the King and Privy Council establishing the new lines which gave to Rhode Island a new county called Bristol, and added two towns to Newport county, Tiverton and Little Compton.

Of Governor Ward's fourteen children, Thomas Ward was Secretary of State from 1746 to 1760, the date of his death, and Henry Ward was Secretary of State from 1760 to 1797, holding the office until his death. The term of service of the father, Richard, and his two sons, Thomas and Henry, as Secretary of State extended over a period of seventy-five years. His son Samuel became famous in the "Ward and Hopkins Controversy" and later Governor of the Colony.

Governor Ward declined a reelection in May, 1743, and was succeeded by Deputy-Governor William Greene, of Warwick. He died Aug. 21, 1763, aged seventy-four years.

WILLIAM GREENE—The Greene family has occupied a prominent place in Rhode Island history from the first settlement of the Colony. John Greene, founder of the Rhode Island Greenes, born 1597, a surgeon at Salisbury, England, arrived at Boston, June 3, 1635, and appears at Providence as early as 1637. "For speaking contemptuously of magis-

trates," Greene was fined £20 by the Bay Colony Court and enjoined not to come into the jurisdiction on pain of fine or imprisonment. He replied by letter, charging the Court with usurping the power of Christ over the churches and men's consciences.

In 1638, he was one of the twelve men to whom Roger Williams deeded land bought of the Indians. He afterwards settled in Warwick, was one of the purchasers and founders of that town, and with Randall Holden, Samuel Gorton and others, suffered the great trials to which that settlement was subjected by the Indians and the Bay Colony, until redress was granted by the English Crown. Mr. Greene held the elective office of Commissioner (Representative) for Warwick for the years 1654-55-56-1657, and died in 1658.

His son John, born 1620, entered upon public life, at the age of thirty-two, and served his constituents and the Colony continuously, until 1700, when on account of the infirmities of age, he was obliged to retire to spend the evening of life at Occupassuatuxet, or Spring Green, Warwick.

Mr. Greene was a Commissioner (Representative) from Warwick from 1652 to 1653; General Recorder (Secretary of State), 1652 to 1654; Attorney-General from 1657 to 1660; Warden, 1658; Assistant (Senator) from 1660 to 1673-77-78-80-81-82-83-84-85-86-89-90; a Deputy (Representative) 1664-74-75-77-80; Major for the Main, 1683-84-85-86-90-91-1696; a member of Governor Andros' Council, 1687, and Deputy-Governor from 1690 to 1700. Lieutenant-Governor John Greene died in 1708, aged eighty-eight, full of years and honor.

William Greene, son of Samuel and Mary Gorton Greene, and grandson of Lieutenant-Governor John Greene, was born in Warwick, Rhode Island, Mar. 16, 1695. The history and traditions of the family were an inspiration to the youth William, who inherited the strong traits of the Greene and Gorton ancestry. The home training, the struggles of the pioneer life of New England and an early contact and an acquaintance with the practical affairs of the farm, business and political life of the early part of the eighteenth century, were the elementary and higher education of the future Governor of Rhode Island. From these he graduated for the duties and responsibilities of a freeman of the Colony in 1718, and, at the age of thirty-two was elected a Deputy from Warwick for the year 1727, holding that office for five years. That a knowledge of mathematics was a part of his education appears in his appointment, with John Mumford of Newport, to survey the boundary line between this Colony and Connecticut in 1728, and in connection with two others in 1736, on the accession of Hon. Richard Ward to the chief magistracy on the sudden death of Governor Wanton in 1740, Mr. Greene was elevated to the office of Deputy Governor, holding that office until his election to

the governorship in May, 1743. Warwick had been once honored in the election of Samuel Gorton as chief of the Colony for six months, from October, 1651, to May, 1652, under the title of President of the two towns Providence and Warwick as Providence Plantations. Only twice before had the office of Governor been filled by a citizen outside the island of Rhode Island. The exceptions were Roger Williams, 1654 to 1657, and Joseph Jenckes, 1727 to 1732, both of Providence. For only eight and one-half years in the century had the sceptre of power been wielded by any save freemen of the island towns.

The important issues of Governor Greene's administration centered about the long continued eastern boundary line and the Colony's share in the defence of the Crown in the war against France and Spain, which involved the great question of English supremacy on the North American Continent. As to the boundary line, the Crown sustained the Royal Commission of 1741, giving to Rhode Island "the Gore," now known as the town of Cumberland, the towns of Barrington, Warren and Bristol, which together constitute Bristol county, Rhode Island, and the towns of Tiverton and Little Compton, which were added to the four island towns to constitute Newport county, as now organized. The town of Newport was divided, the northeast part being set off under the name of Middletown. This was done on account of the petition of the "woods part of said town being farmers" to be separated from the "compact part of said town consisting chiefly of merchants and tradesmen."

The legislation of 1743 prohibited persons from voting in any town meeting in the Colony, except in the town where the person dwells; an act to prevent the counterfeiting of bills of public credit; an act for the greater ease of the inhabitants in discharging their debts due to the Colony; an act for calling in and exchanging the public bills of credit; an act for fixing prices of ferriage at the several ferries; and an act to settle damages upon protested bills of exchange.

In February, 1744, the General Assembly made another issue of £40,000 to be loaned for ten years at four per cent., and at the end of that time to be paid in ten annual installments, one-quarter of the interest to be divided among the towns and the balance to go to Colony uses. Earnest but unavailing protests were made against the issue, as before. The Assembly repealed the law creating a Court of Equity.

On the declaration of war by England against France, March 31, 1744, the letter conveying the intelligence to the Colony, urged all possible aid for the support of the government and also suggested the fitting out of privateers against the enemy, a service in which Rhode Islanders had shown themselves experts in annoying the settlements, trade and commerce of the French.

In June, 1744, the Assembly passed an act for putting the Colony in a proper posture of defence in the present war. Forts were manned and reënforced with guns, large supplies of ammunition were procured, the sloop "Tartar" was commissioned to guard the coast, the wages of officers and seamen were advanced, the division of prizes established, coöperative action with Connecticut in naval plans was approved, and the Colony militia was put on a war footing. Commodore Warren, with aid of Rhode Island forces laid siege to Louisburg, which surrendered June, 1745, to the great joy of the Colonies and the astonishment of Europe. "The strongest fortress of North America had capitulated to American farmers, machanics, and fishermen," and a fleet of two sloops, two schooners and fifty canoes, with twelve hundred men, were dispersed by Capt. Fones of Rhode Island, in command of the "Tartar" and two other war sloops. The Colony sent its quota of men into the field, and fifteen privateers of large size patrolled the sea, capturing and sending to Newport more than twenty prizes, under Governor Greene as leader. The Colony might be expected to do her whole duty and she did it gloriously. The home government afterwards acknowledged the gallant services of the Colony by a grant of £6,322 sterling.

In May, 1745, Hon. Gideon Wanton was elected Governor for one year, at the expiration of which period, Governor William Greene was reëlected and continued in office for one year from May, 1746, to May, 1747, when he was again supplanted by Governor Wanton who served for a second term of one year when Governor Greene was reëlected for a third term from 1748 to 1755.

During Governor Greene's second term 1746-47, the eastern boundary line was run as established by the Commission of 1741. Cumberland was added to Providence county, the territory north of Bristol and east of the Sowams river was added to Barrington, and the name of the new and enlarged Barrington was changed to Warren, in honor of Sir Peter Warren, the hero of Louisburg. Bristol county, Rhode Island, was created of the two towns Bristol and Warren, and Tiverton and Little Compton were added to Newport county. These adjustments were made in the early part of 1747.

Another political revolution occurred in May, 1755, when Stephen Hopkins was elected Governor to hold office for two years, when Governor Greene once more assumed the government in May, 1757, dying in office, Feb. 22, 1758. Four elections and three defeats were the fortunes of a political warfare that was waged for several years between the partisan Samuel Ward of Westerly, on the one side, and of Stephen Hopkins of Providence, on the other, a contest that became more bitter and was

waged with tremendous vigor, in the personal contest for the governorship which occurred in Governor Greene's death.

During Governor Greene's third term of office from 1748 to 1755, the people divided into hostile camps as partisans of war or peace measures, paper or hard money, Providence interests or Newport interests, and over local and personal jealousies. Probably at no period in Colonial history was personal and party discord and hatred carried to such extremes. Governor Greene was in the main supported by the Wards and the conservative or hard money party.

A census taken in the autumn of 1748 made the population of the Colony 34,128, of whom 29,750 were whites and 6,478 were negroes and Indians. Newport had 4,640 inhabitants and Providence 3,452. The country towns had a majority of 26,036 over the two embryo cities, Newport and Providence, while Providence was rapidly overtaking its rival near the sea.

The Assembly granted a lottery for the relief of a poor debtor in Newport jail. The lottery system had been prohibited in 1723 and was first legalized by the Assembly in 1744, in a scheme for raising £15,000 for building the Weybosset bridge at Providence.

The paper money had fallen so rapidly in value that exchange was quoted at five hundred and seventy per cent.—the harbinger of a commercial crisis. The total issue of paper since 1710, had been £312,300—worth in sterling money, about £360,000. On a presentation of all the facts obtainable from the Colonies, Parliament forbade the further issue of bills of credit in the Colonies. But the harm had been done, and the Lieutenant-Governor, Joseph Whipple, was one of the first to go down into bankruptcy occasioned by a disordered and fictitious currency.

The election of May, 1755, was preceded by a bitter contest between the advocates of a sound money policy and paper money, which was aggravated by personal issues and sectional jealousies. After a severe political battle, the beginning of what was known as the Ward-Hopkins controversy, the contest for the governorship, between Governor Greene and Stephen Hopkins, resulted in the election of the Providence candidate, Mr. Hopkins, a victory for the paper money party.

At the spring election of 1757, the Ward party was victorious over the Hopkins party and Governor Greene and seven of the ten assistants were sound money men. The policy as to the war was not changed and the Colony sent its quota with the request that it be officered by Rhode Island men, subject only to the general-in-chief.

In the midst of the activities of the war, Governor Greene died in office, Feb. 22, 1758, after an honorable and successful career of eleven years in the office of chief executive during times that called for labors



and sacrifices such as the Colony had never before experienced. The period was a stormy one at home and abroad, but the Colony stood true to her principles of civil liberty, only showing weakness in her financial policy.

GIDEON WANTON—The Wanton family, which had so signally distinguished itself in the service of the Colony of Rhode Island on the land and on the sea, in civil, naval, military and magisterial ways, had honors awaiting others of that name. Gideon Wanton was the son of Joseph Wanton, the shipbuilder of Tiverton, and was born Oct. 20, 1693. He was admitted a freeman in 1718, but in midst of an active business life gave himself in limited measure to public affairs. His talents seem to have been devoted to money interests from the fact that his first appearance in public life was as a candidate for the office of general treasurer to which he was elected in 1733, continuing in office until May, 1744. At the time of his election, his uncle William was Governor and his uncle John was Deputy Governor, while he constituted the third member of what might properly be termed a Wanton administration. That he was a paper money advocate is apparent from the fact that during his term of eleven years at the head of the treasury of the Colony, the General Assembly issued £264,000 in bills of credit, against which no protest appears from the treasurer general. There does appear a request for an increase of salary, on account of the great trouble and difficulty he met with in exchanging of £40,000 in old bills, the great increase of the business of the office since it was established occasioned by issues of paper currency and the payment of bounties on commodities. The Colony was too poor to raise his salary, but voted a gratuity of £700 for his trouble in the money market of the Colonies—an excellent commentary on the value of the system.

In May, 1745, a singular overturn was made in the governorship, by which Governor William Greene was defeated and Gideon Wanton was elected, the same event being repeated in 1747. The issue seems to have been made over questions involved as to the more vigorous prosecution of the war, on the part of the Colony. The Wanton family had a splendid reputation as fighters, although of Quaker ancestry, while Gideon was a Quaker preacher, as were his parents. We are told that "the people of Rhode Island went into this war with great spirit, and no man took a deeper interest in it than the Quaker Governor of Rhode Island." Hon. John R. Bartlett, the able editor of the Rhode Island Colonial Records says, "that although Mr. Wanton was a Quaker, he was a belligerent one, and fully equal to the emergency; and had he been Governor and Captain General of Rhode Island in 1861, would have been among the first to



send a regiment of Rhode Island volunteers to Washington. Through life Gideon Wanton was distinguished for his talents and for the influence he exerted in the affairs of the Colony." In the correspondence between Governor Wanton and the commanders of the expedition against Louisburg, the Governor asserts the necessity of home protection as well as the urgency of offensive operations on the part of the troops and vessels in the Provinces. A review of the acts of the General Assembly for 1745-1746, and 1747-48, reveals little else than the raising of troops, drafting of men, equipment of privateers, war supplies, etc., etc. Military and naval affairs occupied the attention of the government and usurped the place of more peaceful and profitable vocations of officers and people of the Colony.

Governor Wanton sustained an active relation with the Friends of the Colony until his death, Sept. 12, 1767, when he was buried by his wife in the Friends' Burial Ground at Newport, Rhode Island.

SAMUEL WARD—Samuel Ward, son of Governor Richard Ward, was born at Newport in 1725, enjoying in childhood and youth the advantages of a home of liberal tastes and cultivated manners and the instruction and discipline of a celebrated grammar school in his native town. He was also aided in his education probably by his brother Thomas, a graduate of Harvard College in 1733. Newport had assumed a position of commercial importance second only to Boston in New England, and the literary tone of the town had been elevated and enriched by the culture and benevolence of Bishop Berkeley and his associates. Marrying Anne Ray, the daughter of a well-to-do farmer of Block Island, he soon joined the farmer class of Rhode Island on an estate at Westerly, the dowry of his wife, and gave much attention to the improvement of breeds of domestic animals, with which his farm was well stocked. The Narragansett pacer, a race of horses now extinct, was his especial object of raising and training. It is of interest to note that the farmer class of Narragansett country was made up of many of the most intelligent, most cultivated and wealthy people of Rhode Island, and the aristocracy of Rhode Island, as of Virginia, in that period, was found in possession of large landed estates, especially in the South County. They were the farmer barons of the Colony. The same agricultural class, though not of so great wealth as in Narragansett, was busy in occupying the northern parts of the State, and Providence county soon became the rival of Newport in wealth, commercial and agricultural prosperity, and the independency and individuality of opinion, characteristic of other parts of the Colony. The houses of the farmer class were often as large and commodious as those of the

merchant class, in Newport and Providence, while intelligence, virtue and civic and religious activity were quite as prominent in country as in town life.

Samuel Ward entered public life in 1756, by election from Westerly to the House of Deputies, and continued in that office till May, 1759. He early won a position of commanding influence on important colonial questions. The war which England had declared against France called for all the resources at the command of the people and Mr. Ward's energy and public spirit stood him and the Colony in good service in the crisis. The paper money issue was constantly at the front, favored as it usually was mainly by the agricultural class and opposed by the commercial class. Mr. Ward, as a representative of the Newport and Narragansett commercial and agricultural wealth, was an advocate of hard money, while the rising communities at the north, led by the ambitious and able Stephen Hopkins of Providence, favored the paper currency.

Ward had already distinguished himself as the champion of the sound money party in the Greene-Wanton contest in 1745 and 1747, and in the Greene-Hopkins contest for the governorship in 1755 and 1757, while the Colony was swinging from one pole to the other of financial policies. The evil disease of inflated currency sorely distressed the body politic and in divided counsel there was no relief. Heroic treatment or death were the only sources of delivery. Professor Gammell says: "For fifty years this deceptive currency spread its disastrous influence over the trade and the wealth of the country, and was not wholly abandoned till the benefits of political independence had changed the relations of trade between America and all other parts of the world."

Mr. Ward continued to exert his powerful influence against the policy of the soft money party and the administration of Governor Hopkins, and so bitter were the animosities between them that Governor Hopkins commenced an action for slander against Mr. Ward, setting the damages at £40,000. The action which was begun in Providence county was removed to the jurisdiction of the Massachusetts courts to secure a fair trial. When the case was called at Worcester in 1759, it went against Hopkins by default and he paid the costs. The settlement of the case did not allay party strife nor make friends of the litigants. For ten years Ward and Hopkins stood against each other at the head of powerful parties, so equally divided that victory or defeat followed both until the election of Governor Lyndon of Newport in 1768. In the gubernatorial contest of 1758, Governor Hopkins won the election and continued in office until May, 1762. Failing in an election to the chief magistracy, Mr. Ward was appointed by the General Assembly to the office of Chief Justice of the Colony, an annual appointment. In 1762, he took the political field against

Governor Hopkins and won in a hard fought political battle. In the election of 1763, the soft money forces rallied. Hopkins was elected and Ward went down to defeat. After two years in office, Governor Hopkins again met Ward in the war of ballots, when the latter won, holding the office two years, until May, 1767.

During Governor Ward's first term, 1762-1763, the plan of founding a college in the Colony was first discussed and to the project he gave his hearty support. In all the early meetings of the friends of the institution the Governor took an active part and when "Rhode Island College" was incorporated in 1765, he was one of the trustees and ever after was one of its most generous supporters.

During Governor Ward's second term a greater issue than the party feuds over finance arose above the political horizon. Families, neighborhoods, towns, the Colony, had been irreconcilably at war over the matter of the currency. It needed some more momentous question to occupy the thoughts of the people, to assuage the partisan wounds, and to unite the people in a common cause. It came in the Stamp Act which had passed both Houses of Parliament, had received the royal approval and had been made the law for the Colonists two months before Governor Ward's election in May, 1765.

The scheme of taxing the Colonies was brought forward by Grenville, Prime Minister, in 1764. All commercial or legal documents, to be valid in courts of law were to be written on stamped paper, sold at fixed prices by governmental officers, and a stamp duty was also to be placed upon newspapers. Along with the proposed act was the vote "That Parliament had the right to tax the colonies." Parliament fixed duties on sugar, coffee, spices, wines and many other articles, and prohibited the export of lumber or iron except to England.

The news of the proposed Stamp Act and the duties imposed on foreign goods aroused all the colonies and under the lead of Sam Adams of Massachusetts, an invitation was sent to all the colonies to devise a plan of union for the better maintenance of the liberties of all. In July, 1765, Massachusetts proposed a congress of delegates of all the colonies to meet in New York to consult on the condition of the colonies and the best method of relief from unjust taxation. Virginia, under the lead of Patrick Henry, adopted a series of resolutions embodying the principle of resistance to arbitrary taxation on June 6, 1765. Rhode Island followed with similar resolutions August 13, 1765. The Providence Gazette appeared with the words "Vox Populi, Vox Dei," in large type over the title. Augustus Johnson, attorney general, who had been appointed stamp distributor for Rhode Island, refused to execute his office, "against the will of our Sovereign Lord the People." At Newport mob violence was

used against those who advocated the measures of Parliament and the officers of the royal revenue. The deputies from Newport were instructed to give special attention in the Assembly to the Court of Admiralty and the Stamp Act, being reminded that "It is for liberty, that liberty for which our fathers fought, that liberty which is dearer to a generous mind than life itself, that we now contend. The cause is vast and important."

The Assembly met at East Greenwich, September, 1765, and chose Henry Ward and Metcalf Bowler as delegates to the New York congress. A committee appointed to consider the Stamp Act reported six resolutions "more energetic and concise than any that had yet been adopted by the other colonies and pointed directly to an absolution of allegiance to the British Crown, unless the grievances were removed." The resolutions were in substance:

(1) That the settlers of this Colony of Rhode Island have all the privileges and immunities that have been enjoyed by the people of Great Britain.

(2) That the Royal Charter grant all the rights of British born subjects.

(3) That the General Assembly has the sole right of taxation and internal police in this Colony.

(4) That any attempt to vest the power to lay taxes and imports in any other body than the General Assembly is unconstitutional and has a tendency to destroy the liberties of the people.

(5) That the people of this Colony are not bound to yield obedience to any law or ordinance imposing internal taxation not proceeding from the General Assembly.

(6) That all officers in this Colony are directed to proceed as usual in the execution of the duties, and the General Assembly will indemnify and save harmless all said officers on account of their conduct to this resolution.

The bold, aggressive spirit of Rhode Island independence appears in full proportion. Copies of the bold resolutions were sent to the Crown and Parliament, and with them the thanks of the Colony to Col. Barre, for a spirited defence of their rights. A day of thanksgiving was appointed for November 28, on which prayers were to be offered for "a blessing upon the endeavor of this Colony for preserving their valuable privileges." The day before the Stamp Act was to go into operation, all the royal governors took oath to sustain it, with Fitch of Connecticut, who had strenuously opposed it. Samuel Ward, "the Governor of Rhode Island, stood alone in his patriotic refusal." By this act he forfeited his position and a fine of 5,000 pounds, but these threatened penalties had no force over the inflexible will and the profound convictions of Governor Samuel Ward. Liberty to him was sweeter than power, wealth, or life. Newport, the residence of the Governor during his term of office, established a

military guard and a night patrol to preserve the peace; the stamp distributor lodged the stamps on board the revenue vessel "Cygnet," refusing to distribute them; in addition to organizations known as "Sons of Liberty," the women of Rhode Island initiated a similar order called "The Daughters of Liberty;" the town of Providence declared its purpose to oppose the Stamp Act, even to the destruction of the union of the colonies with the mother country.

The news of the repeal of the Stamp Act reached Rhode Island May 16, 1766, when great public rejoicings followed in all parts of the Colony. The conflict for independence was thereby postponed but not abandoned. The election of April, 1767, brought the two governors, Ward and Hopkins, again into the political arena, where Hopkins won by a majority of over four hundred, on the war-cry of his party, "Seekers of Peace." In the spring of 1768, Governor Hopkins declined reelection, friendly relations were reestablished between the two great rivals, a compromise ticket was agreed upon for colonial affairs, "and the famous controversy ceased forever in the presence of a more momentous struggle in which the Colony was soon to be involved." (Arnold). Henceforth till death Governor Samuel Ward and Governor Stephen Hopkins were *par nobile fratrum* in all that related to colonial independence. Governor Ward retired to his estate at Westerly, but not to inglorious ease or to inactivity as to the interests of the Colonies, with which Rhode Island was now happily and heartily identified.

On the 17th of May, 1774, the freemen of Providence, in town meeting, formally proposed a Continental Congress for the union of the colonies, the first act of any body of men in favor of this measure. The idea was in the atmosphere of several colonies. It took form in Providence, the resolution proposing "That the deputies of this town be requested to use their influence at the approaching session of the General Assembly of this Colony for promoting a congress as soon as may be of the Representatives of the General Assemblies of the several colonies and provinces of North America, for establishing the firmest union," etc. In June, 1774, the General Assembly met at Newport, adopted the plan for a Continental Congress, and while Massachusetts was arranging for a time and place for the first meeting, elected Samuel Ward and Stephen Hopkins as delegates to the congress. Resolutions in favor of Colonial Union were passed and a recommendation of annual Congress.

The subsequent history of Governor Ward's public life may be found in the records of the Continental Congress, to which he devoted all his energies until his untimely death at Philadelphia, of smallpox, in March, 1776, four months prior to the Declaration of Independence. No epitaph could be more eloquent than Governor Ward's own words:

When I first entered this contest with Great Britain, I extended my view through the various scenes which my judgment or imagination pointed out to me. I saw clearly that the last act of this cruel tragedy would close in fields of blood. I have traced the progress of this unnatural war through burning towns, devastation of the country and every subsequent evil. I have realized with regard to myself, the bullet, the bayonet, and the halter; and, compared with the immense object I have in view, they are all less than nothing. . . . Heaven save my country, is my first, my last, and almost my only prayer.

STEPHEN HOPKINS—Hopkins is an ancient family name in Rhode Island history. Thomas Hopkins, the founder, signed the Providence Compact of 1640, with thirty-eight others. His son William was a deputy from Providence for fifteen years between 1674 and 1715, acted in the town councils of Providence for over twenty years, was town treasurer, major of the militia for the mainland of the Colony, an assistant or senator for seven years and speaker of the House of Deputies, one year.

William's son, William, resided in Providence, Rhode Island, where his son Stephen, afterwards governor, was born, March 7, 1707, where his son Esek, afterwards admiral, was born, April 26, 1718. In Stephen's veins flowed good ancestral blood from the vigorous Hopkins line, crossed with that of the Whipples, Wickendens, and Wilkinsons, all of whom showed special capacity for patriotic public service. The early life of young Hopkins was spent in the well-wooded country part of Providence, now Scituate or Chopmist Hill, where the parents reared a family of nine children, two of whom brought eminent distinction to the Hopkins name and honor to the State and Nation to which they gave their services. There were no schools in the forest country of Scituate, but the books of the family from the intelligent home of William Hopkins, and Ruth Wilkinson, the mother, supplemented by a small circulating library, gave to the family some of the mental food they craved. Richman says that Stephen "was a close and severe student, filling up all the spare hours of his life with reading." Sanderson says, "He attached himself in early youth to the study of books and of men." John Adams, who knew him later in life, says of him: "He (Governor Hopkins) had read Greek, Roman, and British history, and was familiar with English poetry, particularly Pope, Thomson, and Milton, and the flow of his soul made all of his reading our own, and seemed to bring to recollection in all of us of all we had ever read."

Abundant evidence exists to show that young Hopkins was a thoughtful, studious youth, who in the midst of the labors of a pioneer farm life improved his mind with the best material the times and circumstances afforded. While schools and education foster mediocrity, genius grows on concentrated mental power born of solitary thought, fed by high



themes and ideals. So Stephen Hopkins grew to manhood, learning of his grandfather and uncle the art of surveying, and gathering from its practice a knowledge of men and affairs, such as Washington obtained in Virginia. Arnold says he was chosen town clerk of Scituate in 1731, the year of its organization as a town, and held that office until his removal to Providence in 1742. He also held the office of president of the Town Council, and in 1736, became one of the justices of the Court of Common Pleas, holding the office in 1739 and 1740. In 1732, Mr. Hopkins was elected a deputy from Scituate, continuing in that office, with the exception of one year until 1738. In 1741 he was again chosen deputy, and was elevated to the speakership of the House of Deputies of the General Assembly.

At Newport Mr. Hopkins came into acquaintance and daily contact with the most distinguished men of the Colony, the Wantons, Brentons, Bulls, Coddingtons, Wards, Brinleys, Cranstons and others at the metropolis of the Colony. He was the only Providence member of the celebrated literary club, founded by Bishop Berkeley and made up of Newport culture and intellect, such as Ellery, Updike, Ward, Honyman, Checkly, Johnston, Stiles, Harrison, Hunter, Bull, Coddington and others. The Redwood library, founded by such men, was a source of mental supplies.

When Stephen Hopkins returned in 1742 to his native town, Providence, he found it a community of less than 4,000 people, with no schools, no post office, no college, no library, no bank, no printing press, four houses for religious worship, no paved street, one grist mill, three taverns, with dwellings and shops on the Town street, on the east side of the river. He built a house on the street south of Weybosset bridge, and began a commercial life, with the Browns as associates, holding close and constant relations with that influential family. After his return, Stephen Hopkins' name is connected with every enterprise which looked to the upbuilding of Providence: Streets, a public market, wharves, a state house, bridges, education, a post office, a free library, a newspaper, were among the principal, with many subordinates. All of his biographers emphasize his deep appreciation and his practical use of books, in the training of the mind for life. Justice Durfee says: "He was a man of extraordinary capacity, omniverous of knowledge, which his energetic mind rapidly converted into power."

In 1744, the political life of Mr. Hopkins began in sober earnest, from which he never relinquished his hold until his death, and during which he established a reputation as a patriot and statesman, the glory of which increases with the flight of years. He was elected a deputy for Providence for the years 1744-46-47-48-49-51-52, occupying the speaker's chair in 1744 and 1749. These were the years of the Greene-Wanton contests



for the governorship, in which party spirit was bitter and personal animosities were awakened which were allayed only by the birth of greater issues. The main question related to the issuance of bills of credit which had been in circulation since the first issue in 1710. On the inquiry of the home government as to paper currency in the Colony, a committee of three (Mr. Hopkins being one) made report to the Assembly, and it was transmitted to England. It contained no condemnation of the policy and no recommendation for its prohibition, and was a sad disappointment to the commercial interests of Newport and to the sound money men of the Colony, which included Samuel Ward, the future political antagonist of Mr. Hopkins. It was expected that he (Hopkins) would champion the interests of the northern section of the Colony in other questions that divided the people, but none supposed, from his acknowledged intelligence and leadership, that he would from timidity or any prudential or political reason array himself with the soft money party. Mr. Hopkins' attitude on the money question, and issues growing out of it, seems to be the one blot on his political escutcheon, which was erased by the law reëstablishing gold and silver as legal tender for the payment of contracts, passed by the Assembly in 1763, during Governor Hopkins' third term of office.

Governor Hopkins was first elected to the highest office in the State in 1755, by a small majority over his predecessor in office, and competitor, Governor William Greene. The issues were, in part, paper money, the personal element in the contest with Samuel Ward, who espoused the cause of Governor Greene, and the question of political supremacy between the northern and southern sections of the Colony—Providence against Newport. Since 1747, the Providence forces had been strengthened by the addition of the four towns, Cumberland, Barrington, Warren and Bristol, and Newport had added two towns, Tiverton and Little Compton.

The year 1755 was mainly occupied with legislation and work relating to the impending war with France. The occupation of Crown Point and Braddock's defeat led the Colony to equip and send to Albany additional forces, and the fitting out of privateers for French ports. Late in the year, Governor Hopkins and Daniel Updike, the attorney-general, as representatives of Rhode Island met delegates from other Colonies, in a Congress, at Albany, "to provide means for their common defence and safety." The Colonial records of the year relate mainly to military operations and "Crown Point" bills of credit were authorized to the amount of £40,000 at one issue, and £60,000 at another.

In February, 1756, the Assembly ordered the raising of five hundred men, to be equipped and officered for the expedition to reduce Lake George. The war measures of the year, as of 1755, occupy the attention

of the Governor and the Assembly. After two years of service as chief magistrate, the hostility of Ward towards Hopkins had become so acute, that the southern freemen rose in their might and defeated Governor Hopkins, with Governor William Greene as their candidate, who, although of Warwick, had the support of Newport and of the Narragansett country. On the death of Governor Greene, in office, in February, 1758, Governor Hopkins was chosen by the Assembly to fill the vacancy and continued in office until 1762, when he was defeated in a bitter fight with his sworn enemy, Samuel Ward. This personal combat between Governor Ward and Governor Hopkins diverted the partisans from important public concerns, hindered constructive legislation, and destroyed the amity so sorely needed for the grave Colonial affairs of the period.

Ward and Hopkins were both strong men, with large endowments. For the times, they were giants in intellect and in action. They were resourceful and had masterly control of forces. Ward led the wealth and conservatism of Newport, Narragansett and Kent counties; Hopkins, the growing strength of Providence and Bristol counties. Every influence and device at command was used by one or both parties. Neither balked at the use of money in its most bald and corrupt forms to control elections. Mr. W. E. Foster says that these men fought like gladiators in the arena, thirsting for each other's life. The dust of the political conflict filled the air and eclipsed the pure sunlight of patriotic spirit and service. The freemen of the Colony partook of the spirit and methods of the great belligerents and Rhode Island was the political camp of two hostile forces, which, in its more minute ramifications, divided neighborhoods and families.

Little can be said in justification of such a state of political turmoil or of the motives, methods and acts of the principal participants. Both descended from the high plane of statesmanship "to fight like beasts at Ephesus." Reason and conscience surrendered to prejudice and passion. Governor Hopkins wrote in 1760: "Altho it be with the utmost regret that I find myself pushed by the scandalous efforts of my enemies in this manner to have recourse to the assistance of my friends once more in this extraordinary manner." Those familiar with the corrupt political conditions in Great Britain at this time, and of the suffering need of money by the average Rhode Island voter, will readily understand the meaning of the words, "once more in this extraordinary manner."

Signs of returning reason appeared in 1764, when Governor Ward wrote to Governor Hopkins proposing that both resign their "pretensions to the chief seat of government," "so greatly anxious am I for putting an end to those bitter heats and animosities which have thrown the government into such confusion." On the same day and without any knowledge

of the above letter, Governor Hopkins wrote to Governor Ward, inviting him to accept the place of Deputy Governor made vacant by death, "hoping and earnestly desiring that such a measure carried into execution may put an end to the unhappy and destructive party disputes which have too long been extremely injurious to the Colony and its divided inhabitants." Neither accepted the proposals of the other and in the following year Governor Ward won the chief seat in the Colony, which he held for two years, 1765-67.

Governor Hopkins was a constructive legislator and statesman. In Colonial affairs his masterly abilities had their proper field and the acts of King and Parliament in declaring imposts and taxation furnished the golden opportunity for their exercise. This remarkable bent of Governor Hopkins' mind is to be seen in the remonstrance of the Colony in 1764, against the Sugar Act of Great Britain. This able state paper, to be found in our Colonial Records, sets forth the trade conditions of the Colonies, more especially those of Rhode Island, and shows the policy of the home government to be destructive of both the home and the Colonial trade. "It is to be hoped," he writes, "that the interest and advantage of the mother country will be found to coincide with that of the Colony, in the extinction of a law, conceived to be prejudicial to both."

One event of great importance to the future history of the Colony, which united Governor Hopkins and Governor Ward, as though brothers, occurred in 1764—the act incorporating Rhode Island College, now Brown University. Both men were enthusiastic advocates of popular education and both saw the value of the college as the foundation for the superstructure of a permanent school system. Both saw the special need of such an institution in Rhode Island—Mr. Ward, because he had enjoyed at Newport, the best that the land could afford; Hopkins, because he knew its value by its loss and from the narrow educational facilities of Providence county. The name of Stephen Hopkins heads the board of trustees, Deputy Governor Wanton's is second, and "The Hon. Samuel Ward, Esq.," the third in a list of thirty-six names of distinguished Rhode Islanders, who had the power and authority to establish an institution for "preserving in the community a succession of men duly qualified for discharging the offices of life with usefulness and reputation." On the broad platform of college education, the two political leaders found room to stand and act, and in that unity of action, discovered the elements of brotherhood, which in a brief period made foes, friends, the firmest bonds of friendship for the balance of life.

In November, 1764, a paper appeared, written by Governor Hopkins, entitled, "The Rights of Colonies Examined," which was ordered to be published by the General Assembly. This paper is the most remarkable

document that was issued during the period preceding the War of the Revolution, and in fact, by its wide distribution, became the basis of the other immortal utterances of the revolutionary patriots. Every argument and utterance from the impassioned words of Patrick Henry in Virginia, to the Declaration of Independence, by Thomas Jefferson, at Philadelphia, are wrapped up in this calm, clear, logical, masterly review of the relations of the American Colonies to the mother country. The first sentence is, "Liberty is the greatest blessing that men enjoy, and Slavery the heaviest curse that human nature is capable of."

Governor Hutchinson, of Massachusetts, says of this great paper of Governor Hopkins: "It was conceived in a higher strain than any that were sent out by the other colonies." Says another: "While Stephen Hopkins belongs to the nation, he is also recognized as a son of Rhode Island, and is to her what Samuel Adams is to Massachusetts, and Thomas Jefferson to Virginia."

This paper of Governor Hopkins was printed throughout the Colonies and the general interest in it was expressed by a New York merchant. It "meets with the highest approbation, and even admiration, of the inhabitants of this city." "From this time onward," says Mr. Foster, "Stephen Hopkins was recognized, not merely as a commanding figure in his own colony, but as one of the leaders of public opinion in the country."

The election of the spring of 1767 was as hotly contested between Governor Hopkins and Governor Ward as ever, and resulted in the election of Governor Hopkins on a ticket styled "Seekers of Peace." In Providence, not a vote was cast for Governor Ward, while only a fourth of the vote of Newport was cast for Hopkins. The tax act of the Ward party and the peace platform of the Hopkins party were the factors that gave the latter the largest majority he had ever received. Honestly following the sentiments of the platform of 1767, Governor Hopkins, in 1768, proposed to Governor Ward that both should relinquish their claims on the elections and agree to a compromise candidate. Governor Ward accepted the proposal, and the two leaders of the long political strife, which had well nigh rent the Colony in twain, met, settled the long standing quarrel, and united in a cordial friendship for the remainder of their lives. The petty politicians on Rhode Island soil threw off the false and foolish array of personal ambition and pride, and clothed in the panoply of a righteous cause for freedom, stood forth as broad-minded statesmen in the field of American politics, ready to sacrifice their lives, their fortunes and their honor, in defence of the liberty of the Colonies.

The period between 1768 and 1774 was a calm before the storm, and a preparation for the storm which was gathering above the eastern horizon. By public addresses, letters in the Providence "Gazette" and corre-

spondence with Franklin, Adams, Otis, Henry and other patriots, Governor Hopkins was directing the minds of all along the line of the policy and principles he had so long enunciated. The year 1774 is memorable as the year of the First Continental Congress, the birth of which, according to historian Frothingham was in the Providence town meeting of May 17, 1774. He says that "the first recommendation of a Congress in print *by an organised body*" was made at Providence, and Governor Hopkins was the writer of the resolution. At the June session of the Assembly, a resolution was adopted in favor of a Congress and Governor Hopkins and Governor Ward were the first delegates elected to attend the Congress, when it should meet.

Governor Hopkins was but sixty-eight years old when he was elected as a representative of Rhode Island to the Congress, but his active, stormy life, full of achievements, had told upon his vigorous constitution, but his palsied hand was no index of an enfeebled brain. He took his seat in the Congress, September 5, 1774. Of the fifty-five delegates, he was the only one of the Albany Congress of 1754. Henry Arnett Brown, in a pen portrait of the great man of the Congress writes: "Yonder sits the oldest of them all. His form is bent, his thin locks, fringing a forehead bowed with age and honorable service, and his hands shake tremulously as he folds them in his lap. It is Stephen Hopkins." Among his associates were the Adamses, Roger Sherman, John Jay, Patrick Henry, George Washington, Henry Lee, and the Rutledges.

The Congress had been called to protest and secure "the invaluable natural rights and privileges" of the people of the thirteen colonies. Petitions and remonstrances had failed. They had been answered by taxation, and the raising of a fleet and an army. For what? None knew better than the veteran statesman Hopkins, who had, with his associate Ward, predicted independence by the sword. He had already said while acting as governor and chief justice of Rhode Island, "What have the King and Parliament to do with making a law or laws to govern us by, any more than the Mohawks have?" To his associates in Congress he says: "Powder and ball will decide this question. The gun and bayonet alone will finish the contest in which we are engaged, and any of you who cannot bring your minds to this mode of adjusting the quarrel, had better retire in time." Governor Hopkins was elected in the Second Continental Congress which met May 10, 1775, after the "gun and bayonet" had played havoc with Colonial troops at Concord Bridge and Lexington Green, on the 19th of April previous.

In August, 1775, the General Assembly, "persuaded that the building and equipping of an American fleet" would be of great service to the Colonies, instructed their deputies in the Continental Congress to use

"their whole influence" for building a fleet for the protection of these Colonies at the Continental expense. On December 11, 1775, a committee, of which Governor Hopkins was a member, was appointed to report a plan for furnishing these Colonies with a naval armament.

On July 26, 1775, another Rhode Island idea, a national postal system, devised by William Goddard, was adopted by Congress, and Benjamin Franklin was appointed postmaster general of the United Colonies. Rhode Island had already established post offices in June, 1775.

The supreme act of the Continental Congress was the adoption of the Declaration of Independence, on July 4, 1776, for which Governor Hopkins was prepared especially, representing as he did a colony that had by a nearly unanimous vote of the General Assembly declared its absolute independence of Great Britain, on May 4, just two months before. Of the signers of this important instrument, two names are always noted with especial interest and admiration. The first, that of John Hancock, of Massachusetts, the president of the Congress, whose bold autograph was a challenge to the enemies of liberty, by a fearless patriot. The other, that of Stephen Hopkins, whose tremulous right hand, supported and guided by the left—gave witness of the courageous soul of the oldest member of that body of fearless men, who ventured all for liberty. "My hand trembles, but my heart does not," he remarked, as he penned his name, the last great act of his distinguished career. He died at his residence in North Providence, July 13, 1785, at the age of seventy-nine, and was buried in the North Burial Ground, Providence.

"His name," says the historian Greene, "is closely interwoven with all that is greatest and best in Rhode Island history; an astronomer of no mean pretensions, a statesman of broad views and deep penetration, a supreme executive, prompt, energetic and fearless; a genial companion when wise men relax from care, and a trusty counsellor when the duties of life bear heaviest on the scrupulous conscience."

JOSIAS LYNDON—The treaty of peace which closed the ten years war of Rhode Island partisans, led by Ward and Hopkins, was followed by the election of Josias Lyndon, of Newport, as a compromise candidate for the governorship, in May, 1768. Mr. Lyndon, son of Josias, and he of Josias, was born in 1704, and enjoyed and improved the advantages of the Newport grammar school, the best of its class in New England. Newport was the town of wealth and culture, two centuries ago, in its own right, and young Lyndon was studious, industrious, and somewhat ambitious.

He wrote himself a scrivener by occupation, and entered the service of the Colony in 1728 as clerk of the Assembly, continuing in that office



till 1767, assuming it again in 1770 for seven years and laying down the pen to die, in 1778. It goes without saying that he was acquainted thoroughly with Colonial affairs for he had heard them, talked them, recorded them for nearly a half century. Every manuscript of legislation had passed under his eye to read and record, and possibly to make a draft of. He had listened to all the debates of the people's house. He had been the consulting counsel of all the Governors from Joseph Jenckes, of Providence, to his own predecessor, Stephen Hopkins. Who, better than the clerk of the Assembly, knew the politicians and the politics of the century in which he wrought, and the inner movements of party leaders, their motives, methods, and principles? King, Parliament, Royal Charter, Colonial rights, royal prerogatives and demands, war, peace, hard and soft money, committees, commissions, Colonial relations, taxation, "taxation without representation," Stamp Act, etc., etc., were household words to Clerk Lyndon, who received the almost unanimous vote of the freemen of the Colony to serve them as their chief executive for a twelvemonth, from May, 1768.

Concede that by education and experience in legislation Governor Lyndon was well equipped for the high office of a Colonial executive in a time of great political excitement and peril. Let us see how he handles himself and the forces at his command. At this time, the legislative body, or General Assembly, was made up of a House of Assistants (the Senate), composed of ten members, and the House of Deputies (House of Representatives), of sixty-six members—six from Newport, four each from Providence, Portsmouth and Warwick, and two from each of all the other towns. Rhode Island then had twenty-eight towns and no city. A census of Rhode Island taken six years later, showed a population of 59,686, of which Providence had 4,321, in 655 families, dwelling in 421 houses; Newport was larger, both in wealth and population.

Associated with Governor Lyndon as general officers were Hon. Nicholas Cooke, Lieutenant-Governor, Henry Ward, Secretary of State, Oliver Arnold, Attorney-General, Joseph Clarke, General Treasurer, Hon. Metcalf Bowler, Speaker of the House of Deputies, and William Ellery, Clerk.

"The coming events which cast their shadows before," related to the rights and liberties of the Colonies, and the very first documents of an important character were letters from the Earl of Hillsborough, of the Royal Cabinet and Secretary for the Colonies, informing him of his appointment and giving instructions as to the "regular and punctual transmission of all acts and proceedings of government and legislation." Governor Lyndon replies, "with a heart filled with affection and duty to his Majesty," whom he calls "the best of Kings," stating that another Secre-



tary for the Colonies "is a fresh proof of His Majesty's paternal goodness and regard for his loyal subjects in America;" congratulating his Lordship for his "firm attachment to His Majesty, and to the best constitution under heaven," and hoping "that future measures will be dictated by such wisdom and moderation as effectually to restore that harmony, affection and confidence \* \* \* so necessary to the importance and happiness of the whole empire." On the same date he writes, "that there have been since the year 1734 set up and carried on in this Colony, ten forges for making iron out of ore; two furnaces, one for making ore into pigs, and the other for making hollow ware out of ore; six spermaceti works; twelve potash works; three rope walks; and one paper mill, at which is manufactured wrapping, package and other coarse paper," for which no "bounty or other encouragement is given by the Colony."

The next letter from Hillsborough shows the teeth of His Majesty relative to a letter sent by Massachusetts to the Crown and to all the Colonies. It says: "His Majesty considers this measure to be of a most dangerous and factious tendency, calculated to inflame the minds of his good subjects in the Colonies, to promote an unwarrantable combination, and to excite and encourage an open opposition to and denial of the authority of Parliament, and to subvert the true principles of the Constitution." As to Rhode Island, however, the king has little doubt "of their showing a proper resentment of this unjustifiable attempt to revive those distractions, which have operated so fatally to the prejudice of this kingdom and the Colonies," and urges the Governor to "exert your utmost influence to defeat this flagitious attempt to disturb the public peace by prevailing upon the Assembly of your province to take no notice of it, which will be treating it with the contempt it deserves."

Complaints came from the Colonial Secretary that obstructions were made in the Colonies to the collection of customs. These letters were laid before the General Assembly at its session in Newport, September, 1768, when a reply was prepared by a committee, and committed to the Governor to transmit to the King. Along with this letter of the Assembly, Governor Lyndon also wrote to the King, in which he sets forth the cause of the Colonies in clear and vigorous English. These letters are to be found on pages 559-60-61-62 of Vol. VI., of the Rhode Island Colonial Records, and express the attitude of the Colony of Rhode Island at this time, in its relations to the home government. A few sample sentences are given as indicative of the sentiments of the Governor and Assembly, and presumably of the majority of the people on the all-absorbing topics of the times:

Transplanted from Britain, subjects of the same king, partakers of the same happy constitution, supported and protected by her power, united

with her in religion, laws, manners, and language, and animated with the same sacred love of freedom, we esteem our connection with, and dependence upon, her as of the last importance to our happiness and well-being; and it will ever be our greatest solicitude to maintain and preserve to the latest posterity, this invaluable blessing, replete with so many mutual advantages.

When lawless power had almost extirpated the very appearance of liberty, our ancestors left Great Britain, their native land, and everything that was dear, that they might secure their civil and religious rights to themselves and their posterity, and as they brought with them, so they transmitted to their posterity, all the rights and privileges of Englishmen.

The Royal Charter declared that they and their posterity were, and should be, entitled to all the liberties and immunities of free and natural subjects born within the realms of England. Of these, the principal, and without which, the others are but of small importance, is the exclusive right of giving and granting their own money by themselves or their representatives. This Charter, our ancestors and we have ever since enjoyed in its full extent; the same never having been forfeited, nor any judgment passed against it.

We humbly conceive that the late acts of Parliament imposing duties and taxes upon your Majesty's subjects in America, not for the regulation of commerce, merely, but for the express purpose of raising a revenue; thereby giving and granting the property of the Americans without their consent, to be an infringement of those rights and privileges derived to us from nature and from the British Constitution, and confirmed by our Charter, and the uninterrupted enjoyment of them for more than a century past.

We glory in the title of the Sons of Britain, and of being loyal subjects to the best of kings.

The exercise of such power \* \* \* must prove destructive to liberty and to that harmony, good-will and confidence, so necessary to the happiness of the whole.

We pray that your Majesty will stretch forth the royal sceptre to our relief.

This Assembly pleads for a right, which, in their opinion constitutes the sole difference between free subjects and slaves; they are far, very far from aiming at an independence of the mother country.

By the bill of rights, it is expressly declared, that it is the right of the subject to petition the king; and that all commitments and prosecutions for such petitioning are illegal; and this Assembly cannot but express great surprise and concern that an attempt to unite fellow subjects, laboring under the same hardships in petitioning the throne in a constitutional, humble and loyal manner, for redress, should be considered a factious and unwarrantable combination.

In November, Hillsborough replied to the letter already referred to, expressing the king's disapproval of "the contents and purport thereof," and while ever ready to hear and redress every real grievance, holds himself ready to respect any petition or address founded upon claims and pretentions inconsistent with the authority of the supreme legislature over

all the British empire." He states that both houses of Parliament agree with the king, and the hope is expressed that this unanimity will have the effect to defeat and disappoint the wicked views of those men who seek to create disunion and disaffection between Great Britain and her Colonies.

Fifteen letters from the Colonial Secretary, Hillsborough, and as many replies from Governor Lyndon, in debate over the constitutional rights of the Colony, constituted the main business of the year and fittingly emphasize the special talents of the executive as the diplomatic scholar in politics. The storm of unjust legislation in the Stamp Act had shaken the throne and the dependencies. A calm followed, during which the elements were gathering force for the mighty conflict, yet to shake and dismember an empire.

The only act of public importance of the Assembly was the estimation of the valuation of the Colony, by towns, the total of which amounted to £2,111,295 10s. 7d.

At the annual election in May, 1769, the political condition of the Colony demanded a man of action, and as the Wanton family had shown itself equal to such leadership in time of war, Joseph Wanton succeeded to the governorship. When the British occupied Newport, Governor Lyndon sought safety in a residence in Warren, Rhode Island, where he died of the smallpox in 1778. His body sleeps in the cemetery on the banks of the Kickemuit.

*Leading Events*—July 25, 1768—Dedication of a liberty tree at Providence.

1768—Governor Lyndon's able defence of charter rights of the Colony.

February, 1769—Trinity Episcopal Church of Newport incorporated.

1769—The ratable estates and polls of the Colony were presented to the General Assembly.

JOSEPH WANTON—The return of the Wanton family to the chief magistracy of the Colony was a natural sequence from the unsettled and threatening conditions existing between the Colonies and the mother country. Three of the descendants of Edward, the first in New England, had guided the Colony through the perils of wars which threatened the life of all the colonies, from foreign foes. The foeman now was of our own household, even the mother that gave us our political life. The Wanton character and reputation must be equal to the new crisis.

Newport had achieved wealth through its merchantmen, who added to the domestic goods trade of the Colony, the manufacture and sale of large quantities of rum and the import and sale of negroes for slaves from the coast of Africa. In 1708, Newport had 220 negroes, which

number increased to 649 in 1730, with 1,648 in the Colony. In twenty-five years the number in Rhode Island had reached 4,697, the high water mark of slavery in the State. Joseph Wanton, son of Governor William Wanton, was a slave-trading merchant of Newport, making declaration that "in 1758 he had sailed in the 'Snow King of Prussia,' from Newport, with a cargo of 124 hogsheads of rum," and that "while at anchor at Annamibo, having on board fifty-four slaves," he was captured by a French cruiser, declaring also that "he was one of the people called Quakers and conscientiously scrupulous about taking an oath."

Joseph, the son of Governor William, was born in Newport, in 1705, enjoying as did his schoolmate, Josias Lyndon, the advantages which this aristocratic town offered for education and for social and business life. His family was one of the wealthiest and most influential in the town and the Colony, and young Wanton was recognized as a man of power and promise. His active business life was too engrossing for him to engage in politics, the evidence of which appears in the fact that he was captured, with slaves, on his own ship, on the coast of Africa. The administration and correspondence of Governor Lyndon had sharply defined the attitude of the Colony and Crown towards each other. What the Colony of Rhode Island claimed by original charter right was squarely opposed by the policy and arguments of the British government. The new doctrine, growing out of the pressing financial straits of the royal exchequer, that the British had the right to tax a Colony for revenue, without Colonial consent, was the challenge of the ancient monarchy to the nascent republic. The duel was one of words and paper missiles now, to be exchanged later for "the heavy brunt of cannon ball." The Colonial Records give no evidence that Mr. Wanton held any important office in the Colony, prior to his election as Governor in May, 1769. Col. Joseph Wanton, Jr., had held various offices, culminating in that of Lieutenant-Governor for the years 1764 and 1767, but he was the son of the Governor, although some writers have credited the father with all the offices held by his son.

The first official act of the new Governor under date of May 5, 1769, immediately following his election, is an excellent illustration of the bold, firm, determined spirit of the Wantons. It is a letter to Hillsborough, Colonial Secretary at Whitehall, with whom Governor Lyndon had held a year's correspondence. In it, he tells the Honorable Secretary that the supreme authority of this Colony is vested in the General Assembly by the royal charter; that the instructions contained in his last letter must have been given without a sufficient attention to the nature of this government; that it is not possible for him as Governor to obey the instructions of the Crown, "without acting diametrically opposite to the constitution of the Colony;" "we cannot but humbly express our opinion that the

power exercised by the Parliament of Great Britain (in which we are not represented), of raising monies upon us without our consent (which it is possible under a bad administration, may be extended to our last penny), is a real grievance; we are not without hopes that his Majesty's rejecting our petition, is entirely owing to the false information he hath received from America, of the state and temper of his subjects here."

At the June session, the Assembly received a letter from the House of Burgesses of Virginia, accompanying a series of resolutions, unanimously adopted by that body. The resolutions declared that the sole rights of taxation for the Colony were vested in the House of Burgesses; that the right of petition and of conferring with the other colonies was indisputable; that the right of trial by jury was sacred, and the transportation of persons for trial was a violation of justice. Lord Boutetort, governor of Virginia, on hearing these resolutions, dissolved the legislature. The Rhode Island Assembly endorsed the resolves and sent a cordial letter to Peyton Randolph, speaker of the Virginia House. Providence and the General Assembly had passed resolves of a like nature in 1765, during the administration of Governor Hopkins, four years previous.

In July, 1769, the most serious event of the time occurred in Newport harbor. The "Liberty," a British-owned sloop, Capt. William Reid, cruising in the Sound, brought a brig and a sloop, two Connecticut vessels, into Newport on suspicion of smuggling. Some difficulties arising between the officers of the brig and the "Liberty," the captain of the brig was fired upon from on board the British revenue vessel. The same evening, citizens of Newport, considering the seizure of these vessels an outrage for which they could obtain no satisfactory explanation or redress, boarded the "Liberty," cut her cables, brought her to the wharf, cut away her mast, threw everything valuable overboard, scuttled her, carried both her boats to the upper part of the town and burned them. While this was going on, the brig and sloop sailed away. This was the first overt act of violence of the Colonies against the authorities of Great Britain, and indicated the temper of the people towards the obnoxious officers of the customs.

Governor Wanton issued a proclamation for the arrest of the guilty parties, but their discovery was not an easy problem. In reply to a letter from Lord Hillsborough as to the maltreatment of a naval officer at Newport, Governor Wanton replied tartly, asking him to transfer his "reprehensions from the innocent Colony of Rhode Island to those guilty officers who have so shamefully misinformed you."

On June 9, 1772, occurred the destruction of the British revenue cruiser, the "Gaspee," in Providence river, the wounding of Lieut. Dudingston and others, and the attack on a government vessel in the administration of His Majesty's orders, were up to this time the most serious

events of the period, and stirred the blood of Englishmen on both sides of the Atlantic, but with the most diverse sentiments. At Gaspee Point, in Providence river, Rhode Island, was shed the first British blood of the long contest for independence. Governor Wanton offered a heavy reward for the arrest of the well known participants of the "Gaspee" affair, and a special royal commission was appointed to investigate the affair and ascertain the men who were engaged, but all efforts to discover the offenders were to no purpose, though they were all well known prominent business men and walked the streets of Providence in their daily vocations. Even the reward of £1,000 by King George III. was of no value in the eyes of the patriots of Providence. It was a significant fact that Governor Wanton was one of the commission, and its chairman, and that Deputy-Governor Sessions, of Providence, was one of the most active agents in trying to ferret out the men engaged in the enterprise.

A ballad of the time closes as follows:

Now, for to find these people out,  
King George has offered very stout;  
One thousand pounds to find out one,  
That wounded William Duddingston.  
One thousand more he says he'll spare  
For those who say the sheriff's were;  
One thousand more there doth remain,  
For to find out the leader's name;  
Likewise, five hundred pounds per man,  
For any one of all the clan.  
But let him try his utmost skill,  
I'm apt to think he never will  
Find out any of those hearts of gold,  
Though he should offer fifty fold.

So determined was the patriotic spirit of the Colony to resist and to retaliate unjust usurpation of the rights of the people, that Chief Justice Stephen Hopkins, the Sam Adams of Rhode Island, declared to the Assembly that for transportation to England for trial, he would neither apprehend by his own order, nor suffer it to be done by any officer of the Colony.

In May, 1774, the town of Providence instructed its deputies in the Assembly to use their influence for promoting a congress of representatives of the several colonies "for the protecting and securing their invaluable natural rights and privileges."

The Assembly at its June session at Newport adopted a series of resolutions in which it was declared "that a firm and inviolable union of all the colonies in councils and measures is absolutely necessary for the preservation of their rights and liberties." The Assembly urged a convention of the colonies and chose Stephen Hopkins and Samuel Ward as the representatives of Rhode Island.



True to the principles of liberty, the inhabitants of Providence urged "the General Assembly to prohibit the importation of negro slaves into the Colony, and that all negroes born in the Colony should be free after attaining a certain age." These recommendations were in a measure adopted by the Assembly.

The tea tax and the Boston port bill, as expressing the determination of the Crown and Parliament to carry out their oppression of the Colonies, awakened the most intense passion of all the colonies and of the towns composing them. The whole American democracy was stirred to its depths. The Assembly declared that these unjust acts were "scarcely paralleled in history for the severity of their vengeance," and June 30 was set apart as a day of fasting and prayers to beseech Almighty God "to avert every threatened judgment from us, and restore us to the full enjoyment of our rights and privileges, and, in particular, that He would appear for the relief and recovery of the town of Boston from their present distressed condition."

Startling events are rapidly forcing an impending crisis; in Britain, acts of tyranny over the colonies; in America, resistance. Rhode Island incorporates and organizes military companies in nearly all of the towns; secures and apports ammunition; encourages and carries on Colonial conferences for mutual defence; appoints Simeon Potter as major-general of the militia; and takes all other measures necessary for a conflict, not far off. The people had not long to wait, for on April 19, 1775, the battle of Lexington, Massachusetts, opened the long and dreadful tragedy of liberty for America. On April 22, the Assembly, in closest sympathy with Massachusetts, passed an act "for raising fifteen hundred men, as an army of observation, and to assist any of our sister colonies." On the 25th, a protest, signed by Governor Wanton, Deputy-Governor Sessions, Thomas Wickes and William Potter, against raising an army of observation, "because we are of the opinion that such a measure will be attended with the most fatal consequences to our charter privileges, involve the country in all the horrors of a civil war."

At the May session, Mr. Wanton was elected Governor for the sixth term, and Nicholas Cooke superseded Darius Sessions as Deputy Governor. Sessions and Senator Potter and Wickes, three of the protestants, failed of reelection. The great test of Colonial patriotism was now at hand. The act for raising an army of observation was passed on April 22. The Governor had protested it; had refused to commission officers to command the troops; had neglected to issue a proclamation for a day of fasting and prayer, and later had failed to attend the Assembly and to take the oath of office, "by all which," declared the General Assembly, "he hath manifested his intentions to defeat the good people of these colonies,



in their present glorious struggle to transmit inviolate to posterity, those sacred rights they have received from their ancestors." The Assembly, acting on the position of Governor Wanton, declared "that every act done by him as governor be null and void," until he should take the oath of office.

Governor Wanton sent a calm reply to the resolutions and action of the Assembly, still insisting on his opposition to raising an army and to the issuance of commissions. At the June session, the Governor did not appear to qualify, and the temporary deposition was made permanent. Deputy-Governor Cooke fulfilled the duties of the office for the year, although the Secretary of State, Henry Ward, son of Governor Richard Ward, was authorized to sign commissions to military officers chosen by the Assembly. While the General Assembly was sustained by the people of the Colony in this unprecedented act of removing its chief executive without an impeachment trial, and while the act was justified by subsequent events, something should be said to relieve Governor Wanton from the charge of treason to the Colony.

Governor Wanton was a resident of the town of Newport, the wealthiest community of its size in the Colonies. Its families had cultivated social relations with the court circles in Boston, Philadelphia, New York and London. Both wealth and social rank were conservative, for they saw in a collision with the home government the probable loss of both. The towns of Newport, Boston, and New York, were important seaport centers and the people saw the probable occupation and devastation by hostile fleets. The major religious sentiment of the town was either of Quaker or Episcopal stock, both of which were practically loyal, but non-belligerent. Still more the town of Newport was still jealous of her rival at the head of the bay, where Stephen Hopkins, John Brown and others led the democracy of the northern section, as the Wanton family had controlled the political forces of the aristocracy at the south. Still more, Governor Wanton felt as he expressed in his letter to the Assembly, under date of May 2, 1775: "The prosperity and happiness of this Colony is founded in its connection with Great Britain; for if once we are separated, where shall we find another Britain to supply our loss? Torn from the body to which we are united by religion, liberty, laws and commerce, we must bleed at every vein." He reposed under charter rights, and felt that in their possession, the Colony had all that it need to possess for its protection and maintenance.

Governor Wanton was now seventy-one years old, too old to command the ship of state, in the storm that demanded virility of manhood, the vigor and vitality of youth. He was a Quaker, but to the Wanton

family, this was a synonym for the fighter. Thank fortune, no Wanton ever concealed his person or his fortunes behind "Quaker guns."

The Governor retired to private life. He was not disturbed in his property or person by either combatant, occupying so far as appears a strict neutrality, and affording neither aid nor comfort to the enemy. He died in 1780, leaving a numerous family to perpetuate his name and memory.

*Leading Events*—July 19, 1769—British revenue sloop "Liberty" destroyed at Newport.

June 10, 1772—The "Gaspee" captured and burned.

May 17, 1774—A Continental Congress proposed in Providence.

June 15, 1774—Stephen Hopkins and Samuel Ward elected as delegates.

June, 1774—Importation of slaves prohibited.

Mar. 2, 1775—Tea burned in Market square, Providence.

Apr. 22, 1775—Army of observation of 1,500 men raised.

May 3, 1775—Joseph Wanton, last of the Colonial Governors, suspended on account of Toryism.

June, 1775—Postal system organized in Rhode Island.

June 15, 1775—First naval engagement of the Revolution in the Bay.

June 22, 1775—Nathaniel Greene made a Brigadier-General.

Oct. 7, 1775—Bristol bombarded by Capt. Wallace.

NICHOLAS COOKE—Nicholas Cooke, son of Daniel and Mary Power Cooke, was born in Providence, Feb. 3, 1717. In early life he followed the sea and became a successful master of ships. Later he entered mercantile life and sold the goods his ships brought to the Providence market. He acquired a handsome fortune for that day and invested his gains in land in Rhode Island, Massachusetts and Connecticut. He also carried on rope-walking and distilling, winning in all his varied affairs money and a good name. He married, Sept. 23, 1740, Hannah, daughter of Hezekiah Sabin, and was the father of twelve children. His ninth child, Jesse, was the father of Joseph S., who was the father of nine children, from whom Hon. Geo. L. Cooke, of Providence, is descended.

The home of Governor Cooke was the center of the independence elements of the Colony. Governor Wanton had reached years of cautious conservatism, and while jealous for the rights of the Colony, he trusted that Great Britain would withdraw her obnoxious laws and would cease to harass the colonies, while the influence of the wealth and culture around him undoubtedly encouraged him in this position. Although he had been Governor for six years he does not seem to have kept step with the advancing cause of liberty. He was the Edward Everett of his day, who could not understand the deep meaning of the events of his time, nor the portents of evil that hung over his horizon. If he understood,

then his conduct can only be attributed to weakness or conservatism, qualities never before credited to the Wanton family.

Whatever the facts on the side of Governor Wanton, the people of the Colony were now under the leadership of Samuel Ward and Stephen Hopkins, and were not to be trifled with. The nineteenth of April at Lexington and Concord had shattered all hopes of peace, and the war for American independence had actually begun. The prediction of Patrick Henry had been fulfilled, "the next gale that sweeps from the North may bring to our ears the clash of resounding arms." Following the events of April, 1775, liberty or death were the only alternatives. Lieutenant-Governor Darius Sessions, the double-minded, half-hearted patriot, was defeated at the April election, and a successful merchant, Nicholas Cooke, of Providence, had been elected to succeed him. Mr. Cooke had been in public life as an assistant in the Assembly from Providence for the years 1752-53-55-56-57-59 and Lieutenant-Governor for the years 1768-69.

He was acquainted with the leading men of the Colony, was familiar with the details of the government, and in earnest sympathy with the advanced sentiment of the people. As a native of Providence, he had been associated with the Browns, Bowens and Hopkins, in the business concerns of the town and had taken part in the public meetings on Colonial protection and policies. A man of his sea-faring life and bold spirit might have been, as were the Browns and other bewigged citizens of Providence, a participant in the "Gaspee" affair. It is unfortunate that we of this day have no catalogue of all the men who made up that expedition. Stephen Hopkins must have been near the head of the procession, in advice and plan, if not in person.

Governor Cooke at first strenuously declined the duties and responsibilities of the chief seat in the Colony, but the influence of his friends, Governor Hopkins, Dr. Bowen and the Browns, led him to accept the office for which he was so well fitted and which he filled with great acceptance to the people. As evidence of his determined spirit one needs only to read the report of the Committee of Inspection of the Town of Providence, of which Governor Cooke was chairman. This committee was appointed to see that the town "faithfully and inviolably adhered to" the declarations of the Continental Congress, relative to trade with Great Britain. Among the rules which the merchants and people of Providence were ordered to observe were: No direct or indirect importation of goods from Great Britain; no India tea from any part of the world; no molasses nor coffee from the British plantations; no import or purchase of any slave and the discontinuance of the slave trade; no purchase or use of any East India tea whatever; no exports to Great Britain; merchants and owners of vessels to stop all orders and imports from Great Britain; en-

courage the raising of sheep for meat and wool; discourage horse-racing, gaming, cock-fighting, expensive shows, plays and diversions; discontinue expensive funerals and giving gloves and scarfs; sell all manufactures at reasonable prices so that no advantage be taken of a scarcity of goods; all these and other rules to be observed "as a great means of extricating this country from impending ruin and slavery."

During the interval between the election of Governor Wanton in May, 1775, and the succession of Governor Cooke, the principal duty of commissioning officers for the army had been devolved on the Secretary of State, Hon. Henry Ward, son of Governor Richard Ward. Among the acts of the General Assembly were the removal from Newport to Providence of the Colony treasures, records and offices, for greater safety; the passage of acts for raising and equipping troops, fixing pay of officers and men; securing arms, tents and provisions necessary for an army; choosing a Committee of Safety; choosing the officers of the Army of Observation, of which Nathanael Greene, Esq., was made brigadier-general and James Mitchell Varnum one of the colonels. Lieutenant-Governor Cooke was instructed to write James Wallace, Esq., commander of the ship "Rose," for unlawful interference with coasting vessels of the Colony, in which he said to Wallace that while he demeaned himself he might depend on protection; otherwise, "you may be assured that the whole power of this Colony will be exerted to secure the persons and property of the inhabitants against every lawless invader." To this Wallace replied: "I am unacquainted with you or what station you act in: Suppose you write in behalf of some body of people,—I desire to know whether or not you or the people in whose behalf you write are not in open rebellion to your lawful sovereign and the acts of the British legislature." Important rules and orders were adopted for the government of the army, and the Committee of Safety was directed to employ two vessels to be manned and armed to protect the trade of the Colony. Abraham Whipple was placed in command of the vessels, with the rank of commodore. Post officers and post riders were established, "in order to preserve an intercourse between the Colonies." Post offices were established at Providence, Newport, Bristol, Warren, Tower Hill and Westerly, postmasters were appointed, and rates and duties for postage were fixed; the lowest rate for any distance not exceeding sixty miles was 5¼d. or 10 cents, and not exceeding one thousand miles 2s. 8d. or about 50 cents. Thursday, the 20th day of June, 1775, was observed as a day of fasting and prayer. Six additional companies of sixty men each, were ordered raised and equipped. A committee was chosen to make an inventory of all the ammunition in all the towns. Job Watson of South Kingston was appointed to a post on Tower Hill to watch for any squad-

ron of ships on the coast and to alarm the Colony and in case of an alarm the northern counties to be ordered to march to Providence. A proclamation was issued, commanding every man in the colony who was able to bear arms to equip himself completely with arms and ammunition. The town of Providence was ordered to fix a beacon on Prospect Hill to alarm the country in case of an invasion. Two row-gallies were ordered built and equipped for protection and defence.

On September 15, 1775, the General Assembly was persuaded, that the building and equipping an American fleet as soon as possible would greatly and essentially conduce to the preservation of the laws, liberties and property of the good people of these colonies; and they therefore instructed their delegates, to use their whole influence, at the ensuing Congress, for building, at the Continental expense, a fleet of sufficient forces for the protection of these colonies." In this resolution we find the initiative of our American Navy, which when ready for service was placed in command of Esek Hopkins, brother of Stephen, as admiral.

In November, 1775, the General Assembly formally deposed Joseph Wanton from the governorship. Since "The whole course of his behaviors \* \* \* hath continued to demonstrate that he is inimical to the rights and liberties of America, and is thereby rendered totally unfit to sustain said office."

The balance of the legislative year, under Governor Nicholas Cooke, was devoted to the preparation of troops and the business of making ready for war. An address to the Continental Congress by the Assembly set forth the exposed condition of the Colony by reason of easy access to its navigable waters, stating that "this Colony is scarcely anything but a line of sea-coast." And for that reason has been made the harbor of the ships of the enemy, on account of which the town of Newport has been depopulated and threatened with total destruction. After setting forth the efforts of the Colony in raising troops for home defence and the aid of sister Colonies, it asks Congress for assistance in Colonial defence. An Act was passed to encourage the manufacture of saltpetre and gunpowder. The town of Newport, in view of its disastrous condition and threatened destruction, was allowed to furnish beef and beer to the warships of the enemy stationed in the Bay. There followed a very interesting and important correspondence between Governor Cooke and General Washington, then in command of the American troops at Cambridge.

The one act, which above all others, distinguishes Governor Cooke's administration and reflects the highest honor on the Colony of Rhode Island, was the Declaration of Independence of Great Britain, which passed the General Assembly at its session in the old State House, Providence, on the Fourth of May, 1776, just two months prior to the Declara-

tion of the Thirteen Colonies at Philadelphia on July 4, 1776. This Act repealed a previous Act of Allegiance to the Crown, and declared that hereafter the King's name and authority in this Colony was void and of no effect; that the name of the Colony should be "The Governor and Company of the English Colony of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations," that the courts of law be no longer considered the King's Courts; that no instrument in writing of any nature or kind whether public or private, shall in the sale thereof mention the year of the King's reign, and that all commissions, all writs and processes shall be issued, no longer in the name of the King, but in the name of the Governor and Company of this Colony. The Act was drawn by Col. Jonathan Arnold, a lineal descendant from Governor Benedict Arnold.

Unfortunately no record has been preserved of the debate that followed its introduction in the General Assembly. Governor Cooke wrote to Hon. Thomas Cushing of Massachusetts under date of May 6: "The enclosed act passed the upper house unanimously and the lower house by a vast majority; There being upwards of sixty members present, and only six votes against it."

The first act of the new government was "Instruction from the General Assembly of Rhode Island, to Stephen Hopkins and William Ellery, Delegates from the Colony to the Continental Congress," in which they are urged to provide and confirm "the strictest union and confederation" between the Colonies; "to secure to the said Colonies their rights and liberties, both civil and religious;" "taking greatest care to secure to this Colony, in the strongest and most perfect manner, its present established form, and all the powers of government, so far as relates to its internal policies and conduct of our own affairs, civil and religious."

In Staples' "Rhode Island in the Continental Congress" may be found valuable letters of Governor Cooke, one in particular in which he alludes to his successful manufacture of saltpetre. All his public life and records give a high conception of the excellent good sense and wise judgment of the Governor. Both Governor Cooke and Deputy Governor William Bradford declined a reelection in 1778. Both were publicly thanked by the General Assembly "for their patriotic zeal, firmness and intrepidity."

Governor Cooke died Nov. 14, 1782, and was buried in the North Burial Ground, Providence, where a plain shaft and a Revolutionary marker stand above his grave. Governor Cooke's biographers speak of him "as an honest man of affairs," of excellent common sense and good judgment, patriotic, zealous, firm, intrepid. The venerable John Howland said of him: "Rhode Island history, if faithfully written, will hand his name down to posterity in connection with most eminent public characters of which our country can boast." He was a trustee of Brown



University from 1766 until his death, representing the Congregational Church, of which he was a member.

*Leading Events*—Nov. 5, 1775—Esek Hopkins, Commodore of American Navy.

Nov. 7, 1775—Governor Joseph Wanton formally deposed.

Apr. 5, 1776—Gen. Washington visits Providence.

May 4, 1776—Rhode Island declares her independence.

July 18, 1776—The Declaration of Independence of the Thirteen Colonies endorsed by the General Assembly.

Dec. 8, 1776—The British Army takes possession of Newport.

Jan. 9, 1777—Col. W. Barton captures Gen. Prescott.

Feb. 9, 1778—A regiment of negro slaves ordered to be raised.

Feb. 9, 1778—Articles of Confederation between the thirteen original States adopted.

WILLIAM GREENE, son of Governor William Greene, was born in Warwick, Rhode Island, Aug. 6, 1731, and was admitted as a freeman in the Colony in May, 1753. His father occupied the governorship for nine years between 1746 and 1758, and naturally introduced his son to the duties of citizenship and to the social and political life of which he was a leading factor in a period of great disturbance in the civil and financial affairs of the Colony.

Another circumstance had a singular and remarkable influence over his political career, the story of which is too romantic not to be told. Simon Ray, one of the first settlers of Block Island, was born in Braintree, Massachusetts, in 1645, and in 1660, bravely conducted sixteen families to their future island home. Mr. Ray devoted his long life to the building of this isolated community and was respected and honored by home and Colony. His son Simon succeeded his father as a strong, able man, and brought up a noted family which has had much to do with the history of Rhode Island. Of his children, Judith Ray married Thomas Hubbard, of Boston, a distinguished citizen and merchant, and for twenty years, treasurer of Harvard College.

Anna Ray married Governor Samuel Ward, of Westerly, the mother of a distinguished family. Catharine Ray, with whom Franklin corresponded freely, and between whom there was the closest literary intimacy, married Governor William Greene, the subject of this chapter. Phebe Ray, the fourth daughter, married William Littlefield, of Block Island, whose daughter Catharine married Major-General Nathanael Greene, and was an intimate friend of Martha Washington. By his marriage into this Block Island family, all daughters, young Greene became allied with the Hubbards, of Boston, the Wards, of Rhode Island, and the granduncle of his distinguished cousin, Gen. Nathanael Greene. Among the descend-



ants of the four daughters of Simon Ray of Block Island may be found many of the best men and women of America.

By this marriage, Samuel Ward became the powerful ally of William Greene, senior, whose cause he espoused with all the energy of his great nature, and Governor Ward in turn had the support of the Greenes, which, in numbers and influence, ranked as one of the first Rhode Island families.

The first reference to William Greene, the future Governor, in the Colonial Records, is in 1771, when he is made the chairman of the managers of a lottery granted by the General Assembly for raising \$150 to build parts of a bridge over Hunt's river. Lotteries had been made illegal in 1732, but eleven years later were legalized by the legislature and continued to be granted for all sorts of enterprises, from the building of churches to the laying out and repairing highways and post roads. Even the United States government sanctioned lotteries to raise funds to sustain the Continental credit.

Mr. Greene's first important public office was as deputy from Warwick in the General Assembly in 1773; again in 1774, and in 1776. In the latter year, he was made chairman of a committee to obtain 6,000 bushels of salt for Kent county. The same year, Mr. Greene was one of a committee of safety to aid the Continental Congress to procure gold and silver coin for the operations in Canada.

He was one of the House of Deputies that adopted the Declaration of Colonial Independence, May 4, 1776, and on July 18, 1776, the General Assembly, of which he was a member, resolved, That "taking into the most serious consideration the resolutions of the Most Honorable the Continental Congress of the United States of America, of the 4th instant, declaring the said States free and independent States, do approve the said resolution; and do most solemnly engage that we will support the said General Congress, with our lives and fortunes." The event was celebrated at Newport and Providence by the discharge of thirteen cannon in each town and the firing of musketry. Public declaration of the event was also ordered, and the two row-galleys were ordered to proceed to New York to receive the orders of His Excellency, George Washington.

In 1774, William Greene was elected a justice of the Supreme Court, serving until August, 1777, under Hon. Stephen Hopkins and Metcalf Bowler, as Chief Justice.

In December, 1776, a large body of British troops took possession of the island of Rhode Island, and a council of war was appointed, of which Mr. Greene was one "for the public utility of the State." In 1777, Judge Greene was promoted to the position of Chief Justice of the Supreme Court, and in May of that year was chosen speaker of the lower House of

the General Assembly. At the same session, Mr. Greene was chosen a member of the council of war to act in the recess of the General Assembly. At the spring election of 1778, Hon. William Greene, speaker of the House of Deputies, was elected Governor, Governor Nicholas Cooke not desiring to serve longer on account of the arduous duties of the office. Governor Greene was well equipped for the supreme service of the new State. He was forty-seven years of age, was acquainted with the traditions, the leading men and the politics of the country, had been an active participant in the events leading up to the struggle for Independence, was one of the patriot band that voted for the Independence of the Colony of Rhode Island two months in advance of the Philadelphia Declaration of the Thirteen Colonies; and had a judicial training for the legal as well as political issues involved in the war. He also possessed a remarkable physical vigor, as shown by the fact that although a man of ample fortune, he was accustomed to walk two or three times a week, from Warwick or Greenwich, to Providence, and return in the afternoon.

The act granting freedom "to negro, mulatto and Indian slaves," for enlisting in the Continental battalions was limited as to time, the test of loyalty act of 1776 was continued and enlarged. The bounties to soldiers were continued and increased. Maj.-Gen. Sullivan was placed in command of the American troops on Rhode Island. In June an embargo act was passed on the export of wheat, flour, rye, Indian corn, rice, bread, beef, pork, bacon, live stock and other provisions. Congress ordered Rhode Island troops to be sent home and ordered three galleys for the defence of Rhode Island waters. The General Assembly appealed to the General Assembly of Connecticut for supplies of provisions, on account of great scarcity in this State. Speculators arose called "engrossers and forestallers," the lineal ancestors of modern "grafters." Brig.-Gen. Varnum was made chairman of a committee for the better discipline of the militia and the revision of the militia laws. Strict laws were enacted for the apprehension and punishment of Tories. The daring enterprise of Maj. Silas Talbot in his capture of the "Pigot" galley in the east passage added to the brilliant reputation of this naval officer, and the Colony voted him a sword for his gallant deed. Connecticut responded to the call for food and money, in recognition of the great distress of the Colony owing to his supreme efforts for self-defence. South Carolina also aided Rhode Island by an extra quota of troops, since this Colony could not send but a portion of her quota into the field, but was obliged to keep them as a home guard on account of the British occupation of the land and waters of the State. While the State had only 2,000 Continental troops, the British force was upwards of 6,000. In April, 1779, occurred the capture of a British fleet off Cape Henry, by Capt. Hopkins. The

fleet consisted of seven British vessels—one 20-gun sloop and six transports with very valuable stores, and twenty-four British officers bound to Georgia. The value of the stores was estimated at £80,000.

Congress resorted to increased taxation to arrest the depreciation of paper money and assessed forty-five millions of dollars on all the States, of which Rhode Island's share was \$750,000, but the remedy of issuing paper money was worse than the disease. Mr. Mowry states that so great was the decrease in value in 1781, that a pair of boots sold for \$600, handkerchiefs at \$100 apiece, calico at \$85 a yard, a barrel of flour at \$1,575, and John Adams paid \$2,000 for a suit of clothes. A bill of goods which amounted to \$3,144.50 in currency was paid by £18 10s. in coin—less than \$100. Later Congress asked the States to stop issuing paper money, but they continued.

During these years while Rhode Island could add but small aid to the Continental army, she sent out Hopkins, Talbot, Whipple and others to seize and destroy British ships of war and transports, and in this service they won imperishable renown for themselves and the State.

In October, 1779, the British troops evacuated Newport. During the three years of occupation, they had laid waste the island, had driven away a great body of the population, had destroyed its trade and reduced its people to a condition almost of penury. More than 500 houses were destroyed and the wealthy citizens were driven away, never to return. Even the records of the town from its settlement were carried away. The buildings of Rhode Island College, at Providence, had been used as barracks, and as a hospital, the college being suspended in its educational work, which was restored in 1782.

The General Assembly passed an act pledging to its soldiers that, "for their proved fidelity, firmness and intrepidity in service," the State would at the close of the war "make good to them or their legal representatives the wages of the establishment of Congress whereon they engaged." This Revolutionary debt has never been discharged, although on the strength of the promise three Continental regiments, then in the Rhode Island line, reënlisted for the war.

The most important event of 1780 was the arrival at Newport of the French fleet of forty-four sail in command of Admiral De Terney, bringing 6,000 troops under Count De Rochambeau. Governor Greene convened the General Assembly and the reception to the French was a joyful ovation from a long distressed and harassed people.

In 1781, soon after the surrender of Cornwallis at Yorktown, the General Assembly changed the name of King's county to Washington, "to obliterate as far as may be, every trace and idea of that government which threatened our destruction," and decreed, "that in perpetual and grateful

remembrance of the eminent and most distinguished services, and heroic actions of the illustrious commander-in-chief of the forces of the United States of America, the said county shall forever hereafter be known and called by the name and style of Washington." The State was thus prompt in recognizing and perpetuating the name of the great leader of the Revolution, both in the forum and in the field.

In 1782, the Assembly passed an act to inflict the death penalty on any person who should counterfeit the bills of the Bank of North America, the first paper money in the country that was made redeemable in specie on presentation. A census of the State showed a population of 51,869, of which Newport had 5,531, and Providence, 4,310.

At the spring election of 1782, John Collins, Ezekiel Cornell, Jonathan Arnold and David Howell were chosen delegates to Congress. At the July session, the necessity of granting to the Continental Congress the power to levy an import tax of five per cent., was urged and all the States except Georgia and Rhode Island consented to the duty. The Rhode Island delegates opposed the act for several important reasons: "That the Confederation guaranteed to the State all the resources of her trade for purposes of defence on account of her exposed condition; that this duty bore unequally upon Rhode Island as a maritime State which required her trade to protect her from the inland duties that her neighbors might impose; that it infringes upon the sovereignty of the State, which could better collect its own revenues than could be done by an external power; that Congress was not accountable for the moneys thus to be placed in its hands; that it would create an army of office holders, whose influence would tend to corrupt the public morals; and that Congress had not yet decided as to the share which the State which should have of the public lands, which had been won by the common blood and treasure of all the States."

These were the sentiments of the State of Rhode Island as voiced by David Howell in Congress, and which continued to actuate the people and delaying not only the early organization of the Confederation, but also giving to Rhode Island the reputation of longest consideration in entering the American Union. Owing to the firmness of Rhode Island, Maryland was inclined to withdraw her assent and the vote of Massachusetts was negated by the veto of Governor Hancock.

In October, 1782, in response to a call of Congress for an immediate decision on the import act, Rhode Island by its House of Deputies, fifty-three members being present, rejected unanimously the proposal for the reasons, "that the operation of the act would be unequal; that it conflicted with State sovereignty and that it made Congress independent of the States." An attempt was made to break down Judge Howell, who

led Rhode Island in its opposition to the import act, to which Howell made a vigorous protest against an attempt to interfere with the liberty of members, and the right of the State. In his position, Mr. Howell was sustained by Governor Greene as well as by his colleague, Dr. Jonathan Arnold, and by his constituents, who returned him to Congress in 1783. A letter was sent to Congress declaring that the opposition to the import act "was a meritorious service rendered to this State and to the cause of freedom in general."

Immediately following these proceedings, the General Assembly passed a tariff act, "for raising a revenue for the support of the government of the State." It placed duties on imports and goods in bond and established collectors of excise in each county. Silas Talbot was appointed collector for Providence.

At this session of the Assembly, February, 1783, the famous act was passed giving to Roman Catholics the same rights with Protestants. The act reads:

Be it enacted, &c., that all the rights and privileges of the Protestant citizens of this State, as declared in and by an act made and passed the first day of March, A. D., 1663, and the same are hereby fully extended to Roman Catholic citizens; and that they being of competent estates, and of civil conversation, and acknowledging and paying obedience to the civil magistrates, shall be admitted freemen, and shall have liberty to choose and be chosen civil or military officers within this State, any exception in the said act to the contrary notwithstanding.—State Records, Feb., 1783, p. 412.

A full discussion of this law and the reason for its passage may be found in "History of the State of Rhode Island," by S. G. Arnold, Vol. II., pp. 490-497, to which the student is referred. This act, taken in connection with the well known hostility of Roger Williams to the Quakers and his famous debates with George Fox at Newport, casts a shade of suspicion on the practical operation of the doctrine of soul liberty, but it must be remembered that all general laws or principles are made more prominent by individual and transient exceptions.

The Assembly passed a copyright law, securing to authors the benefit of their works for twenty-one years, "there being no property more peculiarly a man's own than that which is produced by the labor of his mind." It is an interesting fact that the first copyright under the United States law of 1795, was issued to a Rhode Island author.

In June, 1783, a new tariff bill was passed levying a duty of 2 per cent. ad valorem upon all imports, to meet the interest on the State debt. The war debt of Rhode Island amounted to over \$700,000, a heavy load on a poverty-stricken State.

In December, 1783, Maj.-Gen. Nathanael Greene returned to his native State, where he was received with fitting recognition and honors.

In February, 1784, the Assembly passed an act for the gradual emancipation of slaves, all children born of slave mothers after March 1 to be free, the children to be cared for by the owners of the mothers. The introduction of slaves for sale was absolutely prohibited.

The test oath of the Revolution was abolished and a new oath of State allegiance was adopted. The standards of the Rhode Island line were presented to the State, "to perpetuate the noble exploits of that brave corps." Congress was invited to hold its next session at Newport. A movement was made to establish a bank in Providence, which was not carried out until 1791, when the Providence Bank, the oldest in the State, was incorporated.

At the May session of the Assembly the town of Newport was incorporated as a city, with four wards, a mayor, four aldermen, six councilmen and a clerk. The government of the city was organized in June, with Hon. George Hazard as mayor.

The State duty on foreign goods was raised from two to two and one-half per cent. The import act of Congress of five per cent. was rejected by a majority of 40, by the Deputies. The Sabbatarians were allowed to pursue their usual labors on Sunday, provided they did not interfere with the devotions of their neighbors on that day.

The Friends' School was established at Portsmouth, in September, 1784, under the auspices of the New England Yearly Meeting and continued four years. By gifts of wealthy persons it was reestablished in Providence in 1814.

In the autumn of 1784, Gen. Lafayette was received with appropriate honors at Newport and Providence, the occasion being graced by the presence of Gens. Greene and Varnum.

In 1785, petitions came from many towns asking for a new bank of paper money, which were rejected by a large majority of the Assembly. The import duty on foreign goods of two and one-half per cent. was increased to seven and one-half per cent., provided the other states should adopt the same tariff. New York and Georgia refused to enact import bills, in consequence of which, the Assembly added a duty of seven and one-half per cent. to the two and one-half already in operation. In June, 1785, the tariff act was amended, levying specific duties on all kinds of tools, and an ad valorem duty of from five to twenty per cent. on hats, articles of leather, furs, paper, and many other matters, "for encouraging the manufacture thereof within this State and the United States." Revenue and protection are both included in this act of the Assembly of June, 1785.



On October 14, 1785, the venerable and distinguished patriot and statesman, Governor Stephen Hopkins, died at his home in Providence in the seventy-ninth year of his age.

The Assembly, at the October session passed an act, prohibiting all commerce in Bristol vessels, except those built in the States on English account. The annual Thanksgiving Day was restored by the Assembly and observed in the autumn of 1785.

At the January session of the Assembly, 1786, the paper money craze again appeared and was rejected again by a vote of nearly two to one, a remonstrance having been made by about three hundred prominent merchants and other citizens.

At this session an attempt was made to arrange an import act in harmony with the wishes of Congress, and to encourage home manufactures, a bounty of a penny a pound upon hemp and flax and of a shilling a head for all sheep raised in the State was offered.

The Tender Act was passed to enable the transfer of real estate, at an appraised value, in settlement of debts, redeemable in one year on payment of the money with interest. An excise act was passed to secure funds for the payment of public debts and current expenses of government. The tax to apply to spirits, sugar, tea, carriages, dogs, horses, and billiard tables.

The main issue of the spring election of 1786 was paper money. The sentiment in favor of a new paper bank issue had been growing since the close of the Revolutionary War. Governor Greene had stood for a solid currency policy and had been supported by the General Assembly. Pitted against him at this election was John Collins, of Newport, an anti-federalist, and a paper money advocate. Party spirit ran high, and at the polls the soft money voters won. John Collins, their candidate for Governor, was elected, as was Daniel Owen, of Glocester, Deputy Governor. Of the eighty assistants of the upper House, four were new members; of seventy-one delegates in the House of Deputies, forty-five were new members. In a total of eighty-one persons elected to the General Assembly of 1786-87, only thirty were members of the Assembly the year before. The triumph of the paper money party was complete, but Governor Greene maintained his integrity as a man and statesman, and so far as he could the honor and credit of the State in a manly fight, falling honorably before an overwhelming force. After his retirement from public life, he resided on his Warwick estate until his death, Nov. 29, 1809, aged 78 years.

The years of William Greene's governorship were among the most eventful in American history and the work and correspondence he carried on rank him among the chief of Rhode Island statesmen. "All his



correspondence," says Dr. H. E. Turner, "is characterized by unwavering patriotism, and by eminent ability. The bow, constantly strung during that trying period, never relaxed; how trying we can hardly now conceive." "The most vivid imagination can hardly form an adequate picture of the distresses of the people, all of which must have constantly wrung the heart of him to whom, as head of the government, all looked for succor. Calm, strong, immovable, he passed through that cruel ordeal with a reputation for wisdom and integrity accorded to but few men, even in that period of exceptional superiority."

*Leading Events*—May 25, 1778—Bristol and Warren pillaged and partially destroyed.

July 29, 1778—Arrival of French fleet at Newport.

Aug. 29, 1778—Battle of Rhode Island.

Oct. 28, 1778—British galley "Pigot" captured by the "Hawk," in command of Capt. Silas Talbot.

Oct. 25, 1779—Newport evacuated by the British.

May 19, 1780—The dark day.

July 10, 1780—Arrival of 6,000 French troops under Count Rochambeau.

Mar. 6-14, 1781—Washington at Newport, Bristol, Warren and Providence.

Oct. 14, 1781—Surrender of Cornwallis at Yorktown.

Feb. 1783—Roman Catholics given political privileges.

Apr. 25, 1783—Cessation of hostilities celebrated.

Feb. 23, 1784—Emancipation act passed.

June 1, 1784—Newport incorporated a city; repealed 1787.

July 13, 1785—Death of Stephen Hopkins at the age of 78.

JOHN COLLINS was born in the town of Newport, in the year 1717. He was educated to a business life to which he devoted himself strictly until the period of the American Revolution, when he made his appearance as an ardent patriot, giving his services and influence to the town and Colony. In the year 1772, Mr. Collins was chairman of the committee to establish a lottery to raise money to build a hospital on Coasters Harbor for smallpox patients.

In May, 1774, Mr. Collins was elected a member of the upper House in the General Assembly from Newport. This was a year of great political activity, in resisting by resolution, the oppressive acts of Great Britain and in preparing for the years of revolution just ahead. With Col. Wanton, Henry Ward and William Ellery, Mr. Collins was one of a committee for the town of Newport to recommend measures as to the imposition of the famous tea tax. Considering the situation and defenceless state of the town of Newport, the General Assembly strongly recommended the removal of all their aged people, women and children, to a

place of safety and Mr. Collins was at the head of a committee to attend to and pay for the transportation of such persons as were incapable of removing themselves. Mr. Collins was reelected to the House of Assistants in 1775-76 and 1777, and was an active and an efficient member. In 1776, he was sent on business of the General Assembly to the Continental Congress at Philadelphia, for which the Assembly voted £70 for his expenses. In March, 1778, Mr. Collins was again dispatched to Philadelphia to present to the Continental Congress the accounts of this State against the United States, and at the election at Newport in May, 1778, he was elected one of the four delegates to represent Rhode Island in the Congress at Philadelphia, his associates being Stephen Hopkins, William Ellery, and Henry Marchant, and the same delegates were returned in 1779. Mr. Collins was reelected a delegate annually until 1783, with the exception of the year 1781.

In the election of 1786, Mr. Collins led the paper money party of the State to a victory at the polls, which was succeeded by a great financial calamity to the State. Two or three reasons led to this financial revolution. The agricultural population was in favor of State rights and was anti-federal in its attitude towards a central government. Judge Howell had influenced the people to the position almost of hostility to the government they had fought to secure. They also favored imposts for and within State control, on both of which questions they opposed the commercial class of the larger towns. The merchants favored a central government, imposts if at all, by the general government, and a sound specie currency. The farmers, largely in the majority, favored paper money and on the three plank platform of Anti-federalism, the tariff under State control and a paper money issue, the commercial interests went down under the vote of the agriculturists. Mr. Collins was a citizen of Newport, which had lost its commercial prestige during the war, never to be restored. Providence was making rapid strides in wealth and commercial importance. The large war debt of the State was in the main due to the merchants, and the land-holders were also heavily in debt to the men of trade. They saw no way of escaping ruin except by the issue of paper money, the creation of a larger debt to pay a smaller one. The friends of sound money conducted their cause with great ability, coolness and courage, but failed in the spring election, led by Mr. Collins, who in the main represented the views of the majority.

At the May session, a bill was passed authorizing the issue of £100,000, securing its payment by the mortgage of the real estate of the borrower, and making it a legal tender for debts, already contracted. At the June session, the friends of the measure, to prevent the rapid depreciation of the issue, attempted to force its circulation, in the passage of

an act compelling every trader or other person to receive the paper money at par with gold and silver, or incur a penalty of £100 fine and disfranchisement. For protection, business men closed their stores and stopped trade. To force the traders to terms, the farmers resolved not to market their farm products. A civil war threatened, while the vehicle of business stood still.

The town of Providence agreed to borrow \$500 and buy corn to be sold to the people. To counteract this, the farmers called a convention of the county of Providence to meet on August 10. This convention adjourned to unite with a State convention at East Greenwich on August 24. Delegates from sixteen towns met, expressed their confidence in the State government and their desire to aid in making effectual the act as to paper money. David Howell, Welcome Arnold, Jabez Bowen and Joseph Nightingale, of Providence, acted with a small minority in this convention.

Governor Collins called a special session of the Assembly on the same day, for the purpose of enforcing the act as to the use of paper money. The revised act suspended the usual forms of justice, required an immediate trial of offenders of the bank law within three days after complaint before three judges, without a jury, whose verdict should be final and the judgment instantly complied with. The fine for the first offense was from six to thirty pounds, and for the second from ten to fifty pounds at the discretion of the court. "This monstrous act of injustice," as Arnold styles it, passed the Assembly by a large majority, against the solemn protest of Providence, Newport, Bristol and other towns, "as a violation of every principle of moral and civil right, of the Charter, of the Articles of Confederation, of treaty obligations, and of every idea of honor or honesty entertained among men."

In the case of *Trevett vs. Weeden*, the question of the constitutionality of these extraordinary acts was tested and the court decided unanimously that they were invalid and void. Other strangely vicious plans were proposed, such as compelling a trader to receive the paper money on a par with gold or silver, on a penalty of disfranchisement, etc., etc. The General Assembly, mortified by the decision of the Supreme Court, and angry at the interference of the Court with what the Assembly regarded as their supreme prerogatives, summoned the five judges before the legislature "to assign the reasons and grounds of their decision." The Court answered the summons and the Assembly spent the November session in the examination of the judges. Judge David Howell argued the unconstitutionality of the bill and maintained the supremacy of the Court, declaring that the Supreme Court of the State was not accountable to the General Assembly or to any other power on earth. At the close of the hearing, the Assembly resolved that no satisfactory reasons had been

given in their judgment, but as there was no ground for impeachment, the Court was discharged from further attendance on the Assembly. In this memorable case the independence and the supremacy of the judiciary over the law-making power was ably defended and sustained.

Cotton spinning dates from this period, and a company was formed in Providence to produce machinery for making cotton yarn. The first spinning jenny in the United States, having twenty-eight spindles, was constructed in Providence by David Jackson, a coppersmith. A corder and spinning frame were procured and the manufacture of jeans having a linen warp and cotton filling was begun in the chamber of the Merchant House, now the Board of Trade, Providence, in 1786.

In March, 1787, another bitter contest arose over the question of sending delegates to a convention of the States to revise the Articles of Confederation. The majority of the General Assembly declined the invitation and Rhode Island was not represented in the body that drafted the Constitution of the United States. The new State paper was laid before the General Assembly at its October session, in 1787, with the request that the Constitution be laid before a convention of the people. At the February session, the question of its adoption was referred to a vote of the freemen in their several town meetings. The friends of the Constitution favored a convention in order that amendments might be proposed to an instrument of such great importance to the State, and generally abstained from voting as agreed upon. Of six thousand freemen in the State only about three thousand voted, only two towns gave majorities for the Constitution, Bristol and Little Compton. In Providence only one vote was cast and that was by Samuel Sampson, a lawyer, against the Constitution.

While the State of Rhode Island was divided and distracted over paper money, States rights, imports, repudiation of the State debt and other hotly contested questions, fuel was added to the flames by the civil war in Massachusetts over agrarian and paper money issues, styled Shays' Rebellion. As the debate intensified, the paper money depreciated, so that six paper dollars would purchase one silver dollar. The creditor fled the debtor and hid in attic and cellar lest he might be compelled to accept the rag money which might be legally tendered for an honest debt. The sympathies of the Assembly with the actors in the Shays Rebellion is seen in the vote denying the authority of the Governor to return to Massachusetts the leaders of that rebellion who had fled to Rhode Island, in answer to the requisition of the Governor of that State. A majority of twenty-two vetoed the request.

The chapter of Rhode Island history relative to the adoption of the Federal Constitution extends over a period of three years of great poli-

tical strife, unknown in any other of the thirteen commonwealths. Rhode Island, first in the fight was last at the feast. The reasons are to be found in the individualism of the people, the theory of State rights as opposed to a centralized government and the contest which had grown up between the debtor and creditor classes—the farmers and the merchants—leading to the paper money craze. The Federal party had a clear issue to present to the people after the framing of the Constitution, and as State after State joined the Federal Union, that party grew in numbers and influence. Delaware, Pennsylvania, New Jersey, Georgia, Connecticut, Massachusetts, Maryland, South Carolina, New Hampshire, Virginia, New York, had entered the Federal alliance before July, 1788, with North Carolina and Rhode Island without the pale. A little later North Carolina joined the ranks and Rhode Island was a foreign nation, in a land which had been the first to declare herself free. For two long troubled years the contest went on between the Federalists and Anti-Federalists—the hard and soft money people, the farmer and the merchant class.

Meanwhile twelve States had elected George Washington President, John Adams, Vice-President, and the Constitution of the United States was the law of the land, outside of Rhode Island. The Congress of the United States was the mighty power with which this isolated people must treat, or suffer dismemberment, as was threatened during her long Colonial struggle for autonomy.

May 29, 1790, at Newport, the momentous question was decided in favor of the Union, by a majority of two votes, the vote standing 34 in favor to 32 against. Says Arnold, "A majority of two votes saved the people of Rhode Island from anarchy and the State from dismemberment." Governor Arnold closes his history with this brief but eloquent epitome of this event:

Thus Rhode Island came into the American Union, cautiously but firmly taking upon herself the obligations of the Constitution. For more than a century and a half, the State had enjoyed a freedom unknown to any of her compeers, and through more than half of that period, her people had been involved with rival colonies in a struggle for political existence, and for the maintenance of those principles of civil and religious freedom which are now everywhere received in America. Well might the people of Rhode Island hesitate to surrender ever so small a portion of that liberty which to other States was yet but an experiment, when to them it had been an established fact. A jealousy of more powerful States had with too good reason been implanted in the Rhode Island mind. The memory of former sufferings could not be at once effaced, although the glorious epoch of the Revolution divided the past from the present. The first State to strike a blow for freedom was the last to recognize a system by which that freedom could best be preserved. Since that memorable

day, the expression of seventy years has taught Rhode Island the value of the Union. May her sons forever guard the sacred trust, and the emblematic anchor of the State hold fast upon the Constitution.

The vote of Governor Collins in the convention made him unpopular with his party and his political career closed in May, 1790, although he was elected to Congress, but did not take his seat. He died at Newport, March 8, 1795.

*Leading Events*—June 19, 1786—Death of Maj.-Gen. Nathanael Greene, in Georgia, at the age of forty-four.

May, 1786—Paper money issue of £100,000.

Sept. 25, 1786—Supreme Court decision in case of "Trevett and Weeden."

1787—First spinning jenny constructed in U. S. made in Providence. Cotton and linen jeans made in Providence.

May 29, 1790—Federal Constitution adopted by a majority of two—34 voting in favor to 32 against.

ARTHUR FENNER came from good old Colonial stock, his grandfather, Arthur, migrating from England to Providence, via Connecticut, about 1648. Arthur, the first, was a freeman in Providence in 1655, and an Assistant or Senator in the General Assembly for twenty years subsequent to that date, a deputy eight years, a member of the town council four years, and town treasurer two years. June 19, 1676, Arthur Fenner was appointed by the Assembly, "Chief Commander of the King's Garrison at Providence, and of all other private garrison or garrisons there (not eclipsing Captain Williams' power in the exercise of the Train Band there, &c.)." He seems to have been a man of commanding influence, a legislator, a military figure, and later a justice of the Court of Common Pleas. His will was proved in 1703.

His son, Arthur, father of the Governor, married Mary Smith, daughter of John Smith, the miller, of Providence, but was not a man given to public affairs except for a few years of his life.

Arthur, the subject of this article, was born in Providence, in 1745, his mother being a member of the distinguished Olney family of Providence. Patriotism and public service were large elements in the Fenner blood and character, and at the age of twenty-nine, Arthur J. was a member of "the Committee of Inspection," and associated with William Earl, Governor Nicholas Cooke, Jonathan Arnold, Joseph Brown, and other prominent citizens to carry out the recommendations of the Continental Congress as to the import of tea and other articles, made odious to the patriots by an obnoxious foreign tax. On December 24, 1774, the committee met at the council chamber to devise and recommend measures to prevent the introduction of contraband goods, requiring all traders to



buy goods of such persons as held certificates signed by the committee. In February, the committee issued an address to the people of Providence, warning them "not to purchase or use any East Indian tea whatever from and after the first day of March." "We hope there will not be found in this town any violator of this solemn agreement, respecting the purchase and use of a needless article, which hath proved so ruinous to the liberty, interest, and health of the people." In order to prove that the people were in full sympathy with the address, a great assemblage met in the Market Place on the 2nd day of March, 1775, and publicly burned about three hundred pounds of tea. An article in the "Gazette" styled the exercises, "The Funeral of Madam Souchong." After referring most touchingly to the deceased, the "Gazette" remarks that "she became a common prostitute among the lowest class of people." "Broken spirits and hysterics seized her and she died on the First of March, 1775, at midnight."

For several years Mr. Fenner was clerk of the Court of Common Pleas of Providence. In this office he had made the acquaintance of the leading men of the State and had shown himself an able and useful citizen. Like the majority of the freemen of the State, Mr. Fenner had espoused the Anti-Federal cause, although it is difficult to understand the influences that led him to this position.

Governor Collins had lost favor with his party, and a coalition was formed between the two parties, Federal and Anti-Federal, by which Arthur Fenner was selected as the candidate for Governor and Samuel J. Potter, of South Kingstown, a Federalist, was slated for Lieutenant-Governor. Both were elected and a very able General Assembly. Among its members were Henry Marchant, of Newport, Jabez Bowen and Benjamin Bowen, of Providence, Thomas Durfee, of Tiverton, William Bradford, of Bristol, Joshua Bicknell, of Barrington, Joseph Stanton, Jr., of Charlestown, and many others of prominence of both parties.

At the June session of the Assembly, the amendments to the Constitution of the United States proposed by Congress were assented to and ratified on the part of this State. These are the first ten articles of amendments as they now appear in the Constitution. An act was passed to incorporate the Providence Society for Promoting the Abolition of Slavery, for the relief of persons unlawfully held in bondage and for improving the condition of the colored race.

Both houses being united in grand committee, elected Joseph Stanton, Jr., first Senator, and Theodore Foster second Senator, to represent this State in the Congress of the United States of America. At the September session of the Assembly, Benjamin Bowen was elected in grand committee, the Representative of this State in the Congress of the United States.



At the September session of the Assembly an act was passed "to promote the tranquillity of the State, to permit the discharge of bonds and mortgages held by the State under the paper money loan, at the rate of one silver dollar for fifteen dollars in the sail paper money."

In view of the provision of Congress for lighthouse expenses, the Assembly repealed the law of 1786, regulating lighthouses by the State.

The General Assembly adopted an address to President Washington, in which they extend congratulations on the election to the chief magistracy "of this great confederated republic," of the man "that had led them successfully through a long and arduous war," and add, "attached as we have been to the rights and liberties of mankind from the first settlements made on these shores, we cannot fail to coöperate in all just measures to secure them to the people of these countries, now happily united under an efficient and well-balanced Federal Government." \* \* \* "Under such a constitution and such an administration we cannot but flatter ourselves with the hope of prosperity in our commerce, agriculture, and manufactures, and of the establishment of our public credit and national honor."

The address closes "with a grateful warmth of affection," for the particular honor of the visit of Washington to Rhode Island in the summer of 1790. This address was written by David Howell and Benjamin Bourne, staunch Federalists, and unanimously adopted by a fusion General Assembly, the succession of the Assemblies that had for three years refused to share in the construction of a constitutional government, and when framed, almost unanimously spurned its provisions as unfitted to Rhode Island sovereignty. *Tempora mutantur et nos mutamur in illis*. At the October session of the Assembly, Thursday, November 25, was set apart as a day of thanksgiving, among other blessings, also "for disposing the hearts of the people peacefully to unite in the establishment of the general government." God Save the United States of America!

In December, 1790, Samuel Slater, an Englishman, established the first mill for spinning the yarn and weaving cotton cloth in America. A spinning jenny had been operated in Philadelphia as early as 1775, and in 1786, Massachusetts granted \$1,000 to the Barr brothers of Scotland, to construct machines for cotton and wool cording and spinning. Slater's mill was the first complete cotton mill in the United States, and President Andrew Jackson styled him, "The Father of American Manufactures." As he was not allowed to bring models or drawings from England, he constructed his machines from memory.

At the February session of the Assembly, a letter was received from President Washington in reply to the address from Rhode Island, in which he expresses his gratitude for civilities received in his late visit and remarks: "A change in the national constitution, conformed to ex-

perience and the circumstances of our country, hath been most happily effected by the influence of reason alone. In this change, the liberty of the citizen continues unimpaired, while the energy of the government is so increased as to promise full protection to all the pursuits of science and industry, together with the firm establishment of public credit and the vindication of our national character." At this session lotteries were granted for building a meeting-house, North Providence, for repairing Trinity Church, Newport, for constructing a road to Pawtucket, for repairing roads leading into Connecticut, for building a wharf at Point Judith, and for other good and laudable undertakings.

At the October session of the Assembly, Governor Fenner addressed that body, on the State debt and the adjustment of the indebtedness of the National Government, and a committee was appointed to address Congress on the assumption by that body of the residue of the debts of this State, incurred for the common defence and welfare of the United States.

At the session (October 3, 1791), an act was passed to incorporate the stockholders of the Providence Bank, the first banking institution in Rhode Island, and still doing business in Providence.

In 1792, an act was passed creating a military inspector for the State militia. An act was passed incorporating the Newport Association of Mechanics and Manufacturers "for the purpose of promoting industry and giving a just encouragement to ingenuity." The Providence Association of Mechanics and Manufacturers was incorporated in March, 1789.

In August the Assembly amended the law for election of representatives to Congress on recommendation of the Governor, who writes in his message this valuable political principle: "The right of suffrage is one of the dearest and most important privileges of a freeman, and all due precaution ought to be taken that it may be secured to every one, conforming to the laws of the community, which ought to be so explicit as to be easily understood, and so simple in their execution that every freeman, if it is not his own fault, may be sure of his vote having some effect in the final result of the election."

During this year, Elijah Ormsbee constructed a steamboat called "The Experiment," which made successful trips on Providence river. At the October session of the Assembly an act was passed making gold coins a legal tender at eighty-nine cents for every pennyweight, of equal fineness with the gold coins of England, France, Spain and Portugal.

An act was passed granting a bounty upon duck cloth manufactured within the State.

Mr. Fenner continued in the governorship by annual election until his death, Oct. 15, 1805. In 1797, 1,204 proxies of ballots were reported, with "very few erasures" of Governor Fenner's name. In 1801, he

received 3,756 votes. No others reported. In 1802, the vote stood Fenner 3,802; William Greene, 1,934. Fenner's majority, 1,868. No other votes were reported.

In 1793, a memorial for a State constitution was rejected by the General Assembly. In 1795, the name of the upper House was changed to House of Magistrates, but was never used. "Senator" took the place of "Assistant" in 1799.

In 1797, the matter of a new constitution was again brought forward, only to be voted down by the Assembly, as it was again in 1799.

In 1798, freehold qualifications were fixed at \$1.34, or \$7 per annum, by changing £40 Colonial currency to the decimal system.

The sensation of the years 1799-1801, was the libel suit brought against Governor Fenner by one John Dorrance, of Providence, a lawyer and a judge of the Court of Common Pleas for Providence county, a man of respectable literary ability, of adequate law knowledge, and of the strictest integrity. The suit grew out of the filching of the body of a suicide from a grave in Scituate by some medical students of Providence. The slander was "that the judge having had the body confided to him for decent burial, sold it for dissection to Doctor Pardon Bowen for a beaver hat, and furthermore had the impudence to wear the hat in town meeting, when he presided as moderator." Governor Fenner pleaded not guilty, though he did not deny uttering the slander. The case was conducted with masterly ability by Ray Greene, James Burrill, and Nathaniel Searle, for Judge Dorrance, and David Howell, Arthur Robbins and Daniel Lyman for the defendant.

The verdict was for the defendant, although the defence of truth broke down completely. The case was argued to the jury in both law and fact and the evidence and arguments were overwhelmingly for the plaintiff, Judge Dorrance, but Governor Fenner was the political idol of the day and his personality was large, powerful, impressive, magnetic, and withal so courteous and popular as the State executive, that court and jury were both turned from a just judgment according to the law and testimony.

Judge David Howell, one of the counsel for Governor Fenner, and one of the ablest men of Rhode Island, in his argument, declared that the Governor "possessed an unparalleled brilliancy of talent, and a boundless copiousness of mind, adorned with every valuable accomplishment, and replete with the moral and social virtues." During the trial Governor Fenner sprang to his feet, on the introduction of a piece of evidence, plainly irrelevant, and, addressing the court and jury, said that "he wished that every public transaction of his life might be proclaimed to the world, and that every deed, whether moral or political, public or private, might

be, without reserve, submitted to the inquiry and scrutiny of the public, by whose judgment he desired to stand or fall." Such an instance of a governor of an American commonwealth, on trial before a jury for slander, addressing the court, counsel, jury and people in regard to testimony in his own case, is probably without parallel in American history. The case of Dorrance vs. Fenner and that of Trevett vs. Weeden are valuable and instructive studies for students of judicial history.

The topics of chief interest during Governor Fenner's long magistracy of a little less than fifteen years were the return of the people from the wasteful, pernicious and destructive paper money policy to a specie basis; the adjustment of the war debt between the State and National governments; the abolition of the slave trade; and the establishment of the new era of manufactures and commerce. The thirteen colonies were now a consolidated nation, at peace at home and abroad, save some trouble with Algerian pirates in Africa. Rhode Island entered upon this period of State and national development with all the energy and enthusiasm she had known in defence of her charter rights and privileges. The great forces of physical and moral powers and the carefully conserved mercantile wealth of the State were now centered on ambitious commercial plans and the culture of home industries, and in all this Governor Fenner, by his great wealth and popularity, led and encouraged the activities of the people.

The East India trade, begun by the house of (John) Brown and Francis, in 1787, had developed a large foreign trade. The firm owned its own docks and built its own ships and employed its own capital. As evidence of the strong Federalist character of this house, of four ships, one was named George Washington, the second General Washington, and the third President Washington, the last the largest of the fleet (950 tons). Their outward cargoes were anchors, cannon, cordage, cheese, candles, wine, rum, and brandy, etc., etc., bringing home tea, silks, chinaware, cotton goods, flannels, spices, etc., etc. The value of the East India imports, in 1795, were \$311,910; in 1800, \$726,924; in 1804, \$887,000, and in 1806, \$662,200. The registered tonnage of the East India trade for the years 1800-1809, was nineteen one-hundredths of a ton to the inhabitant. Massachusetts alone exceeded this State by 0.37 ton to the inhabitant.

As to the slave trade, Rhode Island had profited by the importation of human flesh and the exportation of rum and other wet goods. The wealth of Newport, Providence and Bristol had been largely gained by the double profits of this sort of un-Christian barter. John Brown, the patriot of the "Gaspee" was one of the most successful of slave traders, and when instructed by the town council of Providence to support eman-

cipation declared it to be "a shallow policy." In 1797, Mr. Brown was prosecuted for a share in the Guinea trade, and begged to be let alone because "he had done with the trade now." Two years later as a member of the lower House of Congress he urged the repeal of all existing legislation against slavery; "for why," he asked, "should we see Great Britain getting all the slave trade to themselves."

The first years of the nineteenth century witnessed two great awakenings along lines of great consequence to the people, education and banking. Prior to the year 1800, Rhode Island had "never appropriated a dollar for public education." All the schools that had been established were private, supported by the recipients of their benefits. There were many zealous friends of public school systems, but the importance, the necessity of its establishment had not become generally felt by the people or their representatives in the General Assembly. In 1799, petitions entered the Assembly for a free school law, which were referred to a special committee. A bill was reported at the June session, 1799, which was printed and referred to the freemen of the State. In October, 1799, the House of Representatives passed the bill, which was concurred in by the Senate, at the February session of 1800. It met with great opposition in the Assembly, and the act was repealed, February, 1803. Providence, however, influenced by many intelligent and patriotic citizens, led by Hon. John Howland, a descendant of John Howland of the "Mayflower," and backed by the Providence Association of Mechanics and Manufacturers, had inaugurated a system of free schools in 1799, and in August, 1800, after the passage of the Public School Act, selected its first school committee with Jonathan Maxcy, president of Brown University, as its first chairman. On December 23, 1800, there were 988 pupils in the schools of four districts, costing the town for salaries \$3,200—about \$3.50 per pupil.

As a resultant of the agitation of public education, several academies were incorporated by the Assembly with provision like this:

Whereas, institutions of liberal education are highly beneficial to society by forming the rising generation to virtue, knowledge and useful literature and thus preserving a succession of men qualified for discharging the offices of life with usefulness and reputation, they have therefore, justly merited and received the public attention and encouragement of every wise, polished and well-regulated State.

Among the schools thus incorporated were the Pawtucket Academy, Westerly, the North Kingstown Academy, the Cumberland Academy, the Pawtuxet Academy, the Kent Academy, the Warwick West School Society, the Warwick Central School Society, the East Greenwich Seminary,

and the Warren Academy. These private academies were the instruments employed by its enemies to destroy the public school movement. It was but another form of the irrepressible conflict between the conservative farmers and the liberal merchants and manufacturers.

Banking and insurance also came to the front. Of banks, there were incorporated the Washington, at Westerly, the Bristol, the Exchange and Roger Williams, Providence, and the Newport. Of insurance companies were the Providence, the Warren, the Washington, the Bristol, the Providence Mutual Fire, the Newport, and the Rhode Island of Newport. Of turnpike companies were the Providence and Boston, the Rhode Island and Connecticut, the Rhode Island and Louisquissett Pike. These were the forerunners of the railroads, which came a half century later. Among other incorporated bodies were bridge companies; the Mount Vernon Lodge of Free and Accepted Masons; Newport Aqueduct for supplying the town with pure water; the Jeremiah Olney water works, Providence, for supplying the town with pure water through wooden pipes; the Society for Relief of Indigent Women and Children, Providence; St. Michael's Church, Bristol; and library societies in Glocester, Barrington and other towns. In 1800, two portraits of George Washington were ordered, which were done life size, by Gilbert Stuart, of South Kingstown, Rhode Island.

The long administration of Governor Fenner was terminated by his death, Oct. 15, 1805. His ardent support of the Constitution and of administrations of Washington and Jefferson united the Federalists in his support, and modified the opinions of his own party, bringing it into cordial support of the Federal government from whose principles and constitution as enacted, Rhode Island could not be turned. The new era of peaceful industry, of the planting of prosperous manufactures which aided the farmer in the field, the cotton planter on his plantation, the operative in his home and the merchant in his shop, was encouraged and heartened by the public policy and strong personality of this man of the people, whose great popularity no prejudice nor political clamor could overthrow. He was the peacemaker of his time and the later growth and prosperity of the commonwealth, unparalleled in many respects, is in large measure due to this man of strong mind, of clear vision, of practical statesmanship, of the genius to unite and weld divisive forces, Arthur Fenner.

JAMES FENNER—On the death of Governor Arthur Fenner, Lieutenant-Governor Paul Mumford served the State as Governor pro tem. Mr. Mumford was a native of Newport, and later a citizen of Barrington, Rhode Island. He was a devoted patriot during the period of the Revolution, a member of the Continental Congress, and of Colonial Commis-



sioners, Chief Justice of the Supreme Court, and Lieutenant-Governor from May, 1803, to October, 1805, and Acting Governor for a few months, himself dying in office and leaving its duties to Henry Smith, first senator.

At the election in April, 1806, there were four candidates for Governor with votes as follows: For Richard Jackson, Jr., 1,662; for Henry Smith, 1,097; for Peleg Arnold, 1,094; scattering, 6; total, 3,859. There was no choice and Isaac Wilbour, Lieutenant-Governor elect, became Acting Governor for the year 1806-1807. The issues at this election were national rather than local. The new era of industry had come, and politics became the game of ambitious politicians.

In 1807, only two candidates appear for Governor, Seth Wheaton, with 1,268 votes, and James Fenner, a Jeffersonian Democrat, with 2,564 votes, and 59 scattering. Governor Fenner had 1,237 majority, with 3,000 or more voters in the State who were too busy or too indifferent to go to the polls and vote. During the administration of Arthur Fenner, the State had been Federalist in politics. It now assumes the Democratic role.

James Fenner, the son of Governor Arthur Fenner, was born in Providence, Jan. 22, 1771, received a classical education, and graduated from Brown University, at the head of his class, in the summer of 1789, at the early age of eighteen. His father's great influence added to the son's abilities brought James early into public life. He was by nature a politician and, with his early bias to anti-Federalism, espoused the cause of the Jefferson administration and became a leading Democrat of the Jefferson school, at first called Republicans.

At all previous State elections the issues were local and related to matters of internal conditions and policy. As we have seen, home rule over home affairs was the law of Colonial action. On the adoption of the Federal Constitution, the broader area of national affairs occupies the vision and must influence the action of local political forces. At this period of our national life, two views were taken of the Constitution. On the one part, Washington and Adams looked upon that document as creating an indestructible nation from which no State or body of States could secede. On the other, Jefferson and his school, following the teachings and influences of the French Revolution, recognized the right of a State or States to separate themselves from the Federal Union on certain conditions. In fact Jefferson is accredited with the suggestive authorship of the doctrines of secession as attempted in Massachusetts and Connecticut, as expressed in the nullification proceedings of South Carolina, and as fought for and decided against, in the terrible contest for principle and nationality in the Civil War.



The fact that Mr. Fenner espoused the Jefferson politics as against Adams and the principles of national integrity, as outlined and affirmed by the great Federalist Chief Justice, John Marshall, does not make him any less a patriot, for at the time very loose opinions were current as to the real value of the Constitution as an instrument under which States of varying conditions might exist and not interfere with each other's prerogatives or independence.

Prior to his elevation to the chief magistracy, Mr. Fenner had represented his native town in the General Assembly, and so active and valuable a member had he become that he was elected to the United States Senate, serving in Congress from December 2, 1805, to 1807, when he was elected as Governor, and resigned his seat in the Senate for the State office.

On Mr. Fenner's accession to the governorship in May, 1807, President Jefferson was then serving his country on the third year of his second term. In the month of February previous, the President had sent to Congress the remarkable message for the creation of "an amphibious navy," composed of about 200 gunboats or flotillas, costing \$5,000 apiece, 50 of which were to defend the coast to the north of Cape Cod, 50 from Cape Cod to New York, and the other 100 to be stationed from the Hudson to the Mississippi. When Europe and the United States were at peace, only "six or eight of these vessels should be kept afloat." "At all times those unemployed would be withdrawn into places not exposed to sudden enterprise, hauled up under sheds from the sun and weather, and kept in preservation with little expense for repairs or maintenance."

The people of the State were now devoting themselves to the pursuits of peace, in agriculture, manufactures and commerce, with a strong educational revival moving the masses towards a public school system, which had been set in operation in a few of the towns. In the midst of a promised era of prosperity, the Embargo Act of 1797, amended in 1808, forbidding the clearing of merchant vessels from any port of the United States, except by special permit of President Jefferson, went into effect. This struck a vital blow at the infant commerce of Rhode Island. Its effect was most disastrous to our foreign trade. In a single year the national exports fell off from \$108,300,000 to \$22,400,000. In the large shipping towns, of which Providence was one, business of every kind fell off and soon utterly ceased. The rope-walks were deserted. The sail-makers were idle. The shipwrights and draymen had scarcely anything to do. Pitch and tar, hemp and flour, bacon, salt-fish and flaxseed became drugs upon the shippers' hands. But the greatest sufferers were the sailors. Farmers could not market their crops and many on account of purchase of lands and an increase of crops were forced into bankruptcy. The goods of merchants lay on their shelves unsold, and the mills stopped.

All labor was paralyzed and jails were filled with debtors. Add to home losses, the depredations of privateers on Rhode Island commerce on the high seas, and the picture is vividly portrayed of the desolation which came to a commercial State like Rhode Island. The people of the State, as in the Revolutionary days were alive and alert to the conditions and dangers of the time. The towns petitioned the General Assembly to take action against an act which "infringed upon the undeniable rights and privileges of the good people of Rhode Island." The General Assembly declared the act of January 9, "unjust, oppressive, tyrannical and unconstitutional," adjectives that sound mightily like those of 1765-1766, relative to a government across the sea. The Assembly declared that "the dissolution of the Union may be more surely and speedily effected by the systematic oppression of the Government as by the inconsiderate disobedience of the people." "It would be singular," the address continues, "if the people of this State so peculiarly and eminently commercial, should not deplore and deprecate the annihilation of its commerce."

An address was sent to Congress through our State delegation and to the States of Massachusetts, Connecticut and other maritime States, urging their coöperation in securing the repeal of a law so destructive to industry and obnoxious to the popular sense of right and justice. The repeal of the law came in 1809, prior to the close of the Jefferson administration, March 4, 1809.

While the year 1808 was one of great financial depression in Rhode Island, it was really the year of our industrial emancipation from foreign markets for manufactured goods. Our merchantmen had brought to Rhode Island the products of labor from every land that produced anything that could be sold in our market, from the silks, satins and laces of India to the shoes and jack-knives of England. Now that the Embargo and Non-Intercourse Acts had suspended the importation of foreign manufactures and inasmuch as England and France had suicidally shut out our markets from their export trade, Rhode Islanders at once turned attention to home products, and factories for the making of all sorts of goods sprang up within our borders—cotton, woolen, iron, hardware—everything that labor and ingenuity could devise and make. The people were quick to seize the opportunity, which necessity had thrown in their way, and what seemed the most destructive condition became the most opportune relief. Out of these adverse trials came our triumph as a manufacturing State. Labor and capital unitedly became the factors in making Rhode Island, in the lapse of years, the busiest, the wealthiest and the most populous State in the Union, per capita.

While industries sprang into being in these years of the Fenner administration we find banks, schools, turnpikes and other aids to progress

established as during the last years of his father, Governor Arthur Fenner. In 1808, the Providence School Society, the Smithfield, the Westminster, the Scituate, were organized and incorporated; the Aquidneck and Rhode Island Coal Companies came into being; and in February, 1811, the Water Society of Providence for drainage and sewerage was incorporated.

At the spring election of 1811, party issues turned on the pivot of the national foreign policy, Governor Fenner standing for the Jeffersonian party as represented by President Madison, and William Jones, the candidate of the Federals. Governor Jones was elected by a majority of 172.

After an interval of thirteen years, including the administrations of Governors Jones, Knight, and Gibbs, Governor Fenner was returned to the chief magistracy by a large majority of the freemen voting at the April election of 1824; Wheeler Martin had 594 votes to 2,146 for Fenner, with 11 scattering. With a voting population of more than 10,000 freemen qualified to cast their ballots, it would be difficult to account for the meagre vote, did we not know that the country as a whole was in the midst of "the era of good feeling," which extended from 1818 to 1828. The administration of President Monroe had extinguished party spirit and the nation was rapidly forging ahead on lines of industrial progress.

The principal element entering the political arena of the period from 1816 to 1840 was the restriction on importation of foreign goods by the various tariff schedules, which were in general opposed by the Southern States and in the main favored by the North. Rhode Island manufacturers approved of the various degrees of tariff from that for revenue in 1816, to the act of 1828, which was the high water mark of the protective system before the Civil War. At first New England was divided on tariff legislation and even Daniel Webster stood on both sides of the debate line of a high protective policy.

As might be expected our increasingly valuable textile manufactures and trade led Rhode Island to take her place in the protective column, with Pennsylvania with her great iron and coal interests at the top, and Henry Clay, of Kentucky, the great national champion of the tariff-for-protection policy.

As we have already seen, Samuel Slater in 1789 built a cotton mill at Pawtucket, Rhode Island, by the aid of Moses Brown's capital, and equipped it with textile machinery, constructed entirely from memory. Cotton manufacture in the United States dates from that event. The introduction of the power-loom in 1814 by Francis C. Lowell gave a wonderful impetus to the textile industries; with the evolution of textile machines and the consequent increase in production, came the first movements of the great revolution in labor, springing out of the factory system. A visit to the Slater mill of 1789, would have witnessed 72

spindles and three cording machines. A visit in 1830, would have shown a mule spinner, carrying 3,000 spindles, operated by a single person, who could by the aid of the machine accomplish as much as 3,000 girls spinning by hand a single thread at a time on the old-time spinning wheel. The fall of prices in cotton cloth was great. "In 1815, when cotton cloth was still woven chiefly by hand, the family weaver finishing only four yards of cloth a day, the price of ordinary cloth for sheeting was 40 cents a yard. In 1822 it had fallen to 22 cents a yard, and in 1829 to 8½ cents." Thus a machine in a Rhode Island cotton mill, doing the work of three thousand persons, disturbs the old equilibrium of labor, and cheapens production for the people, opening the great economic question of the relation of labor to capital, to raw material, and to the finished product.

While the protective tariff was "the live wire" of Rhode Island politics during Governor Fenner's second administration, the act which reflects most credit upon it and may be justly regarded the most important and far reaching was the establishment of free schools throughout the State. This event was *the* act of the General Assembly at its January session of 1828. Providence, Newport and several other towns had already taken the lead in the matter and had provided for the primary education of all its children. Beyond this, most of the large towns had established and maintained private academies or high schools which were supported by tuition charges, paid wholly by the parents of the pupils, who were usually of the well-to-do class of people. A report of the condition of education in Rhode Island at this time enumerates 17 academies, nearly 200 other private schools, and 181 other schools for the education of 35,843 (estimated) under 16 years of age. It is probable that this number is much too large, as the population of the State was only about 100,000. The act of 1828, provided school privileges for all the children, including especially those not already under proper or regular instruction. In some quarters there was much prejudice against the education of the children of the poorer classes and the schools established by this act were in obloquy entitled "charity schools." The free school act of 1828 appropriated \$10,000 to be distributed to the towns according to school population, or children under 16 years of age, each town being limited to raise by tax on all the people only double the amount received from the State treasury. This limit was not strictly adhered to. School committees, elected by the towns, from five to twenty-one in number, were to have the control of the funds and schools. The sources of the State funds were the license taxes on lotteries and on auctioneers. The bill passed the Senate without a dissenting vote and the House, after an able and protracted discussion, by a vote of 57 in favor to 2 against.

The free school act was followed by an act fixing the license on foreign lotteries at one per cent. on the sales. Prior to April 1, 1828, the amount received in the treasury from lottery agents and auctioneers was \$5,538.10. In June, 1828, the first railroad charter was granted to Massachusetts to build a road from Boston to Providence. It was, however, repealed in 1831. In February, 1830, the freemen of Providence refused to be incorporated as a city. In the same year, the Assembly incorporated academies, libraries and turnpikes and passed resolutions in favor of John Quincy Adams for President and in support of Henry Clay and his protective policy. In 1830, the Providence Bar Library was incorporated, and an act was passed regulating lotteries, the feeders of the funds for public education.

From 1825 to 1830, Governor Fenner was elected with little opposition. At the spring election of 1830, Asa Messer, president of Brown University, was a candidate against him, polling 1,455 votes to 2,793 for Fenner, with 266 scattering. In 1831, Governor Fenner was opposed by Lemuel H. Arnold, and was defeated by 859 majority for Arnold. Governor Fenner lays down the staff of office at the end of the second period of magisterial labors, only to take it up again after an interim of twelve years.

WILLIAM JONES was born in Newport, Oct. 8, 1753. His grandfather came from Wales, and his father was an officer in the famous vessel "The Duke of Marlborough." He received a fair education, and in January, 1776, was commissioned a lieutenant in the Colonial service, in the war of the Revolution. He was promoted to the captaincy in September, 1776, and with his regiment joined Washington's army at Harlem, took part in the battle of White Plains, was with the army in its retreat through New Jersey, and on January 2, 1777, helped to win the victory at the bridge of Assanpink. In February, Jones accepted a commission as captain of marines on board the "Providence," 28 guns, a frigate in command of Abraham Whipple. On the ratification of the treaty with France, Capt. Jones carried despatches to the United States Commissioners at Paris. On the return of the frigate to American waters, she captured nine ships and one brig off Newfoundland and on August 21, 1779, brought eight of them to the port of Boston. On May 12, 1780, he was made a prisoner of war at Charleston, South Carolina, being then on garrison duty, and was released on parole. On his return to Providence, Capt. Jones entered upon a mercantile business in which he continued for the rest of his life. In 1788, he became a freeman of the Colony, and in 1807 was elected to the General Assembly from Providence, continuing by annual election until 1811, and was speaker of the House during 1809 and 1810.

In the spring of 1811, Mr. Jones was made the candidate of the Federal party for Governor against Governor James Fenner, Democrat. The vote stood Jones 3,885, Fenner 3,651, scattering 62. Total vote 7,598. Governor Jones' majority 172.

Rhode Island was unitedly opposed to the War of 1812. At the May session of the General Assembly of that year a series of resolutions were unanimously adopted by that body, "deprecating war at all times and especially when the pecuniary resources of the country have been exhausted and cut off both by the depredations and sequestrations of foreign powers, and by our own ruinous commercial restrictions;" and setting forth in clear and vigorous English the importance and value of our commercial interests, our unprotected coast, and the financial weakness of the State to meet the unusual expenses of war. Our Senators and Representatives in Congress were instructed to use their utmost endeavors to cause the removal of restrictions on our commerce, to prevent the passing of the proposed laws for imposing direct taxes and to oppose all measures tending to involve the country in war. The delegates were also instructed to set forth the unprotected condition of our seaboard State and the necessity of prompt measures for its protection. At the same session an act was passed for raising the militia quota of this State ordered by Congress to the number of five hundred men.

On July 7, 1812, a special session of the General Assembly was held at Newport at the call of Governor Jones to take action on the President's message and the act of Congress declaring war against Great Britain. In his message to the two Houses he deplored the grave condition of affairs, especially as related to the exposed parts of the State, and lays before them a letter from the Secretary of War giving the command of the State quota of troops to Maj. Dearborn and requesting the Governor to order the troops to Newport to be mustered into the United States service.

The Assembly acted on the message by appointing a council of war of six persons to advise and assist his excellency in the discharge and exercise of his duties. The militia of the State was placed in the control of the Governor, and he was authorized to call on the general government for protection, arms, etc. At the October session of the Assembly, Governor Jones presented a vigorous message giving a full account of the demands made by Maj.-Gen. Dearborn on the State for arms and troops, and the negligence of the government to attend to the request, amounting as it did to a refusal. The Governor also presented the following questions to be answered by the Assembly: "*Whether the militia of this State can be withdrawn from the authority thereof by the President of the United States, except in the particular cases provided for by the Constitution of the United States? And when the militia are called for by the*



*President of the United States, who is to be the judge whether those exigencies exist or not?"* To these questions the Council of War decided unanimously that the militia of the State could not be withdrawn and also that the "executive of the State must and of right ought to be the judge."

Before the close of the session a most remarkable report of the Special Committee on the Governor's Message was adopted by both Houses. It rehearsed the demand of the Governor for two thousand stand of small arms from the general government and declares the refusal a violation and evasion of law; that the letters of Gen. Dearborn in reply to the Governor, "furnish but too much evidence of the imbecility and infirmities of their writers;" that the statement of the Secretary of War "was entirely erroneous;" that the "executive officers of the United States have manifested a total indifference and disregard to the interests and security of the people of this State and have withdrawn from them that protection to which they are entitled by the Constitution, and by the resources drawn from this State towards the support of the government." These and other charges against the government constitute a strong indictment of the administration, which had so slightly treated the demands of the State, through its executive.

At the February session, Governor Jones presented a message relating to the needs of the State for arms and ammunition, and urged the State to make provision for a supply at once. He commended the excellent discipline of the State militia and trusts "they will with promptitude and bravery stand forth in defence of their religious, civil and maritime rights." He closes his message, while deprecating the war, with "the hope that the citizens of Rhode Island will never tarnish their character by any measures subversive of the spirit of the Constitution of the United States, or the laws of this State in union therewith."

In May, 1813, the General Assembly made another strong appeal to President Madison in behalf of the defenceless condition of the State. It declares "that for nearly a year we have been at war with a powerful enemy. Our coast and harbors have been visited with their ships; our coasting trade annihilated, and our vessels burnt and destroyed on our shores." The exposure of Newport and the towns on the Bay, the fortifications at Newport and the provision of the United States government "for the common defence" are urged with unusual force.

At the June session of the Assembly, Governor Jones again assails the administration for its inaction and inattention to Rhode Island, and declares that "there does not appear a solitary hope of our being placed in any adequate state of defence by the United States," a sentiment which is repeated and endorsed by a legislative committee and by the



Assembly itself. At the same session, a committee was appointed to make a complete account of all moneys expended by the State in local defence during the war, in order that a claim may be made for an equal amount from the general government.

The thirteen banks of the State made reports of their condition, of which a summary is made. Bills in circulation, \$769,922; specie, \$536,837; deposits, \$1,092,254; debts due the banks, \$2,486,573; deposited in other banks, \$329,029; specie deposited in other banks, \$135,637. This was a good showing for a period of thirteen years since the incorporation of the first bank in Providence in 1791.

On September 16, 1813, occurred the battle of Lake Erie, fought by Commodore Oliver Hazard Perry, a Rhode Island born and trained naval officer.

At the February session of the Assembly of 1814, Governor Jones deplores the war and the unprotected condition of the State, and a committee on the message, consisting of two senators and three representatives, recommend the appointment of a special committee to make inquiry: "First, in what spirit the Constitution has been administered; second, what encroachments have been made on the rights of the State; third, what protective measures the State may take to protect its citizens from arbitrary encroachments and violation of rights."

At the May session of the Assembly, 1814, Governor Jones congratulates the people on the prospects of peace, and shows his loyalty to the Constitution in these words: "We shall pay constitutional obedience to the national government and do what in us lies to support and preserve the union of the States, and to transmit to our children our rights and liberties unimpaired." An act was passed for the defence of the State, and a delegate was appointed to proceed to Washington to present our condition before the general government.

In September, Governor Jones' message is a Jeremiad on the war and its terrible consequences, declaring that "the energies of the nation are wasting in a vain attempt to conquer a neighboring province, while the army is desolating the Atlantic frontier with fire and sword; and to fill up the measure of our humiliation, has taken the city of Washington, and destroyed the halls of Congress."

In 1815, the message of the Governor rejoices in the coming of peace and the return of the people to normal conditions of trade. A bit of legislation in 1815 partakes of the nature of the Blue Laws in the form of an act to prevent the passing of carriages through the streets adjacent to the houses of public worship in said town (Providence) on Sunday during the time of divine service.

In 1816, the State legislation along the lines of executive approval were the redemption of the State debt, the revision of the judicial system, the encouragement of domestic industries and manufacturing, and improvement in matters pertaining to education and religion. The same session saw an act constituting the town councils of the several towns as boards of health. In February, 1817, the Assembly revises the penal code and the judiciary, and the legal rate of interest is fixed at six per cent. At the same session, the Providence Library Society was incorporated. At the election of 1816, Governor Jones had a strong adversary on the Democratic platform in Nehemiah R. Knight, the Governor's majority being only 332. At the May election, Mr. Knight again entered the field, and so close was the election that the Federal Governor was defeated by a majority of only 68, so even were the two parties in voting strength.

Governor Jones was a Christian gentleman and patriot of the old school, fond of the pursuits of peace, and sincerely devoted to Rhode Island interests. He was an ardent Federalist, a man of the most courtly manners, and of the best type of honor and political integrity.

"He stood four square to all the winds that blew."

NEHEMIAH RICE KNIGHT, Governor of Rhode Island from 1817 to 1821, and United States Senator, was born in Cranston, Rhode Island, Dec. 31, 1780. His father, Nehemiah Knight, was a farmer and a politician of the Anti-Federalist school, who represented Rhode Island in the lower House of Congress from 1803 to 1808. Educated on the farm with little time devoted to schools, young Knight showed ability and taste for public life very early and at the age of twenty-two was chosen to represent his native town in the General Assembly. The same year he removed to Providence and in 1805 was elected clerk of the Court of Common Pleas, holding that office until 1811, when the Federal party came into power. From June, 1812, to 1817, he was clerk of the District Circuit Court, a government appointment under the Madison administration. For some time, during the War of 1812 with Great Britain, Mr. Knight served as Collector of Internal Revenue for the district of Rhode Island, having been nominated by President Madison and confirmed by the Senate before he had an intimation that his appointment was under consideration. He filled the office with efficiency and resigned it on his election to the governorship. In 1817, he was elected president of the Roger Williams Bank, and the same year defeated Governor Jones, the vote standing: Knight 3,949, Jones 3,878, scattering 3; Knight's majority 68.

Governor Knight served the State with satisfaction to his constituents, and with honor to himself and the State. Four years of this long period were under the Monroe administration, four under John Quincy

Adams, eight under Andrew Jackson and four under Martin Van Buren. During Governor Knight's term of service, Rhode Island had swung from the Democratic to the Whig party. This change was due to the growth of her manufacturing interests, for which capitalists sought government protection. The first tariff bill was enacted on the Democratic principle of taxation for revenue only. In 1824, this bill was revised to cover both revenue and protection and passed both Houses of Congress by small majorities. At first the New England States joined the South on the Democratic basis of revenue, Mr. Webster, of Massachusetts, opposing the protective feature even as late as 1824. In 1828, the New England States aligned themselves with Pennsylvania and the Western States in favor of the protective policy for labor and capital, and Rhode Island Senators and Representatives in Congress stood squarely with the policy of the Whig party on the tariff question. At home in Rhode Island, Mr. Knight represented the manufacturing interests in opposition to Hon. Elisha R. Potter, who represented the tariff-for-revenue Democracy.

In 1841, Governor Knight voluntarily retired to private life, having served his State for forty years with great ability, fidelity and public benefit. His only appearance in State politics later, was in 1843 in the convention which framed the State Constitution. Until his death in 1854, his term was devoted to his own private interests, continuing to be held in high honor for his noble character and service. His eulogist declares, "he was mild as a partisan, firm in his friendship and true to his conviction of duty."

On the death of Hon. James Burrill, United States Senator from Rhode Island in 1821, Governor Knight was unanimously elected to fill the vacancy by this legislature. In 1823 he was reelected for a term of six years, over Elisha R. Potter, by one majority, and in 1828 was again unanimously elected for another term, and again in 1835 he was elected to succeed himself by the National Republican or Whig party, with which Governor Knight became identified in the reorganization which followed Madison's administration. In this election, Governor Knight received 41 votes to 38 for his opponent, Hon. Elisha R. Potter, of South Kingstown. During a period of over twenty years in the United States Senate he fulfilled the duties of his office with great satisfaction to his constituents and with honor to himself and the State.

WILLIAM C. GIBBS—The Gibbs family belongs to early Massachusetts Colony history, the first emigrants coming from England and settling in Salem in 1665. Of a later generation was George Gibbs, who removed from Massachusetts to New York; and his son George took up his residence in Newport soon after the Revolutionary War. He seems to have

been a mechanic, as the first reference to him in the Colonial records is the payment of £300, lawful money, to George Gibbs for repairing the State House. This work on the Newport Capitol seems to be the nearest to legislative business that the father of William Channing Gibbs ever performed. In 1785, Mr. George Gibbs was requested to purchase a bell for the State House, not to exceed 600 pounds in weight, for the use of a clock. That he was interested in Trinity Episcopal Church, Newport, is evident from the fact that he was the chairman of a lottery committee for raising "one thousand five hundred silver dollars," to repair the church edifice which had gone into decay during the war, to pave the lane and to build a fence around the yard. In 1792, Mr. George Gibbs is an incorporator of the Newport Association of Mechanics and Manufacturers, all of which is abundant evidence that the son William was not the scion of aristocracy and that he was not born with a silver spoon in his mouth. Brown University gave the father the degree of A. M. in 1800, and Yale University conferred the same honorary title in 1808; evidently a man of good education and ability. He died in 1833.

William Channing Gibbs was born in Newport, receiving the best education the town could afford. He was a representative from Newport in the General Assembly during the years when that town was recovering from the terrible destruction of the British occupation, and while Providence was forging ahead in commercial enterprise checked by the embargo of 1807, and the War of 1812. These business operations, in turn, were surrendered to the new measures for manufacturing cotton goods. Between 1805 and 1815, the cotton spindles of Rhode Island increased from 4,000 to 134,588, operated by 26,000 workmen, and transforming 29,000 bales of cotton into 27,840,000 yards of cloth. Foreign trade after the war brought in cheap foreign goods, and at once Rhode Island demanded a protective tariff to guard its infant industries.

To meet the financial conditions of the times, banks were needed to provide capital and in 1819, the State had thirty banking institutions, and to connect the mills with the market at Providence, between 1803 and 1842, thirty-six turnpike companies were incorporated, the avenues of rapid transit of that day. Academies sprang up in all parts of the State to meet the increasing call for education and a free school act was passed in 1828, furnishing a small measure of education for the children of all the people. The State, which had been Federal and Anti-Federal by turn until the governorship of Mr. Knight, now made and endorsed the platform of the Whig party with its main plank, a protective tariff, having for its able defender in the national House of Representatives, Tristram Burgess, the "bald eagle" of Rhode Island and the easy antagonist of John Randolph, of Virginia, in argument, wit, or satire.

At the spring election of 1821, the two gubernatorial candidates were William C. Gibbs, of Newport, and Samuel W. Bridgham, of Providence, the former polling 3,801 votes and the latter (including scattering) 2,801, a majority of 1,000 for Governor Gibbs. One of the most important measures before the people of the State was the proposal to hold a convention to form a written Constitution, to take the place of the Royal Charter under which the people had lived since 1663. Under it, the property qualification for voting had limited the suffrage to a small portion of the citizens of the State, and the struggle was now well under way for a freer and fuller suffrage. A proposition to appoint delegates to form a written Constitution for the State was rejected by the freemen by a vote of 1,619 yeas to 1,905 nays. In 1822 a similar proposition came before the freeholders, but their conservatism was expressed by the vote of 843 yeas to 1,804 nays, and the suffrage reform bill was laid under the table again. Again in 1824, the matter of a new Constitution engaged the attention of the people. A convention to frame a new Constitution was authorized in January, 1824. The convention met at Newport in June, 1824. A Constitution was framed and submitted to the people to be voted on in October of that year. This Constitution was rejected by the freemen by the emphatic vote of 1,668 yeas and 3,206 nays.

In June, 1821, a committee was raised to enquire into the state of education, the number of schools, the branches taught, length of schools in months, expense of tuition, number of pupils, number and condition of school houses, by whom owned and kept in repair, and any other information as to public and private education. This act was leading towards a system of public education which followed in 1828. In October, the Assembly endorsed the Maryland resolutions in favor of devoting the proceeds of the public lands for education, with an added recommendation that it should be bestowed on the States in proportion to the exertions and sacrifices of the individual States in the Revolutionary War.

The first Universalist Society of Providence was incorporated with the proviso, "that no subscription to any creed, article of faith or covenant shall ever be required of others by those who meet for public worship, \* \* \* each individual having free and perfect liberty to give that meaning to the scriptures of the Old and New Testament which shall best accord with his or her own understanding of the same."

In January, 1822, an act was passed to prevent the sale of spirituous liquors in the public highways and streets or in open or inclosed fields, within one mile of a meeting or an assembly of people for the worship of God.

An act was passed to prevent cows going at large in certain frequented streets of Providence, except during the night and on Sundays.

The compensation of the members of the House of Representatives was fixed at \$1.50 for each day of actual attendance.

Turnpike companies were authorized to construct roads with toll gates, between Providence and Douglas, Connecticut, Wickford and Pawcatuck, Foster and Scituate, and in Smithfield.

The Rhode Island Historical Society was incorporated in 1822.

Banks were incorporated in Johnston, Burrillville, Pawtucket, Smithfield, Cumberland, Bristol and Providence.

Baptist churches were chartered in Smithfield, Providence and other towns. A water society for drainage of Providence was established in 1822.

The Rhode Island Society for the Encouragement of Domestic Industry entered upon its important work in 1823, and the Blackstone Canal Company to construct a canal along the Blackstone River from Providence to Worcester, was incorporated that year with Nicholas Brown, Edward Carrington, Thomas P. Ives as leaders in the project—a great one of that day.

The Baptist Education Society came into being in 1823, and the Rhode Island Domestic Missionary Society, the same year. The Franklin Society of Providence, was chartered in 1823. Thus during the three years of Governor Gibbs' administration banking facilities were established in several rural communities. The Blackstone Canal project was started, turnpikes made agriculture and domestic commerce more thriving, academies in out districts added school privileges, education as a public measure was practically considered, churches were multiplied, temperance was encouraged, and societies for industry, science and missions were chartered and fostered.

More than this, the limited democracy of the State was undergoing a change, by which the popular will was registered as to a State Constitution built on the national principle of equal rights for all. A peaceful reign with no remarkable features to excite attention may seem almost fruitless, but in reality the growth of civil and religious freedom and of large commercial, industrial and social changes may find its fullest fruition in such a period.

Governor Gibbs was later major-general of the Rhode Island militia. He died in Newport in 1871, at the ripe age of 81 years.

LEMUEL H. ARNOLD descended from that Thomas Arnold who came to America in the ship "Plain Joan," in 1635; settled at Watertown, Massachusetts, was made a freeman of that Colony in 1640; came to Providence in 1661, and in 1665 built his house on what is now North Main street, Providence, Rhode Island. From him has sprung a descent which has



made itself famous in the annals of the State. Among them may be named Col. Jonathan Arnold, author of the Rhode Island Declaration of Independence; Samuel G. Arnold, Lieutenant-Governor, United States Senator, Soldier and Historian; and the subject of this sketch.

Lemuel was born in the year 1792, in St. Johnsbury, Vermont, whither his father had gone in the settlement of that State, and graduated from Dartmouth College, in 1811. He studied law with his brother-in-law, James Burrill, Jr., in Providence, and was admitted to the bar in 1814, but did not practice, having decided to engage in a mercantile life. He was elected to the lower House of the General Assembly in 1826, and with the exception of one year was a representative from the town of Providence, until 1831, when he was elected Governor of the State, holding the office for two years, until 1833.

It is difficult at this remove to find other than personal ambitions and popular considerations entering into the election of Governor Arnold, who although a brilliant young man, found a formidable competitor in his rival, Governor Fenner. Politically, Rhode Island was a strong tariff protection State, and all party leaders stood with the agricultural and manufacturing industries in support of this policy.

In addition to the increase in church and academy corporations, the following noteworthy projects were subjects of incorporation. In June, 1831, the Providence Athenaeum was incorporated. Two lotteries were authorized for the benefit of the public schools, each to pay \$10,000 into the State Treasury, in addition to which town councils were given power to license domestic lotteries.

A State printer was appointed and the Assembly repealed the Massachusetts railroad act of 1830, and at the October session incorporated the Providence and Boston Railroad Company. The school age was changed from 16 to 15 years. Growing out of the inefficiency of the authorities of the town of Providence in the Olney Street riot, an act was passed incorporating Providence as a city, the act going into operation in 1832.

Females were exempted from imprisonment for debt on claims not exceeding \$50. The Providence Aqueduct Company was incorporated. A special committee was raised to investigate Free Masonry "on account of crimes and enormities committed in a neighboring State by certain free masons, avowedly in the cause of Masonry, having excited universal indignation and abhorrence."

At the January session of the Assembly of 1832, another lottery was legalized which gave the right to citizens of New York to fleece the pockets of the good people of the State by the payment of \$10,000 of their ill-gotten gains into the treasury for the support of free schools—not the



first time in the history of the State when men "stole the livery of Heaven to serve the Devil in."

Our Senators in Congress were instructed and our Representatives were requested to use their influence at Washington "to provide for the protection of national industry, in relation to all articles of the growth or produce of the soil or mines or of the manufactures of the United States, and especially to prevent the reduction of the duties on any kind of wool and woollen goods and to increase the duties on every kind of woollen goods imported into the United States.

At the May session of the Assembly a protest was made by resolution as to the reduction of the tariff as recommended by the United States Secretary of the Treasury.

At the June session a lottery was authorized to New York parties for which \$10,000 was to be paid to the State Treasurer for the benefit of public schools. The Providence Steamboat Company, the Phenix Iron Foundry, the New York, Providence and Boston Railroad Company, and the Rhode Island and Connecticut Railroad Company were incorporated.

At the January session of the Assembly it was resolved that the principle of protection to domestic industry was permanent and settled and was essential and vital to the interests of Rhode Island and to the great body of all the people of all the States for the following reasons:

1. The protective policy in trade had become interwoven with our commerce with foreign nations and a change of national policy would be destructive of all branches of national industry.

2. Alterations in the tariff will bring ruin to manufactures and destroy the stability of markets for agriculture.

3. All branches of national industry are now arrayed, contracts made, and voyages projected on basis of tariff of 1832.

4. Without a countervailing policy all branches of industry will be paralyzed.

At the annual election in 1832 James Fenner was a leading candidate against Arnold. There was no election for Governor, Lieutenant-Governor, or Senators. The vote stood Arnold 2,711, Fenner 2,283, and William Sprague 592. Another election was ordered by the House on May 16, with no choice for the same officers, Arnold receiving 3,310 votes, Fenner 2,954, and Sprague 709. Another election was ordered July 18, which resulted in no election as before, Arnold receiving 2,721 votes, Fenner 2,341 and Sprague 792. Another election was held August 28, result: no choice as before. Arnold receiving 3,100 votes, Fenner 2,747, and Sprague 976. Another election was held November 21; result: no election, Arnold receiving 2,870 votes, Fenner 2,226 and Sprague 811.

At the January session of the Assembly, the officers not elected were declared hold-overs, and were continued in office till the April election of 1833, when John Brown Francis was elected Governor by a vote of 4,025 over Governor Arnold, who received a vote of 3,272.

During the Dorr Rebellion, Governor Arnold was one of the Executive Council of the State party. Having changed his residence to South Kingstown, he was elected to Congress in 1845, serving one term. He died June 7, 1852. The "Providence Journal," in reviewing Governor Arnold's career, said:

In every public station to which he has been called, even his political enemies have accorded him an honesty of purpose, a soundness of judgment and a firmness in adherence to the right rarely equalled. At the close of an active political life, we doubt if he has left behind him one who questions the integrity and patriotism of his motives.

JOHN BROWN FRANCIS, son of John and Abby (Brown) Francis, was born in Philadelphia, May 31, 1791. This is not an old Rhode Island family nor has it any other distinguished member in the history of the State, although it has honorable connections in Connecticut and other States, and an honorable English ancestry. His mother was Abby Brown, daughter of John Brown, the hero of the "Gaspee," and of later fame. On the death of his father in Providence, whither the family had removed from Philadelphia, young Francis received the fostering care of his grandfather, John Brown, the great merchant, legislator and patriot of Providence. He prepared for college at the University grammar school and graduated from Brown University in the class of 1808, two of whom won national fame, William L. Marcy and Dutee J. Pearce. He studied business pursuits with the house of Brown and Ives, and law at Litchfield, Connecticut, after which he devoted several years to the care of the large Philadelphia estate, left him by his grandfather. On the death of his mother, he took up his residence at Spring Green, Warwick, the country seat of the family in Rhode Island. Mr. Francis represented the town of Warwick in the House of Representatives, from 1821 to 1829, and in the Senate in 1831, and at the April election of 1833 defeated Governor Arnold by a majority of 749. Governor Francis had been a member of the Federal party and now allied himself with the Whigs, who were now coming into power. He was nominated for Governor by the Jacksonians and the Anti-Masons.

The "Providence Journal," edited by Hon. Henry B. Anthony, a political enemy, spoke as follows of Governor Francis on his death in August, 1864:

No man could be more truly respected by the people of the State than Governor Francis. But we doubt if any other was so endeared to them. They felt instinctively that he was their friend. Yet no man was further from the practice of any of the arts of seeking popularity. The genial frankness and warmth and heartiness of his generous nature had an irresistible attractiveness. He had an unusually fine and commanding presence. His manners were courtly and dignified, though cordial. He was in the truest sense and in the fullest and best significance of the time a gentleman. His conversation was unusually rich in anecdotes and reminiscences of public men of the last generation. His quick, warm sympathies and his power of drawing readily from the treasury of his well-stored memory made him one of the most agreeable companions.

WILLIAM SPRAGUE—The first Governor William Sprague inherited the elements of a strong character from his parents, William and Anne (Potter) Sprague, having been born in Cranston, Rhode Island, Nov. 3, 1789. He was educated to the business of a manufacturer and in 1836, on the death of his father, united with his brother Amasa, in the firm of A. & W. Sprague in the making and printing of calicoes, established by their father, some years before. The two brothers built up a large business which under their management and that of their sons became the largest of its class in the world.

William Sprague took an active interest in the politics of the town and the State and as a manufacturer naturally allied himself with the Whigs on tariff issues, although a Democrat. He was elected a member of the General Assembly from the town of Cranston and his natural abilities and leadership made him the Speaker of the House of Representatives from October, 1832, to May, 1835.

At an election for Representatives in Congress in August, 1835, Mr. Sprague received 3,924 votes, Democrat, to 3,659 votes cast for Henry Y. Cranston, the Whig candidate. As Mr. Sprague employed a large number of men in his mills, his position gave him the control of a large voting clientele. At the same election, Hon. Tristram Burgess, a Whig, who had represented the State in the lower House of Congress since 1825, was defeated by Dutee J. Pearce, a Democrat, by a majority of 125 votes. This contest was the last in which Mr. Burgess appeared as a candidate for political position in national affairs.

In May, 1838, Mr. Sprague was a candidate for Governor against Governor John Brown Francis, who had held the office for five years, and was elected by a majority of 381 in a total vote of 7,587. The legislation of the General Assembly during the single year of Governor Sprague's administration, related to laws regulating the government and management of the internal affairs of the Narragansett tribe of Indians; a revision of the laws relating to public education; an act licensing the sale



GOV. WM. SPRAGUE



of rum, wine, and strong liquors; a geological and agricultural survey of the State was ordered; a lottery was authorized for the alleged benefit of the public schools to the amount of \$9,000; three railroad commissioners were appointed; and imprisonment for debt was modified to relieve insolvent debtors, furnishing bonds.

The legislation on national affairs took the form of a strong resolution against the admission of Texas as a State in the Federal Union. Adverse action had been taken at the October session of the General Assembly of 1837. The matter came up at the June session of the Assembly, on a communication from the State of Alabama asking Rhode Island to give its assent. The Assembly voted "that every approach to a project so inevitably subversive of the present Union and Constitution of the United States as would be, if successful, a project to introduce any foreign states or territories into this union as constituent members thereof, ought to be watched and guarded against with unrelaxed vigilance and firmness."

At the spring election of 1839, Governor Sprague was a candidate, opposed by Nathaniel Bullock and Tristram Burgess. There was no election, Sprague having 2,908 votes, Bullock 2,771, and Burgess 457, with 57 scattering. Samuel Ward King, first Senator, acted as Governor, and succeeded himself by three annual elections, until 1843.

In 1842, a vacancy occurred in the representation of the State in the United States Senate, by the death of Hon. Nathan F. Dixon, and Governor Sprague was a candidate and was elected by a vote of 44 for Sprague, 24 for Governor Lemuel H. Arnold, and 12 scattering. He served for two years in the United States Senate, when he resigned on account of the death of his brother, which threw the weight of the business on his capable shoulders. He now devoted his energies to the supervision of the factories and calico works which had grown to colossal proportions under the management of his brother Amasa, who met his death by murder in 1844. He died October 19, 1856.

SAMUEL WARD KING, descended from an old Massachusetts family, his ancestor, Clement King, being an inhabitant of Marshfield, Massachusetts, in 1669, and removing to Providence in 1687. Through Clement, John, Josiah and William B., Samuel Ward was born, May 23, 1786, in Johnston, Rhode Island, and died at Providence, Jan. 20, 1851. His mother was Welthian Walton, of Warwick. At the age of twenty-six, Samuel married Catharine L. Angell, of North Providence, a descendant of Thomas Angell, one of the companions of Mr. Williams in his canoe trip to Moshassuck, in 1636.

Samuel Ward King was a physician and surgeon, serving in that capacity in the War of 1812, including a cruise in a privateer. Of his thirteen children, six died in early childhood. A daughter, Catharine Maria, who married Bailey W. Evans, of Providence, born in 1829, died at the age of eighty-eight.

Dr. King was not a professional politician. His first entrance in public affairs was through his election to the Senate of Rhode Island, from the town of Johnston, in 1838. At the annual election, in 1839, the votes for Governor stood as follows: William Sprague 2,908, Nathaniel Bullock 2,771, Tristram Burgess 457, scattering 37. As there was no choice for Governor, Samuel Ward King, first Senator, acted as Governor. The following year, 1840, Governor King was elected Governor by a majority of 1,311 over Gen. Thomas F. Carpenter. In 1841, Governor King's majority was 2,585. In 1842, he was elected by a majority of 2,648 over Gen. Carpenter.

It may be stated that under the Royal Charter, in 1842, the suffrage for Governor and other State officers was limited to those holding real property of the value of \$134. To understand the situation at this remarkable crisis, known as the "Dorr War" or the "Dorr Rebellion," the reader is referred to the chapter on "The Dorr War." Party strife ran high between the "Algerines," as the "Law and Order" party was known, and the "Dorrites," or full suffragists. The contest at the polls was little short of mob violence. Personal animosities and political feuds found expression in sharp words and at some voting places in sharp blows. Civil war, not limited to State boundaries, seemed unescapable. Governor King was the man suited to the hour, to avert the threatening outbreak of political passion and personal hatreds, gendered by a long debate and by seeming ineffectual attempts to secure democratic suffrage over aristocratic dominance. The "Law and Order" party saw the handwriting of a freer ballot on the walls of their political temple, and none were readier to admit the popular clamor as the call for a great change, than were Governor King and his associates. His firm but conciliatory policy was most remarkable and efficacious during this most trying period. His kindly nature and wise counsels tended to allay party strife, and bloodshed was averted by the careful diplomacy of delayed action. Out of the contest came a freer constitution than Mr. Dorr and his friends had conceived possible, proving that their contest had forced their political enemies to adopt their platform as the only safe basis of a democratic commonwealth. Governor King was wise enough to see in Dorr's apparent defeat, a victory for suffrage that subsequent events have shown to be the fruits of a political contest for truth and righteousness. A contemporary, speaking of Governor King, said:



Few men have enjoyed in their day to a greater degree the confidence of the public, and few men in their private lives have exhibited greater amiability and genuine kindness of heart. In the tremendous times of 1842, his conduct won the approbation of friends and conciliated his opponents, and, in his voluntary retirement, he carried with him the respect and esteem even of those against whom he acted in seasons of unusual difficulties.

CHARLES JACKSON—Governor Jackson was a strong man, the product of two strong Providence families, Jackson and Wheaton. Born in Providence, in 1797, he entered Brown University in 1813 and graduated in the class of 1817. In his class were Lieutenant-Governor William Greeue, of Warwick; Rev. Henry Jackson, D. D.; Lewis L. Miller, M. D., eminent as a physician; and Judge William Read Staples, whose "Annals of Providence" will give long vitality to his name.

Young Jackson studied law, but, dissatisfied with the practice, he engaged in cotton manufacture in Scituate, Rhode Island, in 1823, using power looms. The villages of Jackson and Fiskville were his planting. He was the first to commence rubber manufacture in Providence, obtaining the right from Goodyear. He also set up a factory for making firearms, and brought out the Burnside rifle. From rifles, Jackson began to manufacture locomotives, and the Rhode Island Locomotive Works came into being. He was an inventor and a friend of patent students, assisting by advice and money. All industrial and mechanical topics found in Mr. Jackson interest and mastership. His knowledge was exact, his intelligence broad and cultural and his conversational powers were unusually brilliant.

Governor Jackson was elected to the governorship in 1845 over James Fenner. Fenner was the candidate of the "Law and Order" party, and polled 7,800 votes. Jackson, standing for the liberation of Thomas Wilson Dorr from the State prison, on a life sentence for treason, polled 8,010, and was elected by a small majority. Jackson had been conspicuous in Rhode Island politics, having been a Representative from Providence for several years and Speaker of the House, 1841-1842. The issue in the election of 1845 was clean-cut, and aroused the passion and hatred somewhat quieted since the "Dorr War." With Jackson's election came into power the party favoring Dorr's release from prison, and on June 27, 1845, the General Assembly passed a bill "to pardon certain offences against the sovereign power of the State" and to liberate "any person who has been convicted of the crime of treason against the State, and is now in prison under the sentence of the law." On the same day, Thomas Wilson Dorr, a life prisoner in the State prison in the morning, in the evening was found in the quiet of his home, on Benefit street, a free man, with

the record of his conviction expunged from the court records. Governor Jackson and his party did not escape the harsh denunciation of the "Law and Order" men. They expected all that, but they did not dream that in less than seventy years, a Republican Governor of Rhode Island would accept, in the name of the State, a monument dedicated in honor of the man whom the Commonwealth had condemned as a traitor. Surely, "humanity sweeps onward." Governor Jackson was a candidate for Governor in April, 1846, and had a plurality of votes but not a majority, thereby failing of election, Byron Diman, of Bristol, being chosen by the General Assembly.

Governor Jackson was an amiable, polite, refined gentleman, a staunch friend, a genial enemy. He was generous to a fault, never envious, always just and sincere, true to his convictions, unpurchasable by money or flattery, without fear or reproach. He lived beloved and died lamented, Jan. 21, 1876. He was buried in the North Burial Ground, Providence. A wife and three of seven children survived him.

BYRON DIMAN was a man that had greatness thrust upon him, as he was in no way an office seeker, nor ambitious of place and power. He was Bristol born, of excellent parental stock, inheriting a sound mind in an unusually sound body. Fortunately for young Diman, Rev. Alexander V. Griswold became the rector of St. Michael's Church, Bristol, setting up a private school in that town, teaching and preaching to the great satisfaction of all the people of all denominations in the town. To this school young Diman was drawn by an intellectual and spiritual magnetism. According to a classmate, he held the highest rank in the Griswold school. The student habit, early developed, continued through life and the culture and training of a teacher of the Griswold type was the equivalent of a college education of that day. English literature, history, and composition were the special likes of the Bristol boy, and through his long and useful life he continued faithful to his ideals and held intimate converse with his teacher, while both lived.

Diman entered the counting room of Hon. James DeWolf, at the opening of his business life. After 1837, he engaged in the whale fishery, in which Bristol was interested, and later in the mill interests of the town. As a student of history, Mr. Diman turned attention to its making, joining the Whig party. Bristol sent him to the General Assembly for several years, as he was her most intelligent citizen. He was a member of the Harrisburg Convention that nominated Gen. Harrison for the Presidency, who was elected by the aid of Rhode Island votes, in 1840. In 1842, Mr. Diman was a member of the Governor's Council, taking an active part in the Dorr War. In the gubernatorial contest of April, 1846,

Byron Diman was the candidate of the "Law and Order" party, against Charles Jackson, Democrat and Liberationist. Neither had a majority, and Byron Diman was chosen by the General Assembly as Governor. He had held the office of Lieutenant-Governor from 1840 to 1842, and from 1843 to 1846, serving at first under the Charter of 1663, and later under the new Constitution of November, 1842.

Governor Diman served the State faithfully for a single year, at the end of which he refused to consider continuance in office. He issued the first call for Bristol to join in the organization of the Republican Party, and was an ardent supporter of its principles and candidates.

Governor Diman was twice married. By his first marriage with Abby Alden, daughter of Rev. Henry Wight, D.D., two sons were born, J. Lewis and Henry Wight. The former became a Congregational minister and later Professor of History at Brown University; Henry W. died while serving as American Consul in Spain. Governor Diman died at Bristol, Aug. 1, 1865. The people of Bristol and of the State at large mourned the loss of a most intelligent citizen, an honest politician, a patriot of the highest order, a man of noble spirit, and of unblemished record.

ELISHA HARRIS was born in Cranston, in 1791, a lineal descendant of William Harris, one of the earliest and ablest settlers at Moshassuck, in 1636. In young manhood, Harris became interested in manufacturing, and while exploring northwest Rhode Island for a millsite and power, he discovered the rocky gorge in the wilderness, at what is now Harrisville. Here he located his first mill, and by sagacious management, unflagging industry and wise economy, he built up a prosperous business and village, accumulating large wealth and influence. Guided by a generous heart and a deeply religious nature, he used his fortune for educational and religious institutions in and out of the State, supported by the Methodist Episcopal Church, of which he was a most faithful member.

For several sessions, Mr. Harris represented Burrillville in the General Assembly, was Lieutenant-Governor in 1846-47, and in 1847-48 was chosen by the Whig party as Governor of the State. Governor Harris was later a Republican, and was an elector, voting for Abraham Lincoln, in 1860. He died Feb. 1, 1861.

HENRY B. ANTHONY was born of Quaker parents, in Coventry, Rhode Island, April 1, 1815. His father, William Anthony, was a native of Providence, and a prominent manufacturer in Coventry, the village which he founded bearing the family name. His mother's maiden name was Mary Kinnicutt Greene, daughter of James Greene, from John Greene, one of the founders of Shawomet, or Warwick. The schools of

Coventry and Providence fitted young Anthony for Brown University, from which he graduated in 1833, having as classmates Hon. Nathan F. Dixon, of Rhode Island, and Rev. Edward A. Stevens, a distinguished Baptist missionary in India. Young Anthony was only eighteen at graduation, but even then a terse and vigorous writer, whose striking contributions appeared in the "Providence Journal," of which his cousin, George W. Jackson, was editor and proprietor. Five years later, at the age of twenty-three, Mr. Anthony became a joint owner of the "Journal," and its editor, holding both relations for life. As an editor, he became widely known for his vigorous style, broad and liberal views, and his brilliant but genial satire. His native dignity and courtesy made him very popular in society and won friends from all walks of life.

Through his editorial ability, the "Providence Journal" took a high rank among the daily papers of the country, while it held a controlling influence in Rhode Island politics and government. Mr. Anthony's office became the Council Chamber of the leaders of the Whig party and men and policies were made and unmade in that sanctum. He never aspired to be a member of the General Assembly. The rather, he preferred to select and elect the men who should represent the towns and fill the executive offices. In the political contest known as the "Dorr War," Mr. Anthony espoused, with all the ardor and energy of his nature, the "Law and Order" cause. He wrote, spoke and acted in all wise and energetic ways to defeat the Dorr party. His satirical poem on the "Chepachet Campaign" is one of the classics of Rhode Island literature. Though oft solicited to higher posts of journalism, Mr. Anthony preferred to be first in his own city and State, than "second at Rome."

In 1849, he was induced to enter public life as a candidate for Governor on the Whig ticket against Adnah Sackett, Democrat. He had aspired to no office and had never held one. This was his first venture—some voyage on "the sea of politics." He came safely to harbor, with the buoyant and projectile force of 1,547 majority votes. His first year's administration was so satisfactory that at the spring election of 1850, the Democrats put up no candidate, Mr. Edward Harris, the Free Soil candidate, his only opponent, polling 753 votes.

Two years of the formal life of a Governor were all that Mr. Anthony could endure and he declined a reelection, his successor being Philip Allen, a Democrat, who held the office three years.

The Republican Party came into being in 1856, uniting in one the Whig and Free Soil parties, and drawing to its support the Anti-Slavery Democrats. Governor Anthony joined the new party and he threw the influence of the "Journal" to its defence and support. Philip Allen and James F. Simmons were the two Senators from this State in the United

States Congress, Philip Allen, a Democrat, and James F. Simmons, a Republican. The Kansas-Nebraska contest was on. The omens pointed to a civil war. Allen's term in the United States Senate terminated in 1859. The times called for men of thought, deliberation and action in the national councils, and in the Senatorial vote of 1858, fixing the successor to Governor Allen, Henry B. Anthony received 92 votes out of 100 in the Grand Committee of the General Assembly, and he was elected for the six momentous years from March 4, 1859. Mr. Anthony now entered an arena of political life where issues were determined, commensurate with his virile powers of brain and heart. He found himself at home in the United States Senate and as a member of the party in power, made masterly contributions, by debate, counsel and vote, to the achievements of the party. From March, 1859, to September 2, 1884, Mr. Anthony was a member of the Senate.

Throughout the Civil War he was an ardent and uncompromising supporter of the Lincoln administration. As a member of the Committee on Civil Affairs, Senator Anthony helped to create and organize an army and navy and to support both by men and money; he favored liberal pensions and aided in measures for reconstruction. He also served on committees on Mines and Mining, on Post Offices and Post Roads, and for eighteen years was chairman on Public Printing. He was three times chosen President *pro tem* of the Senate, in March, 1863, March, 1871, and January, 1884. On the trial of President Johnson he voted for impeachment.

Senator Anthony died at his home, on Benevolent street, Providence, Sept. 2, 1884. Mrs. Anthony died in New York, July 11, 1854.

When Mr. Anthony entered the Senate, Jefferson Davis, Stephen A. Douglas, John Slidell, Robert Toombs, Alexander Stephens, James M. Mason, sat in the seats of the Democratic majority. Thomas H. Benton had passed on in 1858. Lewis Cass was Secretary of State, under the presidency of James Buchanan. The Republicans were in the minority in numbers, but Charles Sumner, William Pitt Fessenden, Jacob Collamer, Zachariah Chandler and Henry Wilson were a body of men, waiting the great opportunity and events that lay ahead. To them Senator Anthony was joined by all political and moral affinities and with them, in 1860-61, assumed the control of the forces, in protecting the American Union and Constitution.

Probably the best tribute to the character and genius of Senator Anthony was written by Senator George Frisbie Hoar, of Massachusetts, in his "*Autobiography of Seventy Years*" (1903). He says:

Henry B. Anthony was the senior member of the Senate when I entered it. When he died he had been a Senator longer than other man

in the country except Mr. Benton. He had come to be the depository of its traditions, customs and unwritten rules. He was a man of spirit, giving and receiving blows on fit occasions, especially when anybody assailed Rhode Island. He had for many years conducted a powerful newspaper which had taken part in many conflicts. But he seemed somehow the intimate friend of every man in the Senate, on both sides. Everyone of his colleagues poured out his heart to him. It seemed that no eulogy or funeral was complete unless Anthony had taken part in it, because he was reckoned the next best friend of the man who was dead.

He was fully able to defend himself and his State and any cause which he espoused. No man could attack either with impunity under circumstances which called on him for reply, as he showed on so many memorable occasions. But he was of a most gracious and sweet nature. He was a lover and maker of peace, \* \* \* Mr. Anthony was a learned man; learned in the history of the Senate and in parliamentary law; learned in the history of his country and of foreign countries; learned in the resources of a full, accurate and graceful scholarship. Since Charles Sumner died, I suppose no Senator can be compared with him in this respect. Some passages in an almost forgotten political satire show that he possessed a vein, which, if he had cultivated, might have placed him high in the role of satiric poets. But he never launched a shaft that he might inflict a sting. His collection of Memorial Addresses is unsurpassed in that style of literature. He was absolutely simple, modest, courteous and without pretense. He was content to do his share in accomplishing public results and leave to others whatever of fame or glory might result from having accomplished them. "To be and not to seem was this man's wisdom."

PHILIP ALLEN was veined with the good blood of the Allen and Crawford families at his birth in Providence, Sept. 1, 1785. Brown University graduated him at the age of eighteen, when college courses were of the grade of the modern high school. His father, Zachariah, was a West India trader and dealer and Philip inherited the business, but, in 1812, engaged in cotton manufacture and printing of calicoes, for his most important life work. His financial ability led to his choice as president of the Rhode Island branch of the United States Bank, from 1827 to 1836.

From 1819 to 1821 he represented Providence in the General Assembly, and in 1851 Mr. Allen was chosen by the Democratic party of the State, as its candidate for Governor, against Josiah Chapin, the Whig candidate. He won, in a close election and continued in office by two succeeding State elections.

On May 4, 1853, Governor Allen was chosen United States Senator for six years, "by vote *viva voce*, *nem. con.*" He supported the administrations of Pierce and Buchanan, but voted against the repeal of the Missouri Compromise. Governor Allen was a successful manufacturer, an able financier, and an able and wise executive.



WILLIAM WARNER HOPPIN was a lineal descendant of the Hoppins who came to Boston about 1650, and from the Bay Colony to Rhode Island before the American Revolution. The Hoppins were people of good blood and reputation. In their constitution may be found the blendings of such New England types as the Cushings, Phillips, Cottons, Rawsons, Warners, and Aylwins.

Benjamin Hoppin, grandfather of William, held a commission as colonel in the Colonial militia of Rhode Island, signed by George III. At the beginning of the Revolutionary War, his loyalty to the Colonial cause led him to surrender that position and accept a lieutenantancy and later a captaincy in the regiment of Col. Christopher Lippitt, in the Rhode Island line of the Continental Army, serving in all the eventful battles and services of his regiment.

William W., son of Benjamin and Esther Phillips (Warner) Hoppin, was born in Providence, Sept. 1, 1807, and graduated from Yale College in the class of 1828, delivering the class oration, by vote of his class. Among his classmates were "Prince John" Van Buren, son of the President, Judge William Strong, of the United States Supreme Court, and Horace Binney, Jr., of Philadelphia. Instructed by Judge Daggett and Samuel Hitchcock, young Hoppin graduated from the Yale Law School in 1830, and at once began law practice in his native town. He soon found his way into city politics, having an experience of four years in the council and five on the board of aldermen, and later, a brief period in the State Senate where he secured the enactment of the ten hour labor law.

In 1853, he stood for election for Governor, on the Whig ticket, but was defeated by Governor Philip Allen. In 1854, he was the successful candidate for Governor, defeating Francis M. Dimond, Democrat, by a majority of 2,746 votes. He was reelected Governor in 1854, defeating A. V. Potter by a majority of 8,342 votes. His majority on his third election over Potter, Democrat, was 2,707.

Governor Hoppin was urged to stand as a candidate for the United States Senate. Once he consented and in an informal vote he received a plurality, when he withdrew his name. In 1857, Governor Hoppin returned to his law practice, giving much time to the advocacy of prohibitory temperance legislation.

On the formation of the Republican Party in 1856, Governor Hoppin joined it and became a strong advocate of its principles. Most of the Whigs and many old-time Democrats followed his example and Rhode Island became a strong Republican State, casting its electoral votes in 1856 for Fremont and Dayton. Governor Hoppin was a member of the Peace Congress that met at Washington, D. C., February 1, 1861, when



he made, as his native temper would compel, a conciliatory speech. When however, the war began, he became a militant and for four years gave of time, money, labor and influence to the ardent support of the Union cause.

In public life, Governor Hoppin stood for the highest ideals in politics and in State and National reforms. He was a ready debater and a prompt and efficient executive. In religious affairs he was broadly catholic and in the regard of human needs, sympathetic and generous. In his personal relations he was always affable and a cultured gentleman. He was frank and fearless in his attitude on debated grounds, clear in conviction, forcible in argument and honest and honorable in compromise. American citizenship was to Governor Hoppin the highest model of civil attainment. His life was that of a christian patriot, his death in 1890, the fulfillment of righteous living.

The "Providence Journal" uttered this tribute to Governor Hoppin:

Governor Hoppin was a thorough Rhode Islander in the best sense of the word. Inheriting its traditions from an honored ancestry identified with its foundation and history, his love for and pride in his native State were naturally deep and profound—in no sense narrow and provincial. He was always ready to consider and adopt political or economic reforms, made necessary by the changed conditions of population or circumstances, and to his latest day his utterances in speech or writing were in favor of advance or improvement in all matters which commended themselves to his judgment as wise and practical. In his years of active exertions in public service and business he was identified with many of the most important movements in State and municipal affairs, and no enterprise calculated to increase the prosperity of the community was without his intelligent interest and aid. He was prompt to resent any insult or injury to the State, either without or within, and his voice and example could always be safely counted upon by the citizens, in the cause of Rhode Island's honor and high standing.

The record of Governor Hoppin's services in the service of the city and State was a long and honorable one, and it can be justly said of him as of all his contemporaries, that he never sought or obtained office by any unworthy or corrupt means, but on more than one occasion suppressed his personal ambition for what he conceived to be the good of the State and Nation.

On June 26, 1832, Governor Hoppin married Frances A. Street, of New Haven. Two sons, Frederick S. and William W., were given them. Governor Hoppin died April 19, 1890, in his eighty-third year.

ELISHA DYER, Governor of Rhode Island from May, 1857, to 1859, was the son of Elisha and Frances Jones Dyer, and was born at Providence, July 20, 1811. His family line was from William and Mary Dyer, who came from London, England, and settled at Boston, Massachusetts,



GOV. ELISHA DYER



in 1635. The record is that "Willm Dyer, Millynar and Marie his wife" joined the First Church of Boston "the 13th of ye tenth Moneth" (1635). Both joined the Anne Hutchinson party, were disfranchised and driven from the Bay Colony in 1638, joining the Coddington-Clarke company that founded Portsmouth in 1638, Newport in 1639, and Rhode Island Colony on Aquidneck, in 1640. William Dyer was elected the first Secretary of the new Colony and held that and other offices many years. His wife, Mary, accepted the Quaker doctrines and was hung on Boston Common, by order of Governor Endicott, in 1660, for her fidelity to the Quaker doctrines and practices. By intermarriages, the Governor's ancestors included Roger Williams and Gabriel Bernon. Young Dyer graduated from Brown University in 1829 and at once entered mercantile life in his father's store on Dyer street, where he became junior partner in 1831. He was a man of high moral principle, acting true to his convictions. Being a strong advocate of temperance, he prevailed on his father to give up the sale of intoxicating liquors, then a profitable part of their business. He early became active in the industrial and philanthropic societies of Providence and was active in promoting the commercial interests of the city. Historical matters commanded his attention and, in 1883, he founded the Rhode Island Citizens Historical Association and was chosen its first president.

In politics he was a Whig, until the formation of the Republican party in 1856, when he joined it and was the first candidate of that party for Governor of Rhode Island, in 1859. In 1840, he was elected as Adjutant-General of Rhode Island, holding the office for five years, including the period of the "Dorr War." It would be difficult to enumerate all the social, educational, political, military and business relations which Mr. Dyer assumed and in all of which he exerted a manly interest and influence. He was not an office seeker nor was he ambitious for place or power except for the aid he might render society in its various needs.

By reason of Mr. Dyer's abilities and his great interest in civil concerns, the new party was drawn to him as their strongest representative and at the May election of 1857 he was elected Governor by a majority of 4,250 over Americus V. Potter, a strong Democratic opponent. The next year, 1858, Governor Dyer was continued in office by a majority of 4,354 over Judge Elisha R. Potter. Governor Dyer brought to the office an ideal business experience, an intelligence in political affairs which gave him acknowledged leadership, a nobility of character in citizenship manifest to the yeomanry of the State, and an urbanity of manners which won the high esteem of political opponents. The two years of his official life were in the midst of the political and civil struggles and debates that led up to the Civil War. The Kansas-Nebraska fight was on the stage and the

future of the free and slave States was the wager of the contest. Rhode Island was clearly enlisted on the side of freedom for Kansas and her Governor was loyal to the Free State principles.

In the spring election of 1859, Governor Dyer declined a reëlection and was succeeded in office by Hon. Thomas G. Turner. The "Providence Post," the leading Democratic paper of the State, in an editorial of March 7, 1859, said of Governor Dyer:

It is proper to say that his retirement is wholly voluntary. It is not often that men thus voluntarily decline an honorable office, and especially when the office may be used as a stepping-stone to others of still greater value and importance. \* \* \* We have from the first looked upon him as an honorable, high-minded opponent, and a straight-forward conscientious man; and candor compels us to say that he has never failed to reach the standard we set up for him. His abilities have been equal to his official duties, and his integrity has been equal, so far as we know or suspect, to every assault, which the intrigues of professed friends have made upon it. He retires from an office which he did not seek, wholly unscathed, and wholly uncontaminated with the slime which too often clings to men who dispense political favors.

The Civil War called forth Governor Dyer's best efforts in the saving of the Federal Union. He was chosen captain of the Tenth Ward Drill Company of Providence and later enlisted as a soldier, serving for three months as captain of Company B, Tenth Regiment of Rhode Island Volunteers. This company was composed of 125 students of Brown University and were granted permission to enter the military service by President Sears, on the sole condition that the Governor should have command.

Governor Dyer was a traveller of large experience, crossing the Atlantic eighteen times, visiting all parts of Europe and in 1854 visited Egypt. In 1873, he was appointed Honorary Commissioner to the Vienna Exposition, by President Grant, and performed valuable service by his practical knowledge of commercial and industrial affairs. His experience as a Commissioner to the World's Fair at London in 1871 and his report to the General Assembly was an excellent preparation for the later work at Vienna.

Governor Dyer and family were members of Grace Church, Providence, during his administration, under the ministry of Rev. Thomas M. Clarke, D. D., Bishop of the Diocese. He was an effective public speaker on social, political, educational and musical topics.

The State Normal School was removed to Bristol; the Hope Iron Foundry was incorporated, as was the People's Savings Bank of Woonsocket; instructions to our Senators and Representatives in Congress to vote against the admission of Kansas to the Union under the Leocompton

Constitution; an act was passed against prize fighting; the Supreme Court rendered an opinion relative to the restriction of civil rights and privileges; Henry B. Anthony was elected Senator to the United States Congress; Swan Point Cemetery was incorporated; a charter was granted to St. John's Church, Barrington.

Governor Dyer was founder and first president of the Rhode Island Veteran Citizens' Historical Association in 1883. Its name has been changed to the Rhode Island Citizens' Historical Association.

THOMAS GOODWIN TURNER—The Turner and Goodwin families came to Boston in the early days of the Bay Colony. Capt. William Turner was an inhabitant of Dorchester, Massachusetts, from 1642 to 1664, and was one of the founders of a Baptist church, probably at Swansea, Massachusetts. In Philip's War, Capt. Turner had command of the soldiers on the Connecticut river, in Northern Massachusetts, won a brilliant victory at Turner's Falls, May 19, 1676, and on the next day was slain with fourteen of his company. The Turners were in Swansea as early as 1710. The parents of Thomas were William and Abiah (Goodwin) Turner of Warren. Thomas G. was born Oct. 24, 1810, and married Mary Pierce Luther, April 4, 1833. The early life of young Turner was spent at school or in employment on his father's vessels of which he was owner and captain. At the age of fourteen he was a clerk in a dry goods store at Newport, where he began his business for life. After a successful apprenticeship Mr. Turner returned to Warren, uniting with Martin L. Salisbury in a dry goods and merchant tailoring business, in which he continued until near the end of his life. To this business was added the manufacture of neck wear—scarfs, stocks, ties, etc.

In the Dorr War of 1842, Mr. Turner was made a colonel in the State militia and was in command at Acotes Hill. In this brief campaign, he was associated with the most active and influential men of the State and the acquaintances formed aided his promotion at a later date. Among these men of distinction were Governor Fenner, Governor Diman and Judges Ames, Haile and Bosworth.

Mr. Turner's gentility and courtesy made for him many friends, and his native town raised him to the offices of Representative and Senator, all of which he filled with great fidelity and ability. He was a Presidential elector in 1860 and cast his vote for Abraham Lincoln for President and Hannibal Hamilton for Vice-President.

Mr. Turner filled the office of Lieutenant-Governor of the State from May, 1857 to 1859, with Elisha Dyer as Governor, and succeeded him in the chief office, on the withdrawal of his superior in office, holding the office one year.

On the organization of the Equitable Fire and Marine Insurance Company, Governor Turner was chosen president, retiring from the Warren firm and devoting the remainder of his active life to insurance. He held many offices of direction and trust in his native town, being a director in the Warren Manufacturing Company, in the First National Bank, in the Mechanics Machine Company, in the P. W. and B. R. R., was a member of the Baptist church, of the Baptist Missionary Union, a trustee of Brown University and was a member of several other societies.

Governor Turner died at Warren, Jan. 3, 1875. He was a man of the strictest integrity in business, of fine social qualities, intelligently interested in town and State politics, positive in his convictions and bore with modest demeanor the honors worthily won.

The chief legislation of his administration: The Committee on the Eastern Boundary Line made report; an act was passed providing for the establishment and support of a normal school,—\$2,500 was appropriated for its support; Washington's birthday was made a legal holiday; a bill was before the House of Representatives to give a free education to negro children in all grades of schools, admitting them to all schools by the abolition of separate schools. The bill failed of passage by two votes.

WILLIAM SPRAGUE—Those who recognize an overruling Providence in human affairs are wont to see the special Divine Hand in the election of William Sprague to the governorship of the State of Rhode Island, in the spring of 1860. He sprang from an old Massachusetts and Rhode Island family which had won merited honors in civil and military affairs. His ancestor, Jonathan Sprague, first mentioned in Rhode Island history in 1681, was for many years a member of the General Assembly, and speaker of the House of Deputies in 1703. By marriage, the family carries the blood of Roger Williams in its veins. William Sprague's grandfather, William, was the first calico printer in Rhode Island and one of the first in America. His mills were located in Cranston, Rhode Island. His sons, Amasa and William, formed a partnership for their extensive business, under the firm name of A. & W. Sprague, with printeries in Cranston, Johnston and Warwick. William Sprague, the subject of this sketch, was the son of Amasa and Fanny (Morgan) Sprague and was born in Cranston, Rhode Island, Sept. 12, 1830. On receiving a good business education, preparatory for introduction to the great firm of A. & W. Sprague, he entered the employ of his father Amasa, and his uncle, Governor William Sprague, at the age of fifteen. On the death of his uncle in 1856, young William Sprague, then twenty-six years of age, occupied the leading place in the control of the vast interests of the A. & W. Sprague Co. The business plans of the firm



were now much enlarged and extended in Rhode Island, Connecticut, Maine and Georgia, so that it became the largest calico printing company in the world, running nine mammoth mills capable of weaving eight hundred thousand yards of cloth and printing one million four hundred thousand yards of calico per week. In the conduct of this vast business, William Sprague showed great ability and the vast responsibility seemed an easy burden for the young manufacturer and financier. He found time and inclination for military affairs and by gradual promotion rose to the rank of colonel in the Marine Artillery of Providence. His ambition was stirred to place the company on a footing for efficiency equal to any in the country. In 1859, young Sprague made a tour of Europe, studying especially the military establishments of the Continent, returning to Providence in the spring of 1860.

Prior to his arrival in Providence, the State Republican Convention had met and nominated Hon. Seth Padelford for Governor. Some of the younger element of the party rebelled at the nomination, claiming that Mr. Padelford had been forced upon the party. At this junction young Sprague, just thirty years of age, returned to Providence from his European tour. Wealthy, handsome, popular, with a military reputation, and a great social following, William Sprague was received by the people of the city and State with great enthusiasm and an ovation was extended to him as the man of the hour. The Democrats, taking advantage of the popular outburst for Sprague, and the opposition to the head of the Republican ticket, made haste to nominate William Sprague for Governor, and for the next sixty days Rhode Island was the scene of a gubernatorial contest the like of which had not been witnessed since the Ward-Hopkins political battles of a century earlier.

At the April election, the Republican majority of 5,378 for Governor Turner, the year previous, was wiped out and the vote stood for Governor, William Sprague, Democrat and Conservative, 12,278; Seth Padelford, Republican, 10,740; scattering, 139, thus giving the young aspirant a majority of 1,399, in the largest vote ever cast in Rhode Island. An interesting feature of the Republican campaign was the presence of Abraham Lincoln, who spoke at Railroad Hall, Providence, on national issues, and incidentally on State politics. A few months later, he was the candidate of the Republican Party for the Presidency, to which he was elected in November, 1860.

Governor Sprague forecasted the Civil War in the threats of the South to secede and in the spirit of the North to prevent it. Acting on this presentiment he prepared the military of the State for the defense of the Union, and when, in 1861, the war actually began, troops were ready

and advanced at once to Washington, under Col. Ambrose E. Burnside, promptly answering the President's call for troops. In the battle of Bull Run, July 21, 1861, the young War Governor was on the field of action, having a horse shot under him. The Governor, for bravery in battle, was commissioned brigadier-general, but was not mustered into United States service. Under his leadership the State won the first rank for the number, character, and efficiency of her soldiers, sending to the defense of the Nation, 10,832 infantry, 4,394 cavalry, 2,979 light artillery, 5,644 heavy artillery, 645 navy—total 24,494; and expended \$6,500,-772.15. The popularity of Governor Sprague in his splendid services won for him a seat in the United States Senate, serving the State from March 4, 1863, to March 4, 1875. During this period, Governor Sprague lost his eminent standing by the announcement of financial views, not considered sound or practical, which brought him into antagonism with his distinguished colleague, Senator Anthony. Coincident with his political downfall came the great financial crash, consequent upon the failure of the house of A. & W. Sprague. Multitudes of people were included in this State-wide and almost national calamity. Governor Sprague was carried down by the overwhelming and disastrous forces of ruin that enveloped him, from which he and his family never recovered. Add to political and financial losses, the destruction of the social and domestic relations, and one has a faint picture of the condition of the great War Governor during his last years.

He married Catherine Chase, daughter of Hon. Salmon P. Chase, then Secretary of the United States Treasury, November 12, 1863. Four children were born to them, after which divorce followed. Governor Sprague spent his last years with a second wife, in Paris, where he died on Sept. 11, 1915. His body sleeps in the Sprague Mausoleum, Swan Point Cemetery, Providence. Near, on an adjoining knoll, lie all that was mortal of Maj.-Gen. Ambrose E. Burnside, whom he called to the command of the first Rhode Island troops. "*How quick can you come at our call?*" telegraphed Sprague at Providence to Burnside at Springfield, in April, 1861. "*Fifteen minutes are all I want,*" Burnside replied. Both, in neighborhood, wait the Great Call.

JAMES Y. SMITH was one of the strong, business Governors of Rhode Island, as well as the successor of Governor William Sprague as War Governor, on Sprague's election to the United States Senate. Governor Smith was born in Groton, Connecticut, of Pilgrim stock, Sept. 15, 1809, and died in Providence, March 26, 1876. Mr. Smith devoted most of his adult life to cotton manufactures, winning an honorable name and a fair fortune. In his young manhood he took an active interest in affairs of

city and State and was chosen mayor of Providence for the year 1856. He was a representative from Providence to the General Assembly for several years and in 1861 was nominated by the Republican party for Governor, but was defeated by Governor William Sprague. In April, 1863, Mr. Smith was elected Governor by a plurality of 2,773 over William C. Cozzens, of Newport, Democrat. Two years later Governor Smith was elected for a third term by a plurality of 9,321, his Democratic opponent receiving only 100 votes. It is of record that Governor Smith had a majority of the votes in every town and ward in the State.

Governor Smith was a wise and patriotic executive, giving all his time and generously of his money to the service of the State and Nation. All of the quotas of the State called for by the Government were filled by voluntary enlistment without resort to a draft, by his wise and energetic management. At the close of the Civil War, in 1865, Governor Smith welcomed home the war veterans and aided in their reemployment in civil life.

At the end of three years, Governor Smith retired to private life and the fulfilment of important trusts. He was for three years president of the Providence Board of Trade, was president of three banks, a director in eight insurance companies and a director in two railroad companies. "Few public men have been so highly honored during their lives or followed to the grave with as sincere mourning by rich and poor alike." When a friend suggested that he was too generous, he said: "I allow no man to come between me and my charities; that is a duty I am responsible for only to God."

AMBROSE E. BURNSIDE was born in Indiana in 1824. His father was of Scotch descent and his mother Irish. Young Burnside graduated from West Point in 1847, and soon saw service in Mexico. We next find him at Fort Adams, Newport, and then in New Mexico in Bragg's famous battery; then as first lieutenant in command of a cavalry company in the Indian war on the plains. While in Mexico, Burnside invented a breech-loading rifle and began the manufacture at Bristol, expecting government orders. When the Civil War broke out, Burnside was interested in the rifle company, making his guns, but at the call of Governor Sprague, he was made colonel of the First Regiment of Rhode Island Detached Militia, and was commissioned May 2, 1861. He commanded a brigade in the battle of Bull Run and was promoted to the rank of brigadier-general August 6. The success of the Roanoke expedition won for him the rank of major-general in 1862. President Lincoln, confiding in his ability and popularity with the troops, placed him in command of the Army of the Potomac, but the disastrous conflict at Fredericksburg led to his

relief of that command January 25, 1863. His later successes retrieved in a measure the loss he had sustained and when, on April 15, 1865, he retired from the army, he bore home the fullest evidence of the devotion of the army, and the thanks of a grateful nation.

In evidence of the esteem of Rhode Island for their popular military leader, Gen. Burnside was chosen Governor for three terms, 1866 to 1869, and in 1874 was chosen United States Senator to succeed William Sprague. Gen. Burnside was the idol of his citizen-soldiers, winning their love by his frankness of manners, his constant watch for their welfare, his cordial fellowship and overwhelming modesty of deportment; though their superior in rank, he was only their equal and companion, when free from military restraint. When the day arrives, when men shall be great in goodness and when they shall be measured by faithfulness to duty and high idealism, General and Governor Burnside will stand on his own high pedestal, great among the greatest.

SETH PADELFORD, son of John and Mary (Heath) Padelford, of Taunton, Massachusetts, was born Oct. 3, 1807, and was a descendant from Jonathan Padelford, an early New England settler. One of the family, John, a graduate of Yale College, was a surgeon in the American army during the Revolution, and died at Saint Eustalia, a prisoner of war.

Equipped with a common school education of that early day, the youth, Seth, came to Providence to engage in the wholesale grocery business, first as an employee and soon on his own account, continuing therein for forty years, retiring with a large fortune, and better still with a reputation for honest dealing, and a capacity for large financial undertakings. While diligent in business, Mr. Padelford did not neglect his duties as a citizen, and was alive to all the great issues of the day. Interested in building up the cause of education, he served many years on the school committee of Providence. Desirous of making a prosperous city, he served as a member of the city council. As a financier he was called to the directorate and presidency of the Bank of North America. As a reformer, he stood on the platform of the Anti-Slavery party against the extension of slavery into the territories. After the emancipation of the slaves, he was president of the Rhode Island association for the benefit of the freedmen. To enumerate all the causes to which Mr. Padelford gave freely of time and money would be to catalogue all the human and benevolent enterprises of the day. In fact he devoted the last twenty years of his active and useful life to the service of the city and State and the larger and broader demands of philanthropy, which embraced the land and the world.

In politics, Mr. Padelford was a supporter of the Whig policy, until the birth of the Republican party, when he gave himself unreservedly and unswervingly to the advancement of its interests. So earnest and radical were his opinions against slavery and its extension, that he was the candidate of the Republican Party for the governorship in April, 1860, but was defeated by William Sprague, a Democrat and Conservative, who, returning from Europe in March, won in a whirlwind campaign the chief magistracy from the Republicans. The vote stood Sprague 12,278, Padelford 10,740, scattering 139; Sprague's majority 1,399. Both candidates were wealthy, and money was freely used in taking care of the registry vote and in other campaign purposes, which in those days were regarded as legitimate political expenditures. Mr. Padelford accepted his defeat in a philosophic spirit and gave himself to the support of the State and National government in the Civil War.

In 1863, his services were again recognized by his party in his nomination and election to the office of Lieutenant-Governor of the State, holding the office for two years. His public spirit and generosity were specially manifest during the war, few men in the State surpassing him in devotion to the cause of the Union, or in financial and personal contributions to the support of the government.

In 1868, Governor Padelford was a Presidential Elector and helped to cast the vote of the State for Gen. Grant. The following spring, he was nominated and elected Governor of the State by the Republican Party, receiving 7,359 votes and his Democratic opponent, Lymon Pierce, 3,390. In 1870, Governor Padelford received 10,337 votes to 6,295 for Lymon Pierce, Democrat. In 1871, Governor Padelford received 8,721 to 5,347 for Thomas Steere, Democrat. In 1872, Governor Padelford received 9,463 votes to 8,308 for his Democratic opponent, Gen. Olney Arnold.

During the four years of Governor Padelford's administration, he devoted his whole time to the duties of the office. No duty was too arduous, no detail too small for his faithful attention. He kept in constant and close communication with every department of the State's business. He was as attentive to all its concerns as though they pertained to his private affairs.

The leading feature of Governor Padelford's administration was the great arousement of the people in educational matters. His first official act was the appointment of an earnest and ardent young man to the important office of Commissioner of Public Schools. The educational situation was one of stagnation. General apathy prevailed. The normal school, which had had a very precarious life at Bristol, had been suspended, and all efforts hitherto put forth to awaken the educational forces seemed futile. The new commissioner at once began a campaign among

the people, holding public meetings and teachers' institutes in all parts of the State. The people responded, and in January, 1870, a public meeting connected with the annual meeting of the Rhode Island Institute of Instruction, addressed by distinguished speakers on topics of the day, was the event of the winter, the largest hall in Providence overflowing to the street. In February, 1870, the General Assembly passed a bill, presented by the commissioner, creating a State Board of Education.

The Commissioner, now reinforced by an able Board of Education, directed all the educational forces of the State towards the reestablishment of the State Normal School, to be located at Providence. As a result, the bill creating a new State Normal School passed the General Assembly in March, 1871, and the school was organized for work with one hundred and twenty-five pupils, September 6, 1871. Governor Padelford gave these two measures his strong support, and the almost unanimous vote of the two branches of the Assembly was in a measure the result of his hearty endorsement of the Board and School.

During Governor Padelford's administration, a thorough system of school supervision was established, and superintendents were provided for every town in the State. The school year was increased to about thirty-six weeks; State and municipal appropriations for public education were quadrupled; new school houses had been erected to the number of seventy-five in various towns of the State; the Rhode Island Institute of Instruction was made a powerful agent in the advance of educational interests, all along the line. Commissioner Bicknell, in his review of the four years of Governor Padelford's work, wrote:

In the chief executive of the State, I have found all proper and needed support. The four years of service, under him as Governor, were more actively employed in the establishment of the Normal School, the Board of Education and other valuable agencies, and the State can never fully repay with honors the valuable and devoted labors of so earnest a friend as he (Governor Padelford) proved himself to be in this department of State service.

After retiring from the executive chair, Governor Padelford devoted himself to various business and social interests which had hitherto claimed his attention, more particularly the claims of the Unitarian church and the Channing Conference, with both of which he had for many years been identified. He died, after a short sickness, Aug. 26, 1878, and was buried at Swan Point Cemetery, Providence, where a beautiful granite shaft, a symbol of his strong symmetrical life, stands as a memorial of his character and life-work. His biographer writes of him:

Governor Padelford won his way from obscurity to prominence and honor, and from poverty to wealth, by the exercise of prudence, industry,



and perseverance. In every position which he filled he endeavored faithfully, conscientiously and in accordance with his best judgment, to perform every duty which belonged to it, even to the slightest detail. This was especially manifest in his administration as Governor of the State. He had what is too often wanting in official life, the sense of personal responsibility. He accepted the burdens, as well as the honors, of the offices he held, and bore them with rare fidelity. He was a man of great persistence of purpose, of unwearied industry, of deep conviction, and of good impulses. His faith in Divine Providence in all the circumstances of life was unshaken, and from the beginning to the end, he endeavored to illustrate the principles of religion and duty which he had cherished in his early days.

HENRY HOWARD, son of Judge Jesse Howard, born in 1826, finished his school education in the University Grammar School, Providence. He studied and practiced law until 1858, when he entered the career of manufacturer in the Harris Manufacturing Company, of which he was president for many years. Mr. Howard represented Coventry in the General Assembly in 1857 and 1858, was a delegate to the Republican Conventions of 1856 and 1876 and was an elector in 1872. His governorship extended over two years, in which he showed marked ability and fidelity. Governor Howard represented the United States at the Paris Exhibition in 1878, and made a report to the government. His studies in physics won him a reputation as a scientist, while his literary studies showed thoroughness and aptitude. Governor Howard married Catharine G. Harris, daughter of Governor Elisha Harris. Their children were Jessie H., Elisha H., and Charles T.

Governor Howard died Sept. 22, 1905, honored by many, respected by all. His children carry in their veins the distinguishing blood of magisterial quality—paternal and maternal.

HENRY LIPPITT—The Lippitts are from early Providence stock, John Lippitt joining the settlement before 1640, becoming a proprietor, signs the Compact in 1640 and was chosen as a representative of the Plantations in the organization of the Colony under the Williams Patent, in 1647.

In 1648, his name is found on the records of the town of Warwick as an inhabitant. He had five children, John, Moses, Nathaniel, Joseph and Rebecca. The family became prominent in Warwick and one of the Lippitts, Col. Christopher, distinguished himself by his services in the Revolutionary War. By intermarriage with the Greenes and Budlongs, of Warwick, their lineage is found in all the old families of that ancient and honorable town.

Henry Lippitt, son of Warren and Eliza (Seamans) Lippitt, was born in Providence, Oct. 9, 1818. Receiving a good English education, young



Lippitt advanced from a Warren clerkship to the ownership of cotton mills and bleaching and dyeing works on the Blackstone and Moshassuck rivers, acquiring large wealth by his fine business ability, energy and integrity. In the "Dorr War," he took an active part in the "Law and Order" party, and was lieutenant-colonel of the Marine Artillery, serving in the protection of the Arsenal at Providence, and with the advance militia at Acotes Hill.

In 1875, Governor Lippitt was nominated by the Republican party as a candidate for Governor. Against him were Rowland Hazard, of South Kingstown, also Republican and Prohibitionist, and Charles R. Cutler, of Warren, Democrat. 22,264 ballots were cast for Governor, of which Hazard received a plurality 8,724, Lippitt 8,368 and Cutler 5,166. As there was no election by the people, the choice went to the General Assembly, and Mr. Lippitt was elected.

In 1876, the same course was taken, in the event that Governor Lippitt did not receive a majority vote over Albert C. Howard, Republican and Prohibitionist, and W. B. Beach, Democrat, Lippitt getting 8,689 votes, Howard 6,733, and Beach 3,599.

Governor Lippitt took an active interest in the Centennial Exposition at Philadelphia and contributed in every way at his command to advance the interests of the State and general government. Two of his sons have been honored by the State—one, Charles Warren Lippitt, having been elected Governor in 1895 and 1896, and his son, Henry F. Lippitt, elected United States Senator, January 18, 1911, for six years.

CHARLES C. VAN ZANDT was one of the most brilliant men ever born in Rhode Island. The Dutch type of his father, Edward, and the Pilgrim type of his mother, the Bradfords, blended in making a man of unusual physical size and commanding presence and of extraordinary gifts as an orator and a poet. Born at Newport, in 1830, he graduated from Trinity College, Hartford, in 1851, and at once took up the study of law, was admitted to the bar in 1853, beginning its practice at Newport, where he made his life home. From the first, his remarkable oratorical talents marked him for public life and he moved from the post of city solicitor of Newport through the grades of clerk of the House of Representatives, member of the House, Speaker of the House, Senator, Lieutenant-Governor, to the high honor of Governor in the brief period of a score of years. His gifts as an orator and a poet won for him nation-wide reputation and honors. As a member of the Republican party, Governor Van Zandt was a prominent figure in political campaigns and conventions. His figure won attention, while his urbanity, his ready wit, his apt illustrations, his peculiar line of address, his eloquent sentences, his literary accomplish-

ments, won popular acceptance with all audiences. Some of Governor Van Zandt's orations and poems are models of classic English and are worthy of preservation among the best specimens of American oratory. He died at Brookline, Massachusetts, June 4, 1894.

ALFRED H. LITTLEFIELD—This family of Littlefields of old Massachusetts, an earlier English stock, settled on Block Island in 1721, and from thence later generations sailed to the main and made homes in the Kingstowns, Scituate, Pawtucket, and other towns. Alfred was born in Scituate in 1829, got a little schooling and went to work in a Pawtucket Valley factory. Later with his brother Daniel, he made business ventures and both finally settled down at Pawtucket to make hair cloth, great financial success crowning their labors. Mr. Littlefield took an active interest in local, State and National politics, contributing liberally of time and money, to the success of the Republican party. In turn, he was rewarded by election to the General Assembly, in turn serving as Representative and Senator from the town of Lincoln, from 1876 to 1880.

In 1880, Senator Littlefield won the nomination for Governor, as a Republican and at the election received a plurality vote of 10,098 against two candidates, one polling 7,219 votes and the other 5,062. The General Assembly elected Senator Littlefield Governor by a vote of 82 to 20. In 1881 and 1882, Governor Littlefield won by substantial majorities. He was a faithful Governor and illustrated the fact that the average citizen may, by a wise use of opportunities, fill the high offices of the State, with honor to himself and with credit to the electorate. "Honor and fame from no condition rise."

A clear vision, alertness, sound judgment and superior executive ability were characteristic of Governor Littlefield's administration.

GEORGE PEABODY WETMORE traces his lineage, paternal and maternal, to men and women of the best New England blood and character. Through that descent honors and fortune have come to his house. He was born in London, in 1846, while his parents were in England, was trained for Yale College at Newport, graduated in the class of 1867, and from Columbia Law School in 1869, entering upon the practice of law at Newport, his home since early childhood.

He entered political life as a Republican in 1880, having been chosen an elector and casting his vote for James A. Garfield as President. He was also an elector in 1884 and cast his vote for James G. Blaine.

In the April election of 1885, Mr. Wetmore was the candidate of his party for Governor, against Ziba O. Slocum, Democrat, winning by a majority of 2,778 votes. In the gubernatorial contest of 1886, Governor

Wetmore won over Amasa Sprague by 1,805 votes. In the 1887 election, Governor Wetmore was defeated by John W. Davis, Democrat, although he polled more votes than at the elections of 1885 and 1886.

Having filled the office of Governor to the satisfaction of his party and the great body of the people, Governor Wetmore was in the logical succession to the United States Senate, to which he now aspired. At the first attempt in 1889, he was defeated, but in 1894, he was unanimously chosen Senator by the concurrent vote of both Houses of the General Assembly. He was reelected in 1901 and again in 1908, his services covering the long period of eighteen years. In the Senate, he served on many important committees and was chairman of Manufactures, Library, the Capitol, a Memorial to Lincoln and a Grant Memorial. He seldom took part in debate, but proved himself a valuable Senate committee member, devoting his time very scrupulously to public affairs. Governor and Senator Wetmore has borne home honors in State and national councils most modestly, with a dignity and courtesy that has won universal approbation.

JOHN W. DAVIS—"Honest John," a sobriquet won in business pursuits and emphasized in social, civil and political life, was worthily won and modestly worn by John W. Davis, who was born in Rehoboth, in 1826, and died in Pawtucket in 1907. Mr. Davis was an energetic man, successful in business, winning the confidence of his fellows by square dealing, courteous manners and open-handed frankness. He was a born democrat, not a partisan. Office and political elevation came to him from without and not of his own seeking. Mr. Davis was free from a factional spirit and his independent spirit made him a leader, when once enlisted in political affairs.

The "May Deal" of 1886 moved the Democrats to put up a stiff fight against the Republicans in the spring of 1887 and "Honest John" was chosen as their standard bearer. It was a hard fight, in which Mr. Davis won by a handsome majority. In 1888, Governor Davis was defeated by Royal C. Taft. In 1899, Governor Davis had a plurality of about 5,000 votes, but was defeated in Grand Committee. In 1890, Governor Davis again won a plurality, but was elected by a Democratic General Assembly. In 1891, Davis again won a plurality of votes, but was defeated in the vote of the Assembly. So strong was Governor Davis with the people that in four out of five elections he had a plurality of votes, and in one a majority.

Governor Davis was a man of pure character, high moral purpose, firm in his convictions, very decided in his opinions and prompt in action. Right and wrong were to him factors in action, not speculations or mean-

ingless formulae. In political life he was a patriot, not a partisan. At his death, the people of the whole State mourned the passing of an honest man, an exalted citizen, a Christian patriot. In all that was upright, noble, good, and for the betterment of the people, "Honest John" was a true exemplar, noble yet humble, a ruler, not an autocrat; as legislator, Governor and mayor he was the faithful, brave-hearted American citizen. No executive made a worthier name or record.

ROYAL CHAPIN TAFT, the son of Orsmus and Margaret (Smith) Taft, was born at Northbridge, Mass., Feb. 14. 1823. He was a descendant in the seventh generation from Robert Taft, holding the same relationship to that ancestor as William Howard Taft, former President of the United States.

Robert Taft originally came from Scotland, and was a householder in the town of Braintree, Massachusetts. At the close of King Philip's War in 1680, he became one of the original settlers of the town of Mendon, Massachusetts, and in 1681, was chosen one of its selectmen. Robert Taft, who died Feb. 8, 1725, his five sons and their descendants, have had an important influence upon the history and affairs of Mendon and of Uxbridge.

Fitted for a business life, at the age of twenty-one, Mr. Taft moved to Providence and became a clerk in the office of his uncle, Royal Chapin, a woolen manufacturer and wool dealer. At the end of five years Mr. Taft was admitted to the firm of Royal Chapin & Company as a partner.

When a comparatively young man Mr. Taft joined the Providence Horse Guards, was elected a trustee of Butler Hospital in 1866, was elected a member of the corporation of the Rhode Island Hospital, in 1874 was chosen its treasurer, was elected president; was a director of the Rhode Island Hospital Trust Company; was a director of the Merchants Bank, afterwards was president of the Merchants National Bank, and remained in office for forty years.

In 1876, Mr. Taft was associated with the late George H. Corliss on the commission from Rhode Island to the Centennial Exposition, and from 1884 to 1888 he served as one of the sinking fund commissioners of the State.

In 1888 he purchased a large interest in the Coventry Company. He also became treasurer of the Bernon Mills at Georgiaville, and was president of the Quinebaug Company at Brooklyn, Connecticut, for many years.

In 1888, a crisis had developed in the fortunes of the Republican party of Rhode Island, and depression prevailed in the national as well as in the State organization. Mr. Cleveland was President, and the protective tariff was in need of defenders. Rhode Island had a Democratic

Governor, the first since Philip Allen's time. Various legislative enactments connected with a new prohibitory law, and the adoption of the enlarged suffrage qualifications, applying to foreign-born citizens, seemed to stimulate Democratic hopes.

Governor Taft originally was a Whig and upon its formation had joined the Republican Party. He was a strong protectionist, and had already had some experience in politics. In 1855-56 he had been elected to the Providence Common Council, and from 1880 to 1884 represented the city in the lower House of the General Assembly.

In these circumstances when urged by his party friends to accept the nomination and save the organization from another defeat, Mr. Taft permitted the use of his name. The Convention nominated for Lieutenant-Governor, Enos Lapham of Warwick. The Democrats renominated Governor Davis and Lieutenant-Governor Honey. Taft and Lapham were elected, Governor Taft's majority over all being 1,833 against 1,054 for Governor Davis the preceding year. The Republicans did not elect another Governor by popular vote until 1892. Governor Taft was urged to accept the nomination in 1889 but felt obliged to decline on account of the increasing demands of his private business.

Governor Taft was prompt and vigilant, possessing unusual keenness of perception. His manner was quiet and unobtrusive. Few men have had more influence upon the financial affairs of this community. He was long and honorable identified with the business interests of Rhode Island, and distinguished among his fellow citizens for devoted services to the various charitable and beneficent institutions of the city and State. In him the poor and needy always found a ready helper. He was a patron of art and fond of literature. He collected a large and well chosen library, possessed a variety of pictures of real value, and a notable collection of engravings. His home was for many years on Waterman street, adjoining the college grounds, a site that appealed to him above all others. Here, lovingly attended by his children, honored by his friends, respected by the community wherein he labored for nearly three-quarters of a century, he died June 4, 1912, in his ninetieth year.

CHARLES WARREN LIPPITT, son of Governor Henry Lippitt, was born in Providence, Oct. 8, 1846. He is in lineal descent from John Lippitt, Roger Williams and Samuel Gorton.

Young Lippitt fitted for Brown University at the University Grammar School and graduated in 1865. Study and travel occupied three years, when he entered business life in his father's office in the manufacture of cotton and woolen fabrics, in which he is still engaged. He has been president of the Franklin Lyceum, colonel on his father's staff, president

of the Board of Trade, of the Commercial Club, of the Garfield and Arthur Republican Club, and of the Social Manufacturing Company.

In the State election of 1895, Mr. Lippitt won the governorship by a plurality of 10,809 over George L. Littlefield, Democrat, and in 1896, in a poll of 50,485 ballots cast for Governor, he won by a plurality of 11,411.

In 1895, the electors rejected a proposed amendment to the Constitution for biennial elections, by a vote of 7,449 for and 10,603 against. The cornerstone of the new State House was laid October 15, 1896.

Governor Lippitt is an able writer and a fluent debater. His address before the Rhode Island Citizens' Historical Association at the first celebration of Rhode Island Independence Day, at the Mathewson Street Methodist Church, May 4, 1906, on Rhode Island, the first of the Colonies to declare for Independence, on May 4, 1776, was a scholarly and notable contribution to Rhode Island and American History.

HERBERT WARREN LADD, of Providence, was born in New Bedford, Massachusetts, October 15, 1843, and received his education in the public schools of that city, graduating from its high school in 1860. After a year's experience in the wholesale dry goods business, in 1861 he entered the office of the New Bedford "Mercury," where his abilities were quickly recognized, and he soon became one of the paper's most valuable reporters and correspondents. His letters to that paper from various points in the South and West during the progress of the Civil War were of exceptional merit and interest.

The first Sunday paper published in New England outside of Boston was an extra "Mercury" issued by him to announce the battle of Fredericksburg. In 1864 he again entered the dry goods business in Boston, where he remained until the spring of 1871, when he came to Providence and founded the large dry goods house on Westminster street, established as the H. W. Ladd Company.

Although occupied with a large business, he gave much time to public matters that concerned the interests either of his city or the State at large. He was the organizer and for three years president of the Providence Commercial Club, whose meetings and great success are well known. He is a member of the Providence Board of Trade, of which he was for two years vice-president; and the Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children, of which he was for two years president. To Brown University he gave an observatory, fully equipped and containing one of the finest telescopes in the country. Other organizations and interests have felt the benefit of his personal activity and broad public spirit. He took an active part in the movement for obtaining enlarged and better railway terminal



facilities in Providence, and the plan adopted is almost identical with the plan advocated by him in 1884.

In politics Governor Ladd was a Republican, and was the unanimous nominee of his party conventions for governor for three successive years. During his administration he devoted himself closely to the important interests of the State, and urged many measures that proved of distinct advantage to those interests. While a popular party leader, he was in neither election the recipient of a majority vote, Hon. John W. Davis, Democrat, in both cases holding the ascendancy. As the majority rule then held sway, there was no election by the people and Governor Ladd was chosen by the General Assembly.

His most important public service was rendered as chairman of the New State House Commission, the cornerstone of which was laid October 15, 1896, and in which the General Assembly first met January 1, 1901. The Ladd Observatory, on Beacon Hill, Providence, will long preserve the name and the generous spirit of Governor Herbert W. Ladd.

ELISHA DYER, JR., son of Governor Elisha Dyer, was Governor of this State for three years, from May, 1897, to May, 1900. He was born in Providence, Nov. 29, 1839. His primary education was obtained in the public schools of the city. He prepared for college in the University Grammar School, and took a partial course at Brown University, from 1856 to 1858. He then studied at the University of Giessen, Germany, and also at Frieberg, graduating with the degree of Doctor of Philosophy, in 1866, intending to devote his life to the department of chemistry.

At the opening of the Civil War, Mr. Dyer enlisted in response to the call for three months men and left Rhode Island for Washington, April 18, 1861, as fourth sergeant of Capt. Tompkins' Battery of Light Artillery. While unloading the guns at Easton, Pennsylvania, he received an injury which disabled him for further field service. In 1862, he was reelected lieutenant of the Marine Artillery, one of the finest military organizations in the State. Governor Sprague appointed him major and recruiting officer for the year, and in 1863 Governor James Y. Smith appointed him colonel on his staff for three years. Col. Dyer's interest and efficiency in military affairs won for him the rank of brigadier-general in the State militia, while his acquaintance with the men and events of the Civil War won for him the merited position of Adjutant-General. While in this office, in 1888, the State of Rhode Island authorized the revision, correction and republication of the military records of the Civil War as made in 1865. This work devolved on Gen. Dyer, and the two volumes of the Register of Rhode Island Volunteers, 1861-1865, are a monument to his faithful and laborious task. This work was finished in 1895, and it is



believed to be as accurate a record of the services of Rhode Island citizen-soldiers as could possibly have been made.

Distinguished in family, in citizenship and in service, the State could not fail to see in Gen. Dyer a safe leader and a wise counsellor, and in 1897 he was elevated to the governorship by a plurality of 10,643 over Daniel T. Church, the Democratic candidate. By a large popular plurality, Governor Dyer was reelected in 1898 and 1899, withdrawing from State politics in the spring of 1900. The Socialist-Labor vote in 1898 was 2,877, and in 1899, 2,941, the largest ever cast in the State. The vote for prohibition in 1898 was 2,012.

During Governor Dyer's term of office a new State flag was adopted. State House bonds to the amount of \$800,000 were voted by the people, a proposition to amend the Constitution was twice rejected and the eastern boundary line established.

Governor Dyer retired to private life with the full approval of the electorate in his administrative ability. In 1904 he was elected to the presidency of the Historical Association of which his father was the founder and first president. Later he filled the mayoralty chair at City Hall, Providence.

WILLIAM GREGORY, of North Kingstown, Governor from May, 1900, until his death, Dec. 16, 1901, was born at Astoria, N. Y., Aug. 3, 1849, and had a varied and progressive business career. His father, William Gregory, was a carpet weaver, and moved to Bean Hill, near Norwich, Connecticut, when William was a small boy. From thence he removed to Moosup and went to work for the Almyville Company. This was in the year 1857, and two years later, when the boy was but ten years of age, he went to work in this mill. The family remained here for several years, and during this time young William attended school a part of the time and in the winter attended evening schools. About this time the war broke out, and the family removed to Westerly, Rhode Island, where he again went into the mill to work, this time as a designer in the mill that has been recently owned and run by Warren O. Arnold. At the age of sixteen he was given charge of Whithead's mill, at Auburn, and from there, a few years afterwards, went to Waterford, Massachusetts, as superintendent of another woolen mill, and later came back to Rhode Island, accepting a position as superintendent of the woolen mill at Bellville, in North Kingstown. In 1878 he went to Ansonia, Connecticut, where he remained two years, and then went to New York as general manager and agent for the A. T. Stewart Company. When he decided that the time had come for him to go into business for himself, he returned to Rhode Island and engaged in the manufacture of worsted goods, in

what was known as the Chapin mill, in the village of Wickford. He later added another mill to his property in the town of North Kingstown.

Mr. Gregory began his political career soon after going into business. In 1888 he was elected as town representative, and served in that capacity four years; in 1894 was elected State Senator, and was reelected the three following years; in 1896 was elected a delegate to the National Republican Convention at Minneapolis. At the time of his death he was president and director of the Wickford National Bank, director in the Union Trust Company, member of the Advisory Board of Underwriters at the New England Lloyds, and a trustee in the Rhode Island Safe Deposit Company of Providence; chairman of the Board of State Charities and Corrections of Rhode Island; a member of Franklin Lodge, No. 20, A. F. and A. M., of Westerly, and of the Central and Churchman's Clubs of Providence. Mr. Gregory was married in 1875, his wife, who survives him, being the daughter of the late Syria H. Vaughan, of Wickford. He left two children, a daughter and a son, the latter connected with his father in the mill at Wickford. Mr. Gregory was elected Lieutenant-Governor in April, 1898, and was reelected in April, 1899. In April, 1900, he was elected Governor, and in November, 1901, he was reelected, but died December 16, 1901. His second inauguration would have taken place in January, 1902.

During the administration of Governor Gregory, the Constitution of the State was amended, establishing the sessions of the General Assembly at Providence, commencing in January of each year, changing the date of the annual election of State officers from April to November; defining Grand Committee, its duties and powers, and determining elections by plurality instead of majority vote.

CHARLES DEAN KIMBALL was born in Providence, Rhode Island, September 13, 1859, son of Emery Sheldon and Mary Briggs Kimball, ninth descendant of Richard Kimball, who came to Massachusetts in 1634. On the paternal side, Jarvis Kimball, his great-grandfather, married Thankful Williams, a lineal descendant of Roger Williams. On the maternal side he is descended from the Greenes of Pottowomut, his mother's grandfather being first cousin to General Nathanael Greene. He was educated in the public schools of Providence, graduating from the Providence High School in 1877. On leaving school he entered the employ of Rice Draper & Co., wholesale dealers in paints and oils. After remaining with them a short time he entered the employ of Kimball & Colwell, of which firm his father was the senior partner. He was afterwards admitted to the firm, and became senior partner after his father's retirement. The firm was incorporated as the Kimball & Colwell Com-

pany in 1899. He organized the What Cheer Beef Company, and the Fall River Provision Company, of which three corporations he has since been treasurer.

In 1894 he was elected to the Rhode Island House of Representatives from Providence. He was reelected five times. He served as chairman of the committee on special legislation. He was also a member of several important special committees—the committee to investigate the cotton industry, the committee to investigate the College of Agriculture and Mechanic Arts, and the committee to report on the revision of the Constitution of the State. He was appointed a member of the committee on rules and orders, and was instrumental in establishing a new set of rules and orders that have been in use ever since. He was chosen Lieutenant-Governor in 1900 and reelected in 1901. The Governor, William Gregory, dying in December, 1901, he was acting Governor until January 7, 1902. As Governor Gregory was also Governor-elect, Governor Kimball was inaugurated on that day and served one year as Governor. It is curious that as chairman of the special legislation committee of the House of Representatives he reported the amendment to the Constitution which provided that the Lieutenant-Governor-elect should be inaugurated as Governor in case the Governor-elect should die.

He married Gertrude Greenhalgh, of Providence, Rhode Island, in November, 1885. She was the daughter of John B. and Lavania Reynolds Greenhalgh, formerly of Fall River. He has one daughter, Marion, widow of Ralph Vincent Hadley, and two grandchildren, Gertrude Marion and Ralph Vincent Hadley. He is a member of various clubs, a thirty-second degree Mason, member of Federal Commission of Jurors, and president of the town council of South Kingston. He served from 1903 to 1913 as president of the board of managers of the Rhode Island State College.

Governor Kimball was a faithful executive, winning the cordial support of the independent element of his party. His drastic treatment of labor troubles lost him the labor vote and cost him defeat at the polls in 1902.

L. F. C. GARVIN in 1901 was the Democratic candidate for Governor. Although running ahead of the ticket, he was defeated. Dr. Garvin's election as Governor in 1902, by a very large plurality, was due to a mistake made by Governor Kimball. The Street Railway Company had disobeyed a law giving its employees ten hours within twelve, as a day's work. As a result, the men struck. Thereupon the Governor sent deputy-sheriffs to protect the strike-breakers brought in by the company to man

the cars. This action was resented by the voters generally, particularly in Pawtucket, where some violence occurred. Had Mr. Kimball told them not to strike, and he would see that the law was enforced, doubtless he would have been elected.

Before his election as Governor in the year 1902, he had served thirteen terms in the lower branch of the Legislature and three terms in the State Senate. His aim as Governor was to advocate equal rights, a constitutional convention, the ten-hour law, plurality elections, free text books, a more just representation, home rule, proportional representation, the abolition of taxation, and similar changes in statute or organic law. The specific legislation which he recommended included: The restoration to the Governor of the appointing powers; a constitutional convention; the abolition of the property qualification; just representation in both branches of the General Assembly; a modified veto power for the Governor; the initiative and referendum for constitutional amendments; the taxation of franchises; a three-cent fare on the street railways; the repeal of the laws creating State police commissions for cities and towns; also, objecting to irrevocable laws, to post-election sessions of the Legislature, and to an irresponsible third house. During the January session he presented two special messages to the General Assembly, the first aimed to secure better protection to bank deposits; the second asked for power to appoint a commissioner to prevent bribery in State elections.

At the opening of his second term of office in 1904, when Governor Garvin rose in grand committee to read the annual message, a motion was made that the two houses separate, and it was done. It became necessary, therefore, for him to deliver the message to the Senate alone, upon its return to its chamber. In his message of 1904, he enumerated and repeated the recommendations made to the previous Legislature, emphasizing especially an amendment to the State Constitution giving a popular initiative for constitutional changes; the suppression of bribery; protection for bank depositors; the abandonment of the practice of keeping in committee important measures; the apportionment of State taxes to the several municipalities upon the basis of local expenditure; the appointment by the Governor, or election by the people, of the judges of the Superior Court then about to be established.

The legislation accomplished included the town system for the district system of public schools; State aid in the payment of salaries of local school superintendents; appropriations were made to the College of Agriculture and Mechanic Arts for a students' labor fund, and for instruction away from the school; for a State sanatorium for tuberculosis patients, and for a State building at the St. Louis Exposition. The sale of intoxicating liquors forbidden on election day prior to the closing of the

polls, had been enacted, but frequently its purpose had been annulled by supplies of free drinks in near-by places other than saloons. As permitted by law, in pardoning prisoners, Governor Garvin made it a condition that each one should report every three months to the probation officer, should violate no law of the State, and should be deemed by the Governor a safe person to be at large. He recommended the passage of an act providing for indeterminate sentences as well as paroles.

Governor Garvin in a review of his administration suggests four mistakes:

First. I might well have had regular, or at least frequent, meetings, with what I called my cabinet. This "cabinet" was composed of seven persons, namely, the six colonels upon my personal staff, and my secretary. These seven represented substantially all of the power of appointment possessed by me. To these meetings should have been invited, during my first term, the Lieutenant-Governor, a lawyer, and a Democrat.

Second. During both terms the Democrats were in a minority in the House and in the Senate. But even under these adverse circumstances there ought to have been a closer association and consultation between the chief executive of the State and the members of his party in the legislative department.

Third. My failure to confer with liberally inclined members of the General Assembly who were Republicans. I am perfectly aware of the solidarity of the Republican organization in this State. Yet in almost every Legislature, even in Rhode Island, some members of the dominant party, moved by patriotism, or a sense of justice, resent dictation from the party boss. A few, although silent about the extraordinarily unjust and un-American representations in our State Legislature, might, if appealed to by the Governor, become disposed to act independently.

Fourth. It was during my administration that the law transferring the appointing power from the Governor to the Senate was carried into effect. Good lawyers, as I afterwards learned, believed the law to be unconstitutional. My mistake was in signing the commission of the first official elected by the Senate, but not nominated by me. Without my signature he could have drawn no salary. This would have brought the question of constitutionality before the Supreme Court.

Rhode Island, disliking monarchy, feared any kind of one man power, and has left executive duties in the hands of legislative bodies. The Grand Committee, the Senate, City Councils, Town Councils, and commissions of three or more members, have been the executives. In this matter Rhode Island has departed from the philosophy which underlies our American form of government. The Federal Constitution and most State Constitutions, in fixing their executive and legislative departments, adopted the teachings of the great French philosopher Montesquieu. "The executive," he said, "should be single; the legislative, multiple."

The enforcement of law, in order to be effective, must be in the hands of one person, and that person must appoint his subordinates. Only in this way can responsibility for non-enforcement be fixed and dealt with by the electorate. In fact, the appointing power constitutes the executive power. A Governor or mayor must be able to say to his appointee: "Carry out my directions in the letter and in the spirit, or I will put some one in your place who will obey my orders."

For Governors Daniel Russell Brown, George H. Utter, James H. Higgins, Aram J. Pothier and R. Livingston Beeckman, see Biographical volume.



---

---

## APPENDIX

---

---





## TOWN HISTORIES.

The story of the origin and growth of the towns of Rhode Island is unique and instructive. The civil community, called a town, was based upon the ownership of land. Land was the *sine qua non* of the municipality. A community of interest in contiguous soils made social and civil life possible and permanent. With the Indian, who owned all the soil, the essential dependence of life on soil did not exist. As well as try to make a state without people as a town without land. "Mourts Relation" is the daily record of the Plymouth people, who, "by most voyces," decided to locate, "in the first place on a high ground, where there is a great deal of land cleared and hath beene planted with corne three or four years agoe, and there is a very sweet brooke runnes under the hillside and many delicate springs of as goodde water as can be drunke." The Rhode Island settlers sought and found good land. What next?

A town is the simplest and oldest form of civil government. Its form and functions were well established in the Anglo-Saxon mind and knowledge. The New England settlers came to found towns as the initial acts in the formation of colonies, beyond which their boldest dreams never indulged. In a wilderness land, the town must be a concentrate body, where coöperation must be exercised for protection, development and social and religious contact and compact. Certain commonalities must be established; the common for public and common use; the meeting-house for worship; the school for child instruction; the training ground for military practice; the stocks and whipping post for the punishment of offenders; the tavern for entertainment; the prison for detention; the burial ground for the dead; these and other central institutions indicated not only the needs of a community of interests—they became the expression of the intelligence and public spirit of the settlers, the measure of the civilization attained.

The first thing to be obtained was land, land for common purposes, and individual needs—for planting houses and planting corn. A town was a concrete thing that must be organized on land, and not in the air nor on paper. Without land a town had no visible existence. The Narragansett Indians owned, and, after a fashion, occupied the territory of Rhode Island. William Blackstone, William Arnold, Roger Williams and others were squatters on the Narragansett lands. The first deeds of lands from the Indians to white men were given to William Coddington and to Roger Williams, by Miantonomi and Canonicus on March 24, 1638, at Narragansett (Wickford). Coddington bought for himself and friends the Island of Aquidneck. Williams had a life-tenure gift of a territory, indefinite in boundary, between the Pawtucket and Pawtuxet rivers. Town building is now possible, for Coddington and Williams are, so far as it was then possible for them to be, invested with property rights, within the domain of which, they could establish such forms of civil government as seemed to each the wisest and best, independent of any exterior or superior power. Each was, in a sense, monarch in his own realm—Coddington on Aquidneck, Williams at Providence. The land ownership was contemporaneous; the same quill wrote both deeds; the chiefs signed with the same instruments; and it is possible that, measuring by the sun-dial, the Coddington deed antedated the Williams gift.

The second step in the movement towards a township was the distribution of lands, the building of houses and their occupation by families as settlers. The honor of this first act of practical town-making belongs to Pocasset, now Portsmouth, May 13, 1638, when, under the Coddington purchase and ownership, "at a Generall Meeting upon publick notice," it was ordered "that the Town shall be builded at the Springe," lands were laid out for home lots and building, and a "Meeting House" provided for. The names of these pioneer town builders of a Rhode Island town were, Mr. Coddington, Judge, Will. Hutchinson, John Coggeshall, Edward Hutchinson, William Baulston, John Clarke, John Porter, Samuel

Wilborn, John Sanford, William Freeborn, Phillips Sherman, John Walker and Randall Holden. Prior to the purchase of Aquidneck and prior to leaving Boston, twenty-three men, including these, had entered into a covenant or compact in which they declared: "We do here solemnly in the presence of Jehovah incorporate ourselves into a Bodie Politicke." This great act of inaugurating civil government took place March 7, 1638. If the Compact adopted and signed in the cabin of the "Mayflower," was the initial act in the founding of Plymouth Colony, and its signature on November 21, 1620, in Cape Cod Harbor, inaugurated the Pilgrim State, and if the Declaration of Independence, July 4, 1776, inaugurated the United States of America, may the town of Portsmouth date its founding at Boston, March 7, 1638, a brief period in advance of purchase and occupation of the land on which their principles were to be wrought into action. Mr. W. E. Foster writes: "The Plymouth settlers, before landing from the 'Mayflower' on American soil, signed in their cabin the memorable compact which combined them into a 'civil body politic.'" Palfrey says: "The simple government was then instituted by the election of John Carver to be Governor." Bancroft calls the "Mayflower" group "the proper Democracy," and adds, "In the cabin of the 'Mayflower,' humanity recovered its rights and instituted government on the basis of 'equal laws' enacted by all the people for the general good." Richman says: "Rhode Island (Aquidneck), largely the work of Dr. John Clarke, made soul liberty workable, realized it in practice and action."

**POCASSET (Portsmouth)**—It may be truthfully affirmed, in the full light of historic truth, that the first town established and set in practical operation in Rhode Island, was Pocasset (Portsmouth), May, 1638, on Aquidneck Island, and that "the Bodie Politicke," the guiding purpose that inspired it, was declared in Boston, March 7, 1638.

It may also be affirmed with equal historic certainty, which challenges all denial, that the first town founded in Rhode Island was the first to place on record and put in full operation the principle of Democracy in civil affairs, and the absolute right of all men to worship God as their consciences directed.

**NEWPORT**—The town of Newport was founded in 1639, by a body of men who were signers of the Boston-Portsmouth Compact of 1638, and precisely the same principles of civil liberty, social order and religious freedom, were established at Newport as had been put in practical operation at Portsmouth. Newport was the second democratic town in Rhode Island. Portsmouth and Newport were the only towns of the group of four that made up early Rhode Island that were from the first essentially and absolutely democratic.

**PROVIDENCE**—Providence was incorporated as a town in March, 1649, by the General Assembly of the Colony of Providence Plantations, etc., according, as the request of the Providence Commissioners stated, "to the modell that hath been lately shewn unto us by our worthy Friends of the Island, \* \* \* or any other modell as the Generall Courte shall agree upon according to our Charter." Prior to 1649, Providence had no town government and no civil officers. The reasons for this are clear and conclusive. Roger Williams had no practical knowledge of the principles or methods of English civil government. He was absolutely ignorant of methods of town organization and procedure, and took no pains to learn from others. He was, as he says, "like a ship in a fog." As he had no policy, and as the people around him were mostly poor and ignorant, he had no easy control of affairs. As we have seen, Williams came to Providence to separate himself from men, aimless as to founding anything. Nothing had been done at Providence for two years. Williams complains that his ears are worn by the ceaseless clamor of the people for land. Poverty, too, was calling for food and clothing, and Mr. Williams is most grateful to Governor Winslow, of Plymouth, for a pound note given Mrs. Williams for family needs. On March 24, 1638, Mr. Williams suddenly

becomes land-rich by a gift of uncounted acres from Miantonomi. Wanting in organizing and constructive ability, he turns to Governor Winthrop for advice, while thirty miles away his new neighbors are setting up new standards of government. A day at Pocasset would have been a revelation to Mr. Williams, but his eyes are not yet open to the great vision of a free church in a free state. "Maddened," as he says, by the clamor for land by Harris, Arnold, Carpenter, Field and the rest, he opens a wide door for land-hungry men to share with him his new possessions, and they, thirteen in all, form a land company in legal terms, a proprietary, owning as it does, all the lands, given to Mr. Williams. This proprietary was known by various names—"Towne," "Towne Fellowship," "Masters of Families," etc.—all meaning one and the same thing—the Proprietors and the Proprietary. A knowledge of this important fact is a key to unlock the mysteries of the life of early Providence. A private corporation, owning and selling land, was not a civil body, and only dealt with land interests, legally. It had a treasurer to receive money for lands sold, and pay out, in dividends and expenses, such moneys as the company should direct. Providence men could not endure "*the face of magistracy*," and it had none. From 1644 to 1651, Mr. Williams spent his time at Narragansett, in his trading house, while the affairs of the people took such shape from year to year as the land-owners might determine until a charter for a town was obtained in 1649, and the large land-holders became the freemen of the town, to direct its affairs, even as they had since 1638. Further discussion of the Proprietary and its working will be found in another chapter.

One act of the Proprietors illustrates the "befogged" conditions at Providence as to authority civil—an act of the most arbitrary intolerance—the practical expulsion of Joshua Verin and family. Verin was called before the Proprietors on an unjustifiable complaint. No warrant was issued, no court tried his case; in fact, it was no case of a litigant nature; it was simply a matter of family disagreement, of common occurrence, with which no one but a scandal-monger would interfere. No court of justice would have considered the case for a moment. Even by their agreement, the Proprietors had to deal only with "civil things," which, if language has any meaning, excluded all reference to religious matters. The real culprit in the Verin case was Mr. Williams, who acted the parts of a detective, a magistrate, a judge, a jurymen, an executioner, and clerk of the court.

WARWICK—Warwick, the fourth town of the confederacy of 1647, has a singular history in its origin, due to the singular, unique character of its principal founder and settler, Samuel Gorton. Prior to 1644, the northeast section of what became Warwick, bordering on the Pawtuxet river and Narragansett Bay, had been sold by the sub-sachems of the Narragansetts to white settlers, who in 1641, had submitted themselves to the government of Massachusetts Bay Colony, remaining loyal to its authority until 1656. Gorton, who arrived in Boston with his family in March, 1637, spent the first seven years of his colonial experience and travel at Plymouth, Portsmouth, Providence and Pawtuxet. The government at Portsmouth was nearest to his liking, but after living in that town eighteen months, "disturbing no man, conducting himself civilly to all men and courteously," as he declares, he was brought before the court for an alleged assault and trespass, was found guilty by a jury, Coddington being judge, and soon left the Island for Providence. Gorton stayed in and about Providence, much to the discomfort of Mr. Williams, until the autumn of 1643, when he and five or six others made settlement in Shawomet, or Warwick, and on January 12, 1643-44, Miantonomi conveyed to Randall Holden, John Greene, John Wickes, Francis Weston, Samuel Gorton, Richard Waterman, John Warner, Richard Carder, Sampson Shotten, and William Woodull (Woodale) a territory of Indian lands on the "west syde of Sowhomes (Sowams) Bay," from Copasuatuxet to the "Southern most point of that neck of land called Shawomet," for a consideration of 144 fathoms of wampum peag, of the English money value of £36—about \$175. This tract embraced about 100 square miles, about 65,000 acres, including the present towns of Warwick, West

Warwick and Coventry, and not including Potowomut, which was added at a later purchase. The purchasers formed an association for civil government by arbitration, and made rules by which they were to be governed. Only six of the purchasers settled their families on the new purchase, and built log cabins about the salt-water inlet known as Old Warwick Cove. The lands of the purchase were to be sold by the treasurer, and Mr. John Warner was chosen secretary. Here we have only land ownership by direct purchase from the chief sachem, and affirmed by the local sachem Pomham. No attempt was made to organize a town government. Mr. Gorton was opposed to such a government until the approval of the English Crown could be obtained, and it was not until 1649 that a town charter was obtained and a town government organized with the usual town officers, exercising their ordinary functions.

At the outset, no fiscal property qualification for voting in town or colony affairs was set. In Portsmouth and Newport all acceptable citizens could vote. In Providence, suffrage was confined to the Proprietary class of property owners. The majority vote decided all questions and elections. The town and colonial elections were at first annual, and the electors met in town meetings, the time, place and objects of which were stated in the call issuing from the clerk. Until the acceptance of the Patent, in 1647, each of the towns of the Colony was an independent government, distinct and apart from every other. The territory on which each was located was without the Colonial grants of Plymouth and the Bay colonies, the rights in lands had been acquired directly from the Indians, and only the hazy atmosphere of Great Britain's colonial rights by discovery hung over the four settlements on Narragansett Bay. Each community was absolutely free to establish its own plan of government, its laws, magistracy and institutions, with none to molest or make afraid, and each acted on its own initiative, uninfluenced by direction or dictation from without itself.

BARRINGTON—This, one of the three towns of Bristol county, has Warren river as its east bound, Narragansett Bay on the south and west, and East Providence and Swansea on the north. Before the Pilgrim settlement at Plymouth, it was a part of the Indian territory occupied by the Wampanoags. Its Indian name was Sowams, and its shores, south and west, lay on Sowams (Narragansett) Bay, the name by which the upper part of the bay was known. Sowams was the home town of Ousamequin, or Massasoit, the chief sachem of the tribes between Massachusetts and Narragansett bays. By the Pilgrim Patent, the royal grant extended to the west bound of Pokanoket, on Narragansett Bay, and included Sowams. In 1638, Sowams was chosen as the place of settlement of the Clarke-Coddington party, exiled from Boston in 1638. Roger Williams accompanied Dr. John Clarke and William Coddington to Plymouth to secure Sowams, but were told that "Sowams was the Garden of their Patent," and was held as a special reservation for the benefit of the first Plymouth settlers. In lieu of it Aquidneck was chosen.

In 1653, the Sowams Proprietary was organized; the territory was purchased of Massasoit for £35, the lands surveyed and divided among the survivors of the "first comers" at Plymouth, among whom were Governor William Bradford, Capt. Myles Standish, Governor Thomas Prentice, John Brown, Thomas Willett and others.

In 1667, the whole territory between the Taunton river on the east and Narragansett Bay on the west, south of Seekonk (1643) and excluding the Indian Reservation, known as Consumsit Neck (now Bristol), was incorporated under the name of Swansea, in Plymouth Colony. Here, on what is now Barrington territory, Rev. John Myles and others founded the first Baptist church within the bounds of the State of Massachusetts.

Fifty years later (1717), Barrington was set off from Swansea as a separate township, and included all of original Sowams, having ancient Rehoboth (1643) on the north. Thirty years later, by the establishment of the new boundary line between Massachusetts and Rhode Island, the five towns—Barrington, Warren,

Bristol, Tiverton and Little Compton—were set into Rhode Island. The new line triangulated Barrington of 1717, and gave to Rehoboth, on the north, a large slice of its original territory, Wannamoisett. In 1747, the territory now Warren, was added to Barrington, and the name of Admiral Warren was given to the newly constructed town. The union of the two territories, divided by the old Sowams (Warren) river, was dissolved, June 16, 1770, since which time it has held a prominent place in the family of Rhode Island towns and has done its full share in developing local and state interests, as will appear elsewhere.

Indian Local Names: Pokanoket, Sowams, Popanomscutt, Peebee's Neck, Nayatt, Chachapacassett, Chachacust, Annawomscutt, Mosskituash, Mouscouchuck, Wannamoisett, Scamscommuck.

Barrington takes its name from Barrington, Somerset county, England, from which came many of the families that founded the town. In addition to valuable colonial town records, the original Book of Records of the Sowams Proprietors, from 1653 to 1797, may be consulted at the town clerk's office, Barrington. The history of the town of Barrington may be studied also in "Historical Sketches of Barrington," 1870; "A History of the Town of Barrington," 1897; "Barrington in the Revolution," 1897; and "Sowams, the Story of the Proprietary," 1903—all written and published by Thomas W. Bicknell.

BRISTOL—Bristol lies between Mount Hope Bay on the east and Narragansett Bay on the south and west. It bore the Indian name Consumpsit, and that, with Chachacust (New Meadow) Neck, were reserved by Massasoit and Philip as the home camping grounds of the western section of the Pokanokets—the tribe of the Wampanoags to which the two chief sachems belonged. While Massasoit, for diplomatic and other reasons, dwelt on Chachacust or New Meadow Neck (now Hampden Meadows), Philip, for equally good reasons, made his home camp at Mount Hope, an elevation 200 feet high, on a southeast spur of Consumpsit Neck, projecting into Mount Hope Bay. In the great Colonial tragedy of Philip's War, Philip was slain at Mount Hope in 1676, the remnant of the tribe was made slaves, and the Mount Hope lands of Consumpsit Neck were sold to John Walley, Nathaniel Byfield, Stephen Burton and Nathaniel Oliver, for £1,100, on September 14, 1680. On September 1, 1681, the founders met and chose the name of the old town, Bristol, England, as the name of the new town of Plymouth Colony. In 1747, Bristol, with five other towns, was transferred from the jurisdiction of Massachusetts to Rhode Island. A small portion of Bristol territory was set off to Warren, May 30, 1873.

Indian Local Names: Consumpsit, Poppasquash.

Bristol has valuable town records. Its story has been written in part by J. Lewis Diman, and published in the Bristol "Phenix," about 1850, and also in "The Story of the Mount Hope Lands," by Wilfred H. Munro, 1880.

BURRILLVILLE—Burrillville adjoins Connecticut and Massachusetts, in the northwest corner of Rhode Island. Its territory is a part of the purchases made by Roger Williams, William Harris and others, conveyed to them by memorandum deeds, signed by Miantonomi and Canonicus, sachems of the Narragansett Indians, under date of March 24, 1638, and later. It was first set off from Providence and incorporated as a part of Glocester in February, 1731. It was separated from Glocester and incorporated as a separate town, October 20, 1806. It was named for Hon. James Burrill, Jr., who was a Senator from Rhode Island in the United States Senate from 1817 to 1820. He was one of the most useful legislators and practical statesmen of our State history.

The Nipmuc tribe of Indians occupied Burrillville and adjoining territory in Massachusetts and Connecticut, as did also the Pascoags—both tributary to the greater tribe—the Narragansett. Nipmuc river and village, Pascoag, Mohegan, Wallum, Mehunganup, are names that evidence Indian occupation. The neighboring town of Webster has Lake Chagogogomanchogagocharbanungamaug, the



meeting place of the various tribes of Southern New England. A small history of Burrillville has been written by Mr. Keech, a lawyer of the town.

**CENTRAL FALLS**—Central Falls was taken from the town of Lincoln, and incorporated as a city, February 21, 1895. The act was accepted February 27, 1825, by a vote of 1,531 for, to 794 against. The city government was organized March 18, 1895. Prior to the incorporation of Lincoln, Central Falls was a part of Smithfield (*q. v.*).

**CHARLESTOWN**—Charlestown was taken from Westerly and incorporated August 22, 1738. It was named "to the honor of King Charles II., who granted us our charter" (1663). Misquamicut was the Indian name of the territory now occupied by Charlestown, Westerly, Hopkinton and Richmond—the original area of the town of Westerly. The tribes of Indians that successively occupied Misquamicut were the Niantics, the Pequots, and the Narragansetts. The Niantics held the coast from Weecapaug to the Connecticut river, their domain extending into the country at least twenty miles. The Pequots, a war-loving tribe, made their descent from the upper Hudson upon the more peace-loving Niantics, seized their lands, and nearly wiped out the tribe, dividing it into two small remnants—the Eastern and Western Niantics—the Eastern holding Misquamicut. The Eastern Niantics now formed an alliance with the Narragansetts, a powerful tribe that held sway over all the territory of Rhode Island, west of Narragansett Bay, including also, at the advent of the Pilgrims, the islands in the Bay. The Pequots were now the most blood-thirsty Indians in New England, occupying the territory along the Thames to the Pawcatuck river. Misquamicut was the bloody ground of dispute and the scene of invasions and battles, the Pequots being met by the Narragansetts and Niantics. In April, 1632, the Pequots in a fierce struggle "extended their territory ten miles east of the Pawcatuck," to the stronghold of the Niantics at Weecapaug, whose sachems were the celebrated Ninigrets. Owing to the coalition of the two tribes during the Pequot invasion, the remnant of the early tribe of Niantics has been lost sight of in the larger tribe, the Narragansetts.

In 1747, the town of Charlestown was divided, that portion north of the Pawcatuck river forming a new town, called Richmond. The south part of Charlestown, facing the ocean, has always been a favorite dwelling place of the Indians, and tradition points to Fort Ninigret as the site of a Dutch trading house. Charlestown was the capital town and last home of the remnants of the Niantics and Narragansetts. It also contains the mortal parts of their warriors, sachems, kings and queens. The abolition of the tribal authority of the Indians occurred March 31, 1880, through the Indian Commission of Rhode Island.

**COVENTRY**—Coventry was the western part of Warwick, and was incorporated August 21, 1741. It contains 58.6 square miles, the second town in size in the State. For its early history, reference is made to Warwick, the mother town.

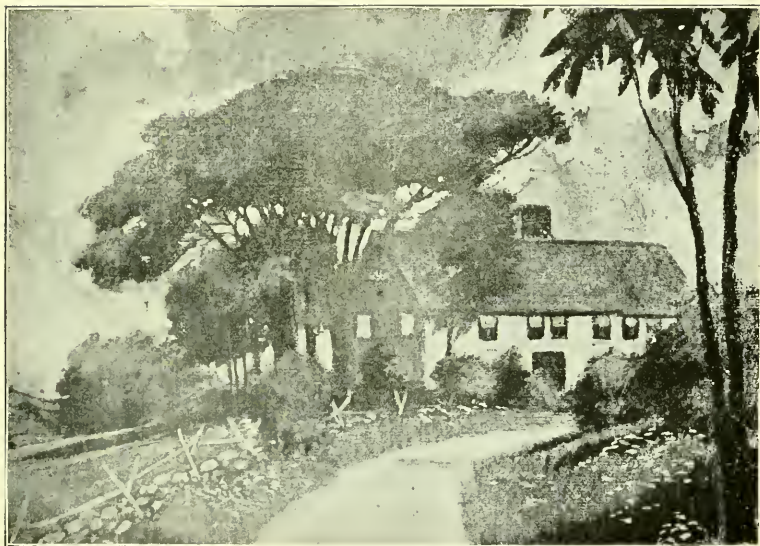
Villages: Washington, Anthony, Quidnick, Harris, Coventry Centre, Summit, Greene, Rice City, Arkwright and Whitman.

Indian Place Names: Pawtuxet, Moosup, name of son of Miantonomi; Mishnock, Quidnick, Tiogue.

Points of Historic Interest: The Home of General Nathanael Greene; old French Camping Ground; Lafayette's Well; Tift's Fort, projected by Joshua Tift, the renegade, 1675.

**CRANSTON**—Cranston was a part of Providence until its incorporation as a town, June 14, 1754. Portions of the town were re-annexed to Providence, June 10, 1868, and March 28, 1873. A proposition to organize a town from the western part of Providence, including the present towns of Cranston and Johnston, was defeated by a division of opinion as to which of the four following Indian names





OLD STANTON INN, CHARLESTOWN



should be adopted: Meshanticut, Pocasset, Mashapaug and Pawtuxet. When incorporated in 1754, the people chose Cranston, in honor of Governor Samuel Cranston, who held the office of Governor by twenty-nine annual elections, dying in office, April 26, 1727.

Villages: Cranston Print Works, Auburn, Pawtuxet, Arlington, Edgewood, Knightsville, Fiskeville, Oak Lawn, Howard, Pocasset, Arkwright. Indian Place Names: Sockanoset, Pocasset, Mashapaug, Mishantatuck.

Points of Historic Interest: The Thomas Fenner House—Thornton, built in 1677; used as a tavern and a country store. Major Thomas was son of Arthur Fenner, captain at Providence; Arthur Fenner's grave; coal mine at Sockanosett; iron mine, said to have been worked as early as 1735; a new vein of iron was opened by Governor Stephen Hopkins, in 1765, and worked until 1780. Mashapaug was an Indian town; Friends Meeting House at Oak Lawn, built in 1729; the State Penal and Reformatory institutions are at Howard; the main filter station and reservoir of the Providence water supply are at Howard.

Cranston was incorporated a city, March 10, 1910; first election held April 19, 1910, and city government was organized May 2, 1910.

CUMBERLAND—Cumberland, originally named Attleboro Gore, was one of the five towns annexed to Rhode Island, and incorporated January 27, 1746-47. Prior to that date it had been a part of Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay Colonies, since 1620. This territory was included in the grant of the Royal Charter of 1663, but was held by the neighboring colonies by decisions of the Royal Commissioners. The land area of Cumberland was about 20,000 acres. The town has been called the Mineral Pocket of New England, on account of the variety and richness of its ore deposits of iron, copper, granite and other minerals. It is said that the first cold-cut nail was made in 1777, by Jeremiah Wilkinson, of Cumberland, who died in 1822, aged 90 years.

Villages: Valley Falls, Lonsdale; Berkeley; Ashton; Manville; Arnold's Mills; Diamond Hill; Abbotts Run; Cumberland Hill; Robin Hollow; Happy Hollow; East Cumberland.

Rivers, Brooks and Ponds: Blackstone (Pawtucket); Abbott's Run (Indian Waywaponseag); East and West Sneece ponds; Whipple; Ashton; Manville; Lonsdale. Swamps: Nine Men's Misery; Burnt.

Historic Places: Nine Men's Misery, Grave and Cairn; Catholic Oak at Lonsdale; Unity Furnace; Diamond Hill and Plains; Ballou Meeting House, most primitive and interesting old house in the State; Duel Hollow; Study Hill, William Blackstone's home from 1634 to 1675; Blackstone Monument at Lonsdale; Cumberland granite quarries and localities of iron and copper ores.

The Smithfield and Cumberland Rangers were incorporated in 1776. Cumberland was named in honor of William Augustus, Duke of Cumberland, son of George II.; commanding general at Fontenoy, 1745, and at Culloden, 1746. A portion of Cumberland was incorporated as Woonsocket, January 31, 1867.

EAST GREENWICH—East Greenwich is the shire town of Kent county, and with West Greenwich constituted the north section of what was termed the Narragansett Country. It was incorporated as Greenwich, October 31, 1677, being named for the English town. Five thousand acres of land were set off for a township, and 500 on the Bay for a village. All to be divided into 50 shares to the following proprietors: John Spencer, Thomas Nichols, Clement Weaver, Henry Brightman, Geo. Vaughn, John Weaver, Charles McCarty, Thos. Wood, Thos. Fry, Benj. Griffin, Daniel Vaughn, Thos. Dungen, John P. Mason, Stephen Peckham, John Crandall, Henry Lilly, Thos. Martin, John Albro, Jr., Saml. Albro, Philip Long, Richard Knight, John & Thos. Peckham, Wm. Clarke, Edward Lay, Edward Richmond, Edmund Calverly, John Heath, Robert Havens, John Strange, Jr., John Parker, George Browne, Richard Barnes, Samson Battey, Jonathan Davoll, Benja-

min Mowry, Joseph Mowry, Wm. Wilbor, Jr., Giles Pearce, James Betty, John Remington, Benj. Gorton, Henry Dyre, John Knowles, Stephen Arnold, Jr., Wm. Hawkins, John Sanford, John Gorton and John Holden. Fones' purchase and Massachusetts purchase were added in 1678. Capt. Peleg Sanford and John Smith, of Newport, were appointed to survey this township and the whole Narragansett country.

In 1686, the name was changed to Deptford, but the name Greenwich was restored in 1689. The village at the east end of the town was called Newtown for a long time. The town has a long water front on Greenwich Bay, but the shallow water prevents the entrance of vessels of deep draught. The high land on the Bay makes Greenwich a beautiful residential town and it has a number of fine old Colonial mansions, an historic court house, and the East Greenwich Academy, a private fitting school conducted by the Methodists. The home of Prof. George W. Greene, the historian, was in East Greenwich; his house, the "Wind Mill House," is still standing. It is said that the poet Longfellow, a life friend of the historian, suggested moving the windmill from another site and attaching it to the house. Miss Jemina Wilkinson, the eccentric preacher, was born in East Greenwich. The old Quaker Meeting House is an object of historic interest, as it is the Colonial mansion of Gen. James M. Varnum, where Gen. Washington, Gen. Nathanael Greene, Franklin and Lafayette were his guests, and partook of his generous sideboard. The Governor William Greene house is an attractive historical place as the centre of fine Rhode Island hospitality a century and a half ago. In it Gen. Nathanael Greene was married. This house is on the Warwick side of Division street, which cuts the village in twain. The main street is a part of the Pequot Trail, leading from Providence to Westerly, and the post road to New York.

Villages: East Greenwich, Frenchtown, Fry's Four Corners.

Rivers: Greenwich, Massachusug, Potowomut, the upper part of the last bearing the name of Hunt's. Hills: Governor Greene's, Massachusug, Kenyons.

**EAST PROVIDENCE**—The westerly part of Indian Seekonk, prior to 1643, of Rehoboth, Massachusetts, from 1643 to 1812, of Seekonk, Massachusetts, from 1812 to March 1, 1862, and incorporated as a town and named East Providence in the settlement of the boundary line between Rhode Island and Massachusetts in 1862. In April, 1636, Roger Williams began a brief stay on this territory on the north bank of the Ten Mile river, near Phillipsdale, and removed across the Seekonk river to the land of the Narragansetts, on the advice of Governor Winslow, of Plymouth. The company of settlers from Weymouth, led by Rev. Samuel Newman, in 1643, purchased the land, and called their new town Rehoboth. In 1812, the west end of Rehoboth, Massachusetts was set off as Seekonk. In 1862, the final change was made and the territory west of the Ten Mile and Runens rivers was set into Rhode Island and named East Providence.

Villages: Watchemoket; Rumford; Hunt's Mill; Phillipsdale; Riverside; Bullock's Point. Rivers: Ten Mile and Runens.

Historic: Newman Church and Burial Ground; the Abell Garrison House; Little Neck Burial Ground, containing the graves of Hon. John Brown and wife and Capt. Thomas Willett and wife Mary; Capt. Willett was the successor of Myles Standish as captain of Plymouth Colony military forces, and was the first mayor of New York; Fort Hill shows earthworks thrown up in the Revolution; the home of Hon. Tristram Burgess stands on Burgess Hill, on Warren avenue; at Wannamoisett a monument has been erected, marking the north line of Sowams and the south line of ancient Rehoboth; Moskituash Brook, mentioned in the Sowams deed of 1653, has its source in springs about 60 rods east of this monument, and flows into Bullock's Cove; the sites of the homes of John Browne, Thomas Willett and the Willett Stockade Fort are near and east of Riverside R. R. Station; the interesting story of Rehoboth, written by Leonard Bliss, Jr., in 1836, and revised and enlarged by Rev. George H. Tilton, 1918, contains a large amount of valuable historical matter relating to East Providence.

**EXETER**—Exeter was taken from North Kingstown and incorporated March 8, 1742-43. It contains 58 square miles and is the third town in the State in area. This town contains the highest hill country of Washington county and here are found the sources of the rivers that furnish water power in that part of the State.

Villages: Arcadia; Exeter Hill; Mill; Yawgoo, and Browning's Mill.

Hills: Escocheag; Woody; Mt. Tom; Bald; Pine; Exeter, and Yawker. Brooks and Rivers: Flat; Wood; Queen's; Roaring; Kenyon; Goshen, and Mill.

Historic: Queen's Fort, now called Wilkie's Fort, an ancient rude fortification, is in the northeast part of the town. Wolf Rocks is a name given to a ravine at Yawker Hill, in the southeast part of the town, is about 650 feet long, with its sides supporting large boulders, 8 or 10 feet in diameter. It is probable that Miantonomi and wife Wawaloam lived at Aspanansuck, an Indian village in Exeter.

The old Ten Rod road runs through the town from east to west. The Pettaquamscutt Purchase Line bounds several large farms on the east side of the town. It runs nearly north and south. The State of Rhode Island has founded a school for feeble-minded children, in Exeter.

**FOSTER**—Foster was a part of the town of Scituate from February 20, 1730-31, to August 24, 1781, when it was incorporated, taking its name from Hon. Theodore Foster, U. S. Senator from Rhode Island, 1790-1803, who gave the town a good library and book-case and record books for the town clerk, and treasurer. It was first settled in 1717. Hon. Nelson W. Aldrich, Representative in the U. S. Congress, 1879-1881, and Senator 1881-1911, was born in Foster. Dr. Solomon Drowne, a distinguished scholar, botanist and physician, had a residence at Mt. Hygeia. Senator Foster had a summer residence near Dr. Drowne.

Villages: Foster, Foster Centre, South Foster, Hopkins Mills, Moosup Valley.

Hills: Nipmuck, Bennett, Mt. Vernon, Jerimoth, 700 feet high, next to Durfee Hill, in Glocester, the highest land in Rhode Island. The brooks from Jerimoth, Hygeia and Durfee Hills are tributary to the Pawtuxet river. There are six hills over 500 feet high. Rivers: Moosup, flowing west into Connecticut; Ponagansett, Hemlock.

**GLOCESTER**—Glocester was a part of the town of Providence, until February, 1730-31, when it was made a separate town and named in honor of the Duke of Glocester, son of George II., King of Great Britain. At this date the General Assembly passed an act for "erecting and incorporating the outlands of the town of Providence" into three towns, Glocester, Scituate and Smithfield. Glocester was first settled in 1700. "The Artillery Company of the County of Providence" was chartered in 1744, and was organized in this town. It was the second military company in the State and was later known as "The Glocester Cadets." At Acotes Hill, Chepachet, "Governor" Thomas Wilson Dorr ordered guns to be placed and troops to be stationed to protect the Dorr Legislature that had been called to meet at the place. On June 27, 1812, Dorr ordered the suffragists to disband and he withdrew to Connecticut. For full account, read "THE DORR WAR."

Villages: Chepachet, Harmony, West Glocester, Clarkeville, and Spring Grove.

Hills: Acotes, Tourtellotte, Absalona, Winsor's, Pine, Durfee (Matony), 805 feet, highest land in Rhode Island; Dandelion. Streams: Chepachet, Ponagansett, Poquanituck, Nipmuck, Woonasquatucket, and Brandy. The North Woods is an extensive forest in the west part of the town.

**HOPKINTON**—This town was a part of the ancient town of Westerly and was incorporated March 19, 1757. It was named in honor of Hon. Stephen Hopkins, at that time Governor of the Colony, who presented record books for the town officers and a case.

Villages: Hope Valley, Ashaway, Rockville, Canonchet, Niantic, Hopkinton City, Woodville, Moscow, Centreville, Locustville.

Rivers: Pawcatuck, Wood, Ashaway, Ashawog, Tomaquog. Valleys: Ashaway, Hope. Hills: Champlin, Maxon, Coon.

**JAMESTOWN**—Indian, Conanicut. This island was a part of the island territory included in the Patent given to William Coddington by English authority in 1651. In January, 1654-55, Governor Coddington and Benedict Arnold bought Conanicut. It was incorporated as a town of Rhode Island Colony, November 4, 1678, and was named in honor of James II., who became King of England on the death of Charles II., February 6, 1685. This island lies in the mouth of Narragansett Bay, is six miles long and has an average width of one mile.

Villages: Jamestown and Conanicut Park. Hills: Freeborn's, Beaver Tail. Points: Beaver Tail, with light house, Bull's, Taylor's, North Point and light-house. Islands: Conanicut, Dutch, Gould, and Rose.

Fortifications: Dumpling; Fort Brown, never completed; Dutch Island, 1861; Fort Hamilton on Rose Island, 1798-1800.

Ferry to Newport established, 1725. Ferry to South Kingstown established, 1748.

**JOHNSTON**—This town was taken from the town of Providence and incorporated March 6, 1759. A portion of it was restored to Providence in 1808. It was named for Hon. Augustus Johnston, of Newport, Attorney General of the Colony, 1758-1766.

Villages: Thornton, Simmonsville, Morgans Mills, Centredale, Greystone, Hughesdale, Mantion, Graniteville.

Hill: Neutakonkanut, 290 feet high. Rivers: Woonasquatucket, Pocasset. Ledges: Iron, Snakeden, Bear, Hipses Rock. Reservoirs: Simmons, Alinny's, Slack's, Dry Brook, Moswansicut.

Historic: The soapstone quarry on the Angell farm was the factory where the Indians cut out the various stone utensils which were in household use among the Narragansetts. Unfinished designs of pottery are seen in this ledge. The noted Ochee Spring is near the ledge. On this farm stood the famous elm, which was ruined in the September gale of 1869 and was cut down in 1873. In 1858, its girth one foot from the ground was 40 feet, six feet from the ground 23 feet, and twelve feet from the ground 28 feet; the girth of two branches were 14 and 14½ feet.

Bear Ledge furnished the granite monolith columns and façade of the Arcade at Providence, and the materials of the First Congregational Meeting House, Benefit street, Providence, were cut from Snakeden Ledge. Granite is the most plentiful rock in this town.

**LINCOLN**—This town, named in honor of President Abraham Lincoln, was taken from the town of Smithfield and incorporated March 8, 1871.

Villages and City: Central Falls, halfway between Pawtucket and Valley Falls, was incorporated a city March 18, 1895. Villages are Valley Falls, Lonsdale, Prospect Hill, Saylesville, Manville, Linerock, Albion, Ashton, Louisquisset.

Rivers: Blackstone (Pawtucket) and Moshassuck. On the banks of Mussey Brook near Albion, the manufacture of the first nails by machinery was begun.

Hills: Quinsnick (Caucaunjawatchuk); Jenckes, 400 feet; Stump Hill, 304 feet.

The Pawtucket Reservoir stands on the summit of Stump Hill; the ancient name of this hill was Observation Hill, a name which should be restored. Observation Rock once stood on the top of this hill, but was removed to make the base of the reservoir. Observation Meadow was the land on the west side of the hill, and is now covered with Olney's Pond, the south bound of Quinsnick or Lincoln Park. The brook, running eastward from the pond to the Moshassuck river was called Observation Run. *Absolute Swamp*, an original boundary of Providence, is the swamp north and west of Olney's Pond and east of the Louisquisset Pike.

Ponds: Scott's, with floating island, Olney's, Spectacle, Cranberry, and several ponded reservoirs above mill sites.

Lime is at three ledges—Dexter, Harris and Middle Hill. Stephen Dexter, eldest son of Gregory Dexter, began making lime at the Dexter ledge before



# HISTORIC HOUSES

LINCOLN WOODS DISTRICT



JONATHAN HILL HOUSE.

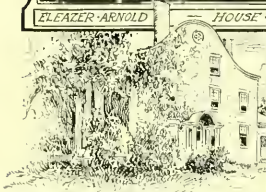


"HEARTHSTONE" - STEPHEN SMITH HOUSE



ELEAZER ARNOLD

HOUSE 1687



THE ABBY ARNOLD PLACE.



GRANITELEDGE FARM



ISRAEL ARNOLD HOUSE 1778.





Philip's War, 1675. The Harris quarry was opened by Thomas Harris, brother of William, one of the first settlers at Providence. Arnold's Ledge, on the west bank of the Moshassuck near Saylesville, produced fine natural-faced building stone.

Lincoln (Quinsnicket) Park, a State reservation, lies between the Break-Neck road on the north, the Moshassuck river on the east, Olney's Pond and brook on the south, and Absolute Swamp on the west.

The residence of Hon. Jonathan Arnold, author and mover of the Rhode Island Declaration of Independence, May 4, 1776, stood on the south side of the Break-Neck Road, half way between Absolute Swamp and the Providence and Woonsocket trolley railroad. The first public celebration of Independence Day was made at Providence, May 4, 1906, in the Mathewson Street Methodist Church, Providence, and originated with the Rhode Island Historical Society, Thomas W. Bicknell, President. The main historical address was given by Ex-Governor Charles Warren Lippitt. Others participating, with short addresses, were Governor George H. Utter, Ex-Governor Lucius F. C. Garvin, Charles Dean Kimball, William Sprague, and President Bicknell.

The Butterfly Factory, so named from a figure on the front wall resembling a butterfly had a remarkable bell on its tower. Around this bell below the crown is the inscription: "PEJER. SEEST. AMSTELODAME. ANNO. 1263. ME. FECIT." It thus appears that this bell was made in the old town of Amsterdam, Holland, in 1263. Its history has been traced to an English convent where it was long in use; then was sequestered during the Reformation; was used in the English Navy; was in use on the British ship-of-war "Guerriere," when she was captured by the United States frigate "Constitution" ("Old Ironsides"), August 19, 1812. The bell was sold with a lot of naval stores by the United States government and it fell into the hands of the late Stephen H. Smith, who hung it in the belfry of his mill opposite his Colonial mansion, at Quinsnicket. The bell has been removed and its whereabouts are not known to the public. It is hoped that the old bell will, at no distant day become the property of the State.

It is believed that an Indian village once occupied the valley of the Moshassuck above Saylesville, and that the deed to Roger Williams under date of March 24, 1638 found its northern limit on an east and west line from the present village of Lonsdale across Lincoln (Quinsnicket) Park to Absolute Swamp and from thence, in an irregular line, by Bewitt's Brow to Neutakonkanut Hill. It has only recently been proven most conclusively the capture of Canonchet, April, 1676, was made on the Blackstone, about a mile northeast of the Quaker Meeting House at Saylesville, in the present town of Lincoln.

**LITTLE COMPTON**—This town is one of the five received from Massachusetts by the change of the eastern boundary line and was incorporated into Rhode Island Colony, January 27, 1746-47, and was annexed to Newport county in 1747. Its Indian name was Sakonet. The original purchasers were residents of Duxbury and Marshfield, including William Peabody, Josiah Winslow and others, in 1659. Capt. Benjamin Church was the first white settler in 1674. It was incorporated as a town in Plymouth Colony in 1682.

Villages: The Commons, Adamsville, and Sakonet.

Hills: Simmons and Wind Mill. Points: Sakonet, Warren's, and Church's.

Historic: Treaty Rock, home of Awashonks, Queen of the Sakonet tribe, Indian burial ground, early settlers, and their graves,—Benjamin Church and wife Alice, William Peabody and his wife Betty Alden, John Alyn, John Irish, Col. Sylvester Richmond, and his father Edward, Rev. I. R. Slicer's wind mill house, Ray Palmer's birthplace, and the birthplace and home of the poet, George S. Burleigh.

**MIDDLETOWN**—This town was a part of Newport until its incorporation, August, 1753. It has no village nor post office. The country portion, or farming and

heavily wooden section sought for a separate town to free themselves from the taxation and other expenses of the thickly settled town.

Hills: Honeymans, Slate, Bliss, Mars. Ponds: Easton's, Peckhams and Gordners. Points: Sachuest and Easton's. Rocks: Paradise, Purgatory, Hanging Rock, under which Bishop Berkeley wrote "The Minute Philosopher," the Sisters, Dairyhouse, Half-tide, Saddle, Whetstone, Devil and Squaw. Beaches: Sachuest and Easton's.

Historic: Whitehall, residence of Bishop Berkeley, 1729-31; Coddington's Cove; Watch House near shelf of rocks. Samuel G. Arnold, the historian, had his home in Middletown, at the time of his death, July 14, 1880. Mrs. Julia Ward Howe had her home in Middletown.

**NARRAGANSETT**—Narragansett is the eastern section of the former town of South Kingstown, and includes the two necks, Boston Neck and Point Judith Neck. Narragansett Bay is its eastern boundary line and the Pettaquamscutt river and Cove, and Point Judith Pond are on the west. It was set off and incorporated as a town, March 12, 1901, and perpetuates the name of the great tribe over a favorite territory for their village life and their most valued resorts for hunting and fishing.

Villages: Point Judith, Narragansett Pier, Narragansett Ferry, and Boston Neck.

Rivers: Pettaquamscutt, Pettaquamscutt Cove. Points: The Bonnet, Boston Neck, Little Neck, Point Judith.

History: The history of this section is to be found in the general history of the Narragansett country. The Pequot War led Boston military men through this country, and, attracted by its great fertility, its land and sea resources and fine scenery, a company was formed under the leadership of Major Humphrey Ather-ton, John Winthrop, Jr., and others to buy two large tracts on the Bay—Quidnesset, now Wickford, and Namcook, or Boston Neck, in 1650. These purchases led to the Pettaquamscutt Purchase by Boston capitalists later.

**NEWPORT**—April 28, 1639, William Coddington, judge, Nicholas Easton, John Coggeshall, William Brenton, elders, and John Clarke, Jeremy Clarke, Thomas Hazard, Henry Bull, with William Dyre as clerke, agreed, at Pocasset (Portsmouth) "to propagate a Plantation in the midst of the Island or elsewhere, \* \* \* engaging ourselves to bear equal charges, answerable to our strength and estates in common; and that our determinations shall be by major voice of judge and elders, the judges to have a double voice."

On May 16, 1639, a plantation was begun at the southwest end of the Island of Aquidneck, called Newport, the new town to include all the lands from sea to sea on an east and west line, five miles to the north and east. Before August 9, 1639, fifty male members had been admitted to citizenship in the new town, Newport. Civil government was at once set up. Courts for the trial of civil and criminal cases were established and the various town officers were elected. William Coddington was chosen as judge, Robert Jeffreys treasurer, William Dyre, clerk, and Jeremy Clarke, constable. At a meeting of the General Court of Election held at Newport, March 12, 1640, it appears that the two towns, Pocasset and Newport acted as a "Bodie united," that eighteen persons were admitted freemen, that it was voted that the "chief magistrate of the Island shall be called Governour, and the next Deputie Governour and the rest of the Magistrates, Assistants." This union of the two towns constituted a civil government, styled a Colony on Aquidneck, afterwards styled the Colony of Rhode Island. The first regular order of the General Assembly was: "It is ordered that the Plantation at the other end of the Island shall be called Portsmouth."

At the first Colonial election, in 1640, Mr. William Coddington, of Newport, was chosen Governor, Mr. William Brenton, of Portsmouth, Deputy, or Lieutenant Governor, William Dyre, secretary, and Robert Jeffreys and William Baulston, treasurers of the Colony.

The full record of the settlements at Pocasset and at Newport and the union of the two towns in the Colony of Rhode Island will be found in Rhode Island Colonial Records, Vol. I., pp. 45 to 116, inc.

Historic Localities and Buildings: Old Stone Mill, built by Governor Benedict Arnold, 1676; Old State House, begun 1739; Trinity Church, 1725; Friends Meeting House, 1700; Jewish Synagogue, 1763; Seventh Day Baptist Meeting House, first house of this order in America, 1729; Congregational Meeting House, 1729; Whitehall, Bishop Berkeley's residence, 1731.

Newport was incorporated as a city June 1, 1784. George Hazard was the first mayor. This charter was repealed in March, 1787, and the people remained under a town government until May, 1853, when it was re-incorporated as a city.

NEW SHOREHAM—New Shoreham was incorporated as a town by the General Assembly, November 6, 1672. The township occupies the Island of Block Island, the Indian Manisses. Verrazano discovered it in 1524, calling it Claudia, in honor of the Queen of France. In 1614, Adrian Block visited the island and gave it his own Dutch name. In 1636, John Oldham, a Massachusetts Indian trader was murdered by the Island Indians—the immediate cause of the Pequot War, Massachusetts sending ninety soldiers under Capt. John Endicott, to revenge the murder and to attack the Pequots at New London. The island was granted to Governor John Endicott and three others as a reward for public services in behalf of the Massachusetts Colony, in 1658. In 1660, Endicott and his associates sold it to Simon Ray, of Braintree, Massachusetts, and sixteen others for £400. In 1661, the purchasers surveyed the island and began the settlement of the town, setting apart one-seventeenth of the land for the perpetual support of a Christian minister. The sixteen other divisions were distributed by lot to the purchasers, who embarked from Taunton in the spring of 1662, landing at Cow Cove. Until 1664, the island was under the jurisdiction of Massachusetts, but was then transferred to Rhode Island, when local government was established, vested in three selectmen, with liberty to send two deputies to the General Assembly of the Colony. The Deputies from the island took their seats in the Assembly, in May, 1665. At the May session, the Governor, Deputy Governor and Dr. John Clarke, were chosen a committee to see if a harbor could be made at the island. In November, 1672, Block Island was incorporated a town under the name of New Shoreham. In July, 1690, a naval battle took place off Block Island, when Capt. Thomas Paine won a victory over the French fleet of seven privateers.

Block Island is about thirty miles from Newport, thirteen from Point Judith, and eighteen from Montauk Point. Its latitude  $41^{\circ} 8'$  north, and the longitude is  $71^{\circ} 33'$  west.

Beacon Hill is 300 feet high; Great Salt Pond is the largest of a dozen ponds; bog and peat lands abound; the places of historic interest are the Palatine Graves, Cow Cove, Pocock Meadow, Indian Burial Ground, Fort Island, Indian Head Neck, Mohegan Bluffs, Old Harbor, Founders' Burial Ground, etc. There are three lighthouses and other marine protectors.

NORTH KINGSTOWN—North Kingstown is one of the towns of the "Narragansett Country," and within its bounds were the homes of the sachems Canonicus and Miantonomi and hence the seat of the tribe at the time of the settlement at Providence. The territory at and about the present village of Wickford was called Narragansett and it was here, at the wigwam of Canonicus, the headquarters of the tribe and their business centre and capital, that the deeds of the lands at Moshassuck and Aquidneck were executed, March 24, 1638.

Richard Smith was the first white settler in the "Narragansett country," purchasing a tract of land in 1641, among the thickest of the Indians, computed to number 30,000, building a trading house and giving free entertainment to travelers. This house stood near "the great road of the country," and its site is now

occupied by the Updike house at Cawcumscussuc. It is known that material parts of the Smith block house were worked into the structure of the present mansion. The Indian trail, known as the Narragansett or Pequot trail, crossed the brook just west of the Smith house. This was later the great road for all the travel from Boston and Providence to Southern Rhode Island, Connecticut and New York.

About 1644-45, Roger Williams built a trading house at Narragansett, spending much of his time in barter with the Indians, until 1651, when he sold to Richard Smith, his neighbor on the south, about a mile away, all his belongings, including two big guns and a small island for goats. The Havens-Spink tavern stood about a half mile south of the Williams trading post.

In July, 1663, the Atherton Company chose to be under the government of Connecticut, and the Governor and Council of that Colony extended their jurisdiction over the Narragansett country and named the plantation Wickford, probably so called from the fact that Mrs. Elizabeth Winthrop, wife of Governor John Winthrop, of Connecticut, came from Wickford, England, and had already given her name to Elizabeth Spring at Potowomut.

In 1665, a Royal Commission decided that the Narragansett country belonged to Rhode Island and named it King's Province, over which the Governor and Council of Rhode Island were magistrates. October 28, 1674, "Kings Towne" was incorporated as the seventh town of Rhode Island, with an area of 178.5 square miles, including the present towns of North and South Kingstown and Exeter.

On Saturday, December 18, 1675, the Colonial troops, collected at the Smith Garrison, set out for the battle with the Indians in the Narragansett Swamp, and spent the night at Pettaquamscutt. The battle took place on Sunday, the 20th, when about 80 of the English were killed and 150 were wounded. On their return to the Smith Garrison, 40 of the dead were buried in one grave, near a large rock, in the rear of the block-house. A tablet marks the burial place at Cocomscussuc.

In 1683, the Royal Commissioners led by Governor Cranfield, reported to the Crown that the Narragansett territory belonged of right to Connecticut, and in 1686, the name of Kings Towne was changed to Rochester, Westerly to Feversham, and Greenwich to Deptford. In 1723, the General Assembly divided Kings Towne into two towns, North and South Kingstown, the records going to North Kingstown.

Wickford is the principal village, and was formerly a port of entry. Other villages are Lafayette, Hamilton, Wickford Junction, Annaquatucket, Slocums.

Historic Places: Richard Smith's Block House, Roger Williams' Trading House, Gilbert Stuart's Birthplace, Boston Neck, Namcook, St. Paul's Church, at Wickford, Quidnesset, McSparran Monument, Grave of Forty Soldiers at Cocomscussuc.

**NORTH PROVIDENCE**—North Providence was a part of the town of Providence, until June 13, 1765, when it was incorporated. Providence had over four hundred freemen. Those in the compact part were engaged in commercial affairs; those in the country were farmers. In their demand for a separate town the farmers won, and made a fatal mistake. The right to use the North Burial Ground as a parade and cemetery was granted the new town. North Providence sent droves of sheep to Boston, in 1774 for the relief of that town. The North Providence Rangers Military Company was chartered by the Assembly in 1774. The State powder mill in this town was blown up in 1779. The main body of the French Army under Count de Rochambeau encamped in this town, in the fall and winter of 1782-83. A monument in Providence now marks the camp ground. Small portions were restored to Providence, June 20, 1767, March 28, 1873, and March 27, 1874. At the last date a portion was annexed to Pawtucket, leaving the town the smallest in the State. Capt. Stephen Olney, a distinguished officer in the Revolution, died on the ancestral farm in North Providence, November 23, 1832. Captain Olney led the storming column, at Yorktown, Virginia, October 15, 1777. His grave, in the family burial ground, on the farm, is marked by a marble stone.



MAIN STREET, WICKFORD





Villages: Allendale, named after Hon. Zachariah Allen (1795-1882); Centredale; Lymanville, named after Judge Daniel Lyman; Greystone; Woodville, and Fruit Hill.

Hills: Fruit and Wilbor's. Rivers: Woonasquatucket and West.

**NORTH SMITHFIELD**—North Smithfield was a part of the town of Smithfield until March 8, 1871. When it was incorporated as the town of Slater. It held the name of Slater sixteen days, when it was changed by the General Assembly to North Smithfield. Its bounds are the State of Massachusetts and the city of Woonsocket on the north, Woonsocket and Lincoln on the east, Smithfield on the south, and Burrillville on the west. The census of 1910 gave the town a population of 2,699. In 1890, it had 3,173. The town valuation in 1910 was—real estate, \$1,615,575; personal estate, \$470,090; total, \$2,085,665; tax on each \$100, \$1; town debt, \$26,033.16.

Villages: Slatersville, Forestdale, Primrose, Field's Station, Waterford, Union Village, Branch Village.

Hills: Woonsocket, 576 feet; Sayles, Primisey. Rivers: Blackstone, Little, and Branch.

Slatersville was founded by John Slater, brother of Samuel, of Pawtucket. The two brothers built and operated a cotton mill in this village and John was buried in the village cemetery.

**PAWTUCKET**—Pawtucket is an Indian place-word and means "*At the Falls.*" It was first used in the deed of Miantonomi to Roger Williams, 1638, as follows: "From the River and fields at Pawtucket" to Absolute Swamp and Neutakonkanut Hill. The word "Pawtuxet" appears in the same deed and means "*at the Little Falls.*" The Pawtucket river was the east boundary of the Providence Proprietary of 1638 and "the Fields" occupied the northeastern section of ancient Providence. An early settlement was made near the Falls before 1675, but it was wiped out in Philip's War. After that War, the settlers returned and began to use the water power below the falls. The village of Pawtucket constituted a part of North Providence, when that town was set off from Providence in 1765. The first known settler in Pawtucket was Joseph Jenckes, the pioneer worker in brass and iron, who came to "The Pawtucket Fields" in 1655, setting up his forge for casting iron blooms on the banks of the Moshassuck, where the bog iron and charcoal were found available. The Pierce fight took place on "The Pawtucket Fields" in 1676. In the original lay-out of Rehoboth, in 1643, the land on the east side of the Pawtucket Falls was in that town, in Plymouth Colony. It remained a part of Rehoboth, Massachusetts, until 1812, when it became a part of Seekonk from 1812 to 1828, when it was incorporated as Pawtucket, Massachusetts. In 1862, the town of Pawtucket was annexed to Rhode Island and that with the village of Pawtucket, on the west side of the rivers were consolidated as the town of Pawtucket on May 1, 1874. The act incorporating Pawtucket as a city was passed March 27, 1885, was adopted by the people April 1, 1885, and the city was organized January 4, 1886. The village of Pawtucket has been properly styled "The cradle of the cotton manufacturing business of this country." Samuel Slater began his work at Pawtucket through the agency of Moses Brown, of Providence, who had made an attempt to spin cotton by machinery. In January, 1790, Mr. Slater came to Pawtucket, examined the Brown machines and found them worthless. Mr. Slater at once undertook the construction of an Arkwright machine from his knowledge and memory of the English spinner, and in December, 1790, as he states, "I started three cards, drawing and roving, and seventy-two spindles, which were worked by an old fulling mill water wheel, in a clothier's building, in which were continued spinning about twenty months, at the expiration of which time we had several thousand pounds of yarn on hand, notwithstanding every exertion was used to weave it up and sell it." The partnership of Almy, Brown and Slater was formed in 1790 to manufacture cotton cloth and the first mill was built in 1793, now known

as "The Old Slater Mill," still standing in Pawtucket, a few rods above the Falls, on the west bank of the Pawtucket river, on land known in the first deed as "The Pawtucket Fields."

The house in which Mr. Samuel Slater lived is standing on North Main street, Pawtucket, in which Mr. Slater founded a Sunday school for the instruction of children, youths and adults in reading, spelling, writing and the Bible, in September, 1797.

Rivers: Pawtucket, Blackstone, and Ten Mile. The first bridge across the Pawtucket river, at the Falls, was built by the Colonies of Massachusetts and Rhode Island in 1713, at a cost of £223 14s. 11d. The first bridge becoming dangerous for crossing, it was destroyed in 1730, and a new bridge was built by the two Colonies in 1731, and rebuilt in 1740.

In 1824, Horace Jenckes' Diligence was making two trips a day between Pawtucket and Providence and a flat-bottomed steamboat made a daily trip between the two towns carrying passengers and freight. The cash fare by land or water was 25 cents.

Pawtucket is one of the most industrious and prosperous cities of New England. It combines the traditions and landmarks of "the village" with the enterprise and public spirit of the modern city. The Deborah Cooke Sayles Library is housed in a fine modern building and is wisely administered and well patronized. A well appointed hospital ministers to the sick and suffering. The population in 1910 was 51,622. The city valuation is \$47,416,080. The tax rate is \$16.50 per \$1,000.

PORTSMOUTH—Portsmouth is the oldest town in Rhode Island. It occupies the north half of Aquidneck Island, which was purchased of Miantonomi, by William Coddington and others, March 24, 1638, the same day that the Narragansett sachem gave to Roger Williams the lands at Moshassuck. Its Indian name was Pocasset. Its English name, Portsmouth, was adopted in 1639, and confirmed at Newport, on the union of the two towns, in 1640. The town was settled by nearly 100 families of Boston, some quite wealthy for that period, and nearly all of the adults were members of the Puritan churches in and about Boston. The town was organized by the adoption of a compact and the election of the usual town officers in May, 1638. A meeting house was built and religious services were conducted by Dr. John Clarke, the leader of the townspeople from Boston. It is believed that the first church of the Congregational polity, pure and simple, was organized at Portsmouth in 1638. If so it was the first in New England and the first in the world. The town was laid out about the Cove, in the northeast part of the Island, north of the present village of Newtown. The site is still located by old wells and excavations for cellars. For a detailed account of the settlement at Portsmouth, the reader is referred to the chapters on Aquidneck. Newport was founded at the south end of the Island in 1639, and the two towns united to form Rhode Island Colony in 1640, electing William Coddington the first President on March 12, 1640, he holding that office by annual election of the Aquidneck Colony until May, 1647. In 1647, Portsmouth was the most populous of the five towns of the United Colonies.

Villages: Newtown, Bristol Ferry, and South Portsmouth.

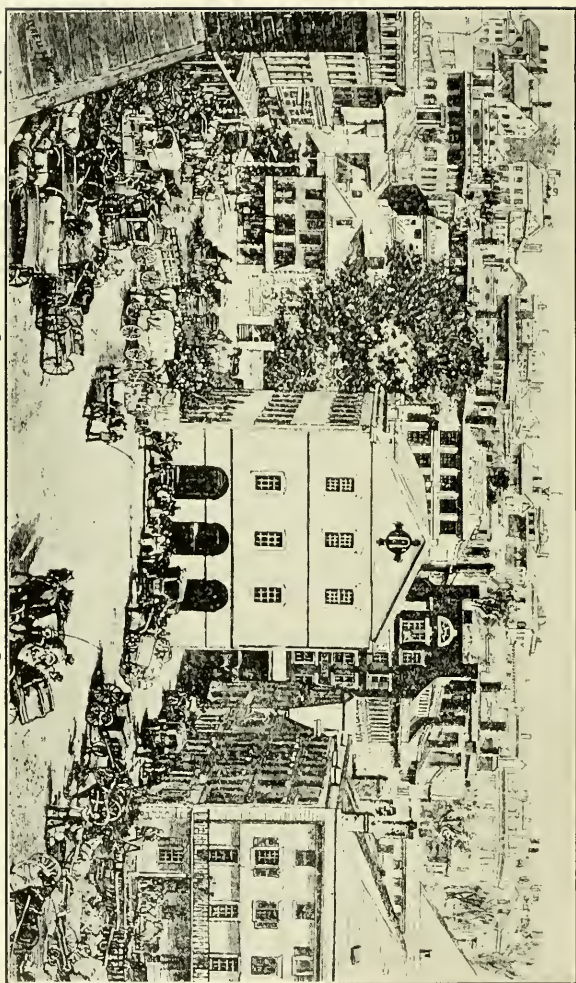
Islands: Prudence, Patience, Hope, Despair, Dyer's, Hen, and Chickens. Hills: Quaker or Windmill, Turkey, Butts, Lawton's with remnant of an earthwork.

Battle Ground: The Battle of Rhode Island was fought in Portsmouth in 1778. The American troops occupied Butts Hill, the British, Quaker Hill. (See chapter on the American Revolution).

PROVIDENCE—Providence is fully described and illustrated elsewhere in this work.

RICHMOND—Richmond was a part of the town of Charlestown before its incorporation as a town, August 18, 1747. It was a territory called "vacant lands," in King Ninigret's country, in the north part of Charlestown. A small payment





MARKET PLACE IN PROVIDENCE

was made to the Indians, as a large part of the lands were too sandy for agriculture. The town was named in honor of Edward Richmond, Attorney General of the Colony from 1677 to 1681, and who was active in the settlement of Westerly. The inhabitants are engaged in agriculture and manufactures.

Villages: Wyoming, Hope Valley, Wood River Mills, Carolina, Shannock, Clark's Mills, Kenyon, Usquepaug, Arcadia, Barberryville.

Rivers: Beaver, Wood, Ashuniunk, Queens, Charles. These rivers have valuable water power privileges, which are utilized for various manufactures.

SCITUATE—Scituate was a part of early Providence and was incorporated as a town, February 20, 1730-31. Its name is of Indian origin and was adopted at the suggestion of settlers who came from Scituate, Massachusetts, in 1710. The old seven-mile line was made the western limit of Providence. All west of the Seven-mile line and north of Warwick to the Massachusetts line and east of the Connecticut line was divided into two towns. The south town was called Scituate and the north, Glocester. Trumbull thinks the word Scituate means a swift-flowing stream.

The Plainfield Pike between Providence and Connecticut was laid out through the south part of the town. A furnace company was established in the town before 1769. The town sent a donation of 120 sheep for the relief of Boston, in 1774. A military company, called the Scituate Hunters was chartered in 1774. In 1777, the town instructed their representatives in the General Assembly to secure an act by which the representation of the towns in the General Assembly "shall be adjusted on a basis of population and property." The two houses failed to agree on a bill in 1779. On August 20, 1781, the town was divided, the west half taking the name of Foster.

Villages: Elmdale, North Scituate, South Scituate, Saundersville, Ashland, Ponaganset, Rockland, Clayville, Richmond, Hope, Fiskeville, Jackson.

Hills: Rocky, Nipmuc, Beacon Pole, Chopmist, Tunk. Ponds: Moswansicut, Ponaganset.

At Hope Village, cannon were cast during the Revolutionary War, from material obtained at the Cranston Iron Mine.

Stephen Hopkins, Esek Hopkins, Lieutenant-Governor William West and Isaac Saunders were natives or residents of Scituate.

SMITHFIELD—Smithfield was originally a part of the "outlands" of old Providence and was incorporated as a town, February 26, 1730-31. Two Quaker meeting houses were erected in this section early, one at "Lower Smithfield" in 1704, and one at "Upper Smithfield" in 1710. Settlements had been made by Sayles, Arnold, Mowry, Comstock, Scott, and other families. William Blaxton owned land in Smithfield as early as 1635. Other families included Steere, Whipple, Waterman, Jenckes, Aldrich, Angell, Winsor, Inman, Ballou, Wilkinson, Paine, Harris, Jillson, Mann, Sprague, Thayer.

The original bounds of Smithfield had the Pawtucket river as its north and east boundary, its south line was due east and west from a point a half mile north from Pawtucket Falls, and its west line was the Providence Seven-mile line, with the town of Glocester on the west.

Smithfield gave 150 sheep for the relief of Boston, in 1774. Conventions were held in Smithfield and Scituate in favor of paper money and in opposition to the merchant class of Providence.

Villages: Greenville, named in honor of Gen. Nathanael Greene; Georgiaville, Stillwater, Enfield, Spragueville, and Smithfield.

About 1667-1670 lands were surveyed and allotted about Wyonkeag Hill, with the evident purpose of founding a town in that part of "the outlands." (See Providence Records, Vol. III).

Wyonkeag Hill is the highest land elevation in the town—572 feet. Woonasquatucket river flows through the town.

Distinguished men of the town include Peleg Arnold, member of Continental Congress, 1786-90; Daniel Mowry, member of Continental Congress, 1780-82; Adin B. Capron, House of Representatives, Washington, 1897-1911; Nathan B. Sprague, Thomas Steere, Sullivan Ballou, and Adin B. Capron, speakers of the Rhode Island House of Representatives; and Hon. Jonathan Arnold, author of the Rhode Island Declaration of Independence, May 4, 1776.

**SOUTH KINGSTOWN**—The early history of this town may be found in the chapter on the Narragansett Country. It has the largest area of any town in Rhode Island and is in many respects the most interesting town. It was incorporated, February 26, 1722-23. The agricultural fairs, held annually at West Kingstown, testify to the productive value of the soils and the industrial products of southwestern Rhode Island. The location of the Rhode Island State College at Kingstown, founded in 1889, during the administration of Governor John W. Davis, was the direct result of the influence of the farmer class in the South County.

Villages: Peace Dale, noted as the home centre of the Hazard manufacturing interests; Wakefield, Rocky Brook, Kingston, West Kingston, Usquepaug, Glen Rock, Perryville, Burnside, Green Hill, Moorsfield, Boston Neck, Tower Hill, Matunuc, with several other minor localities.

There are more than fifty ponds in the town of which Worden's, Indian Pesquamscut, is the largest body of fresh water in the State. Many of these ponds are stocked with fish, and already furnish a variety of excellent fish food. There are rivers, brooks and large springs almost without number. The largest rivers are the Pawtucket, the Pettaquamscut, Usquepaug, Shickashen, and Matunuc, Tower Hill, McSparran, Little Rest, Sugar Loaf. Upper and Lower Mountain are the larger of more than forty considerable elevations. The points, beaches, rocks, swamps, woods and groves furnish variety of scenery, varying land and water scenes and nature studies unlimited in extent and interest. History has dealt bountifully with South Kingstown as the chief town of the Narragansett country. It is also the real Rhode Island field of romance, art and poetry.

Among localities and events of historic interest we need only mention the Pequot Trail, the Narragansett Swamp Fight, Old Indian Fort, Commodore Oliver Hazard Perry birthplace, the Bonnet, Dorothea's Hollow, Slave Pen, Pettaquamscut, Tower Hill, Ordination Oak, Lafayette's Headquarters, Jemima Wilkinson's Home, Wager Weeder's Fountain, Druid's Dream, Bull's Garrison House, Indian Burial Ground, Soldiers' Monument, Hazard Memorials at Peacedale, and many other places both of local and general interest, including Colonial residences and architecture—reminders of the early days of the Narragansett settlers.

The attractive features of South Kingstown scenery, life and history led Rev. Edward Everett Hale to choose it as his residence and place of study and rest, for many years before his death.

**TIVERTON**—Tiverton was a part of Plymouth Colony until the union of that Colony with the Bay in 1692, when it passed under the rule of the latter. On March 2, 1679-80, certain gentlemen made public announcement to use their utmost endeavor for the settlement of Pocasset, the Indian country now occupied by Tiverton and Little Compton. These persons were Edward Gray, Nathaniel Thomas, Christopher Almy, Thomas Waite, Job Almy, Daniel Wilcox, and William Manchester, the purchasers. Col. Benjamin Church had drawn a lot in Sakonet lands in 1674, and was building the first house in that section, when Philip's War broke out, June, 1675. He says he was the first Englishman to settle on the Pocasset Neck. Pocasset was the home of the Pocasset tribe, whose Queen was Weetamoo, the wife of Alexander, chief sachem of the Wampanoags, after the death of his father, Massasoit, about 1663. After Alexander's early death, Weetamoo married Peter Nunnuit, who, in Philip's War took sides with the English, while Weetamoo remained faithful to Philip, her first husband's brother.





*O. H. Perry*

"The Hero of Lake Erie"





In 1694, Tiverton was incorporated as a town by Massachusetts Colony. In 1688, William Wanton settled in Pocasset from Scituate, Massachusetts, and began ship-building at Bridgeport, near the Stone Bridge.

In 1747, Tiverton was one of the towns that was set off to Rhode Island, and then included a part of the city of Fall River, which was ceded to Massachusetts, March 1, 1862, in exchange for Pawtucket and East Providence, then a part of Massachusetts.

Villages: Stone Bridge, Tiverton Heights, Tiverton Four Corners, and Bridgeport.

Hills: Fort Barton, Tiverton Heights, High, Windmill, Nanaquacket. Ponds: North Watuppa, South Watuppa, Nonquit, Nauaquacket.

Historic: Col. William Barton was stationed at Tiverton Camp, 1777, when he planned the capture of Gen. Prescott. This camp is now Fort Barton. A small breastworks, called the Owl's Nest, was raised on Gould Island. The American troops had their quarters in Tiverton before and after the battle of Rhode Island, 1778.

WARREN—Warren was originally a tract of Swansea, in Plymouth Colony, a town which was incorporated in 1667. It was also part of Consumpsit Neck, but on the incorporation of Swansea, a rail fence was built across the neck, from the Sowams to the Kickemuit river, about twenty rods north of Kickamuit Spring. Another fence was built across the Neck, about two miles north of the Spring and this territory was known as Brook's Pasture, where the settlers of Swansea made a common pasturage for their cattle, horses, sheep and swine. The pasture was named for Timothy Brooks who, it is said, built the first house in this section. It appears that Swansea bought the land on which Warren is located of Totomom-muck, in 1673. (See Plymouth Colonial Records, Vol. VI, pp. 16, 17).

After Philip's War, the Mount Hope lands were sold and settlers came to occupy the unoccupied lands of Consumpsit Neck and along the banks of the Kickemuit. Swansea people also moved southward. Barrington—ancient Sowams—had become well settled, and, in 1717, "the westward end of Swansea" was incorporated by Massachusetts Colony, the people choosing an old English home-town name, Barrington, and holding it until 1747. The new boundary line of 1747 between Massachusetts and Rhode Island Colonies set nearly the whole of Barrington into Rhode Island, except the section known as Wannamoisett, bought and settled by Hon. John Browne, in 1643. The south part of Swansea and the whole of Bristol were added also to Rhode Island. The piece of Swansea cut from the territory of Swansea was added to Barrington, which had enjoyed a separate town life for thirty years. At this time, Admiral Peter Warren had won great renown as a naval commander in the reduction of the French fort at Louisburg and the capture of a French fleet off Cape Finisterre, and the name of the hero of these great exploits was substituted for modest Barrington. In 1770, the Barrington people besought the General Assembly for a separation from the Swansea contingent and the territory called Barrington in 1747, resumed its chosen name.

The industry of ship-building, begun in Barrington, at an early day was later transferred to Warren and Barneysville, on account of deeper water for launching.

Rev. James Manning established a secondary school in Warren in 1764, which developed into Rhode Island College, the first graduations being at Warren, in 1769. A part of Bristol was annexed to Warren in 1873, including Kickemuit Spring.

Rivers: Kickemuit; the ancient Sowams separates Warren from Barrington. Col. William Barton, the captor of Gen. Prescott was born in Warren. Hezekiah Butterworth, the poet, was a native of Kickemuit, or East Warren.

WARWICK—The town of Warwick, including the present towns of Coventry and West Warwick was bought of Miantonomi, January 12, 1642-43. The early history of the town is traced in the chapter on Warwick. The town has a most

interesting history and it is now the centre of many of the most enterprising manufacturing properties in Rhode Island.

Villages: Apponaug, Pawtuxet, Old Warwick, Oakland Beach, Buttonwoods (Indian Nausocket), Coweset, Greenwood, Hill's Grove, Bayside, Conimicut, Warwick Neck, Potowomut, Spring Green, Lakewood, Cole's Station, Shawomut, Pontiac.

Rivers: Pawtuxet, Potowomut. Brooks: Aponakee, Tushkatucket, Kickemuit, Masquachaug. Coves: Pawtuxet, Occupassuatuxet, Apponaug, Passaconquis, Coweset Bay. Points: Gaspee, Conimicut, Rocky, Sandy, Choppaquonset. Island: Chipewanoxt.

Historic: The Siege of Warwick took place at the head of old Warwick Cove, 1643. Greene's stone castle stood on the Apponaug road near the head of the same Cove. Spring Green was once the home of John Greene, John Brown, of Providence, and Governor John Brown Francis. The house in which Gen. Nathaniel Greene was born stands at Potowomut and near it the Greene family burial ground; also a monument to Gen. Greene. The Governor William Greene house stands on the north side of Division street in East Greenwich Village. It was the centre of political and social life in the period of the Revolution. The sub-sachem Pomham lived in Warwick. The Coweset tribe also had its home in Warwick for a time at least.

It is now the belief of many historical scholars that the "Gaspee" was grounded and burned on Conimicut Point and not on Namquit or Gaspee Point, about two miles north of the former.

"Here lieth the bodie of Sara Tefft interred March 16, 1642," is inscribed on a stone on Cole's farm, at Cole Station.

The grave of Ezekiel Holliman, the man who baptized Roger Williams may be found in a family burial ground, southwest of Shawomet Station. Elizabeth Spring is at the head of Potowomut, near the Pequot Trail.

WEST GREENWICH—West Greenwich was set off from East Greenwich, and incorporated April 6, 1741. It has been an agricultural town, while its distance from the Bay and its want of waterpower have hindered its growth.

Villages: Nooseneck, West Greenwich Centre, Escoheag, supposed to mean, "the source of three rivers."

Hills: Hopkin's, Nooseneck, Raccoon, Weaver's, Bald, Escoheag, Breakheart, Fisher. The hills are over 450 feet high. Rivers: Mishnock, Nooseneck, Congdon, Great, flowing north; Wood, flowing south.

WESTERLY—Westerly takes its name from its location in the southwest corner of Rhode Island. Its Indian name was Misquamicut—"a place for catching salmon." It was settled by a Colony from Newport, in 1661, and was incorporated May 14, 1669—the first in "the King's Province and the fifth in the Colony of Rhode Island." The original town contained 153.4 square miles from the three towns of Hopkinton, Charlestown and Richmond have been taken. From 1686 to 1689, the town bore the name of Faversham, a town in England. Both the Pequot and Narragansett tribes claimed the ownership of this territory and it was long the battle ground between them, neither so far as is now known ever having peaceable possession until the extermination of the Pequots by the English and Narragansetts in 1637. Game abounded; deer, bear, wolves, foxes, wild cats, rabbits, quail, partridges, and wild turkeys in the woods, while the ponds and rivers were well stocked with salmon, shad, trout, perch and other fresh and salt water fish. It was the Indian's paradise, but savage wars made it a place of strife, so that no wigwam of either tribe was tolerated from Weecapaug to the Pawcatuck river. "Westerly and Its Witnesses," by Rev. F. Dennison, gives a fair history of the town.

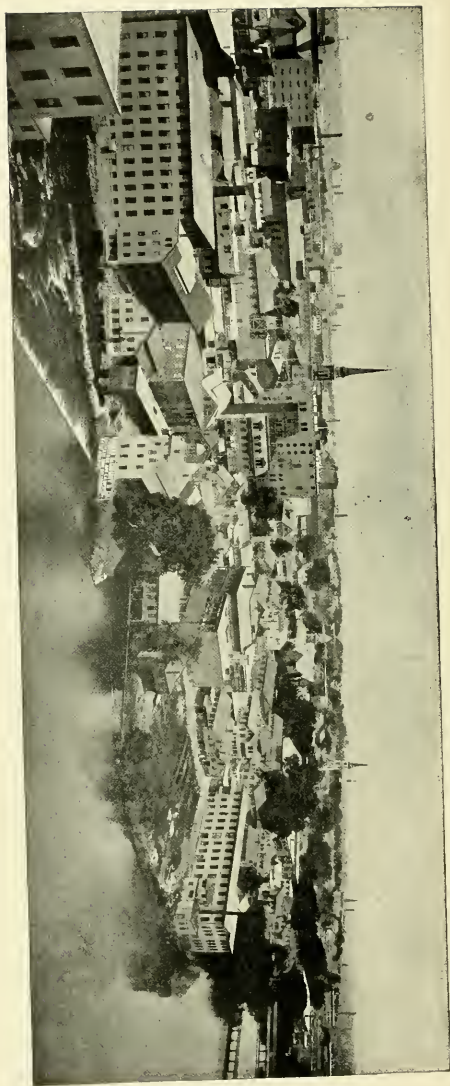
Villages: Westerly, Potter Hill, Stillmanville, Niantic, Lottery, White Rock, Watch Hill.



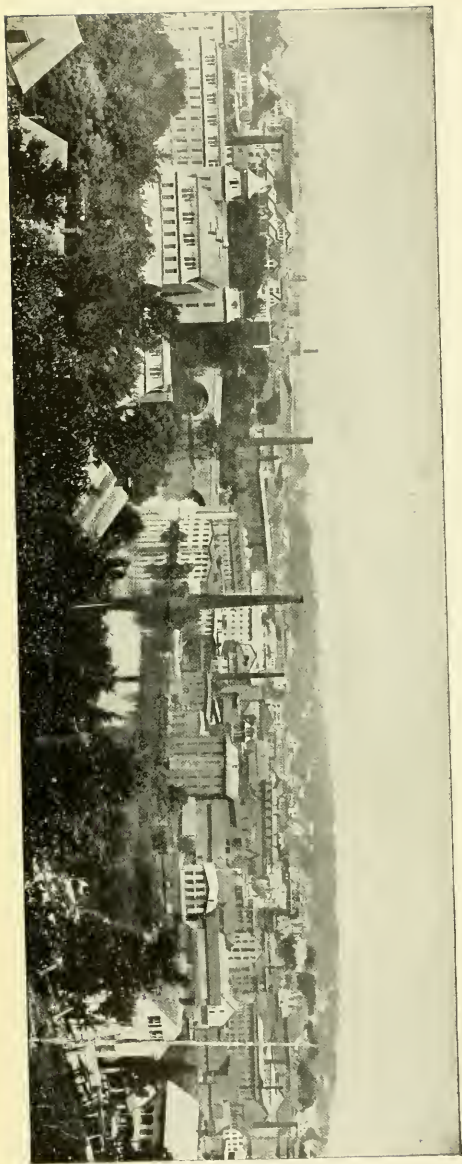
WARWICK TOWN HALL, APPONAUG







WOONSOCKET



WOONSOCKET



Hills: Carr's, Potter's, Bear, Rhodes or Quarry Hill, on which the famous granite quarries are worked. River: Pawcatuck. Ponds: Watch Hill, Babcock's, Indian, Winnapaug, Quonochontaug, Burden's, No Bottom, Dixon's.

Indian Names: Misquamicut, Mastuxet, Aquantaug, Muschaug, Musquataug, Ashagomiconset, Minnacomnuck, Niantic, Pawcatuck, Pascommattus, Quimamogue, Teapannock, Tiscatuck, Minnabaug, Mugguataug, Neshudganset, Paspatonage, Pawtuxet, Tishcottic, Tomaquag, Weecapaug, Napatree, a point; Quahaug, also a point; Chicamaug, a fishing place on the Pawcatuck. Governor Samuel Ward had a residence on Noyes Neck near Weecapaug.

Westerly is noted for its fine and extensive granite quarries.

WEST WARWICK—This town was taken from Warwick and incorporated by the General Assembly, March 14, 1913.

WOONSOCKET—Woonsocket was formerly a part of Cumberland and was incorporated January 31, 1867. A portion of Smithfield was annexed to Woonsocket, March 8, 1871. Incorporated as a city June 13, 1888. Until the settlement of the eastern Colonial boundary in 1747, that part east of Peter's river belonged to Dedham and the western part to Mendon, Massachusetts. Woonsocket is a busy city with many factories, is the centre of an increasing trade and is surrounded with fine agricultural lands. The remarkable water-falls furnishes an almost exhaustless quantity of power. For the early history of Woonsocket, see Providence, Smithfield and Cumberland.



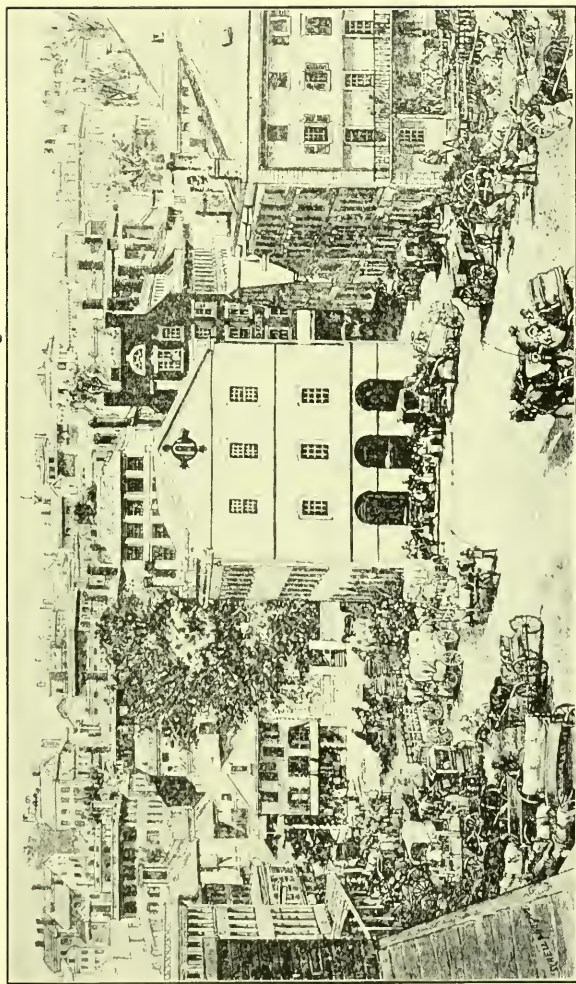
## THE GRANGE IN RHODE ISLAND

When in 1887 the Grange movement reached Rhode Island, it had been evolving for nearly a score of years. In 1866 its founder, Mr. O. H. Kelly, a Minnesota farmer, had returned to Washington, D. C., after an extensive investigation of the southern farmers' condition, under commission of President Johnson. Then followed his consultation with six other Washington workers, two of them ex-clergymen and one a physician, all of them able contributors; and a suggestion from a niece of Founder Kelly, a Boston school teacher, that the plan include women members; and the final launching of the Grange organization in 1871 with able ritual and secret orders. The Declaration adopted by the National Grange at St. Louis, Missouri, in February, 1874, announces its platform: "To develop a better manhood and womanhood among ourselves, to enhance the comforts and attractions of our homes, to strengthen our attachments to our pursuits, to foster mutual understanding and coöperation; to buy less and produce more, in order to make our farms self-sustaining," etc. In 1871 there were 125 members; in 1872 there were 1,160; in January, 1874, the number went from 10,000 to three-quarters of a million, and by April, there were a million and a half.

The history of the order includes a Millionaire Grange on Broadway, New York, while the items of the Populistic move of its members in National and State politics are familiar. It gave status to the Secretary of Agriculture; secured its products in such laws as the Oleomargarine Act; promoted Rural Delivery and the Parcel Post. After a period of decline in membership, it finally settled down with steady growth to its original social and educational aim for country betterment.

The first Rhode Island Grange, Narragansett No. 1, was organized at Kingston, December 20, 1886. Mr. Jeremiah G. Peckham had studied the Grange movement in the "New England Homestead," and on writing to the Massachusetts State Master, James Draper, for literature, entered upon a correspondence that brought to pass the organization of the first Grange in the State, with 47 charter members, under Mr. Thomas G. Hazard, master; Jeremiah G. Peckham, treasurer; and Mary N. Peckham, secretary. About this time an interest in Northern Rhode Island, under Messrs. P. B. Thomas and Henry C. Kent, resulted in the organization, April 7, 1887, by Secretary Brigham, of Massachusetts, of Cumberland No. 2, with 31 charter members, and the following officers: Master, Charles O. Flagg; overseer, P. B. Thomas; lecturer, A. M. Belcher; treasurer, Susan F. Whipple; secretary, R. Emma Thompson. Close by, in Eastern Woonsocket, a movement resulted in the organization by Messrs. Brigham and Whitehead, of Border Grange, No. 3, April 26, 1887, with 54 members, nearly half of them living in Massachusetts. The officers were: Master, Henry W. Pickering; overseer, Wm. H. Jillson; lecturer, Albert A. Smith; secretary, Etta M. Rhodes; treasurer, Henry M. Darling.

In September, 1887, a boom in the Washington county fair further advertised the Grange. October 6, 1887, Burrillville Grange, No. 4, was organized with 25 charter members; October 10, Charlestown, No. 5; also the same day, Richmond, No. 6, with 23 charter members; October 12, in Waverly Hall, Hope Valley, No. 7, with 36 charter members. Massachusetts officers again coöperated at Davisville, at the home of Hon. Allen Reynolds, and after preliminary meetings Davisville, No. 8, was organized with 35 charter members, October 25; in northern Rhode Island, Primrose, No. 9, came with 19 members, October 26; West Kingston, No. 10, followed with 28 members. At about the same time, near Arnold's Mills, Cumberland Hill, No. 11, was organized by James Draper, of Massachusetts, as a child of Border, No. 3. Exertion was had to reach fifteen Granges by November 10, one the organization of a State Grange. October 31, Exeter Grange, No. 12, was enrolled with 31 members, and Wm. G. Rose as master. Union No. 13 (Slatersville) followed with 21 members, and Perryville, No. 14, with EQ members. Summit, No. 15, with 31 members, completed the number. August 20, 1887, there had



MARKET PLACE IN PROVIDENCE



been a great Grange gathering at Oakland Beach, with prominent Massachusetts and national speakers, and twelve Rhode Island granges had been organized within a month from October 6.

The State Grange was organized by Worthy Master James Draper, November 19, 1887, in Blackstone Hall, Providence. The 24 delegates were: Thomas G. Hazard, No. 1; Chas. O. Flagg and wife, No. 2; W. H. Pickering and wife, No. 3; Wm. E. Fitz, No. 4; Geo. H. Ward, No. 5; L. J. Cornell and wife, No. 6; O. M. Meserve and wife, No. 7; David Young, Jr., and wife, No. 8; R. W. Baker, No. 9; Thomas P. Brayman, No. 10; A. A. Carpenter and wife, No. 11; Wm. G. Rose and wife, No. 12; S. S. Aldrich, No. 13; C. W. Browning and wife, No. 14; L. J. Winsor and wife, No. 15. The constitution and by-laws of the Massachusetts State Grange were adapted and adopted. Officers were chosen as follows: Master, J. G. Peckham; overseer, Chas. O. Flagg; lecturer, A. W. Brown; steward, A. M. Belcher; assistant steward, Wm. E. Fitz; chaplain, Mrs. Geo. Carpenter; treasurer, O. M. Meserve; secretary, N. T. Reynolds; gate keeper, H. W. Pickering; ceres, Mrs. A. A. Carpenter; pomona, Mrs. A. L. Mowry; flora, Mrs. Wm. G. Rose; lady assistant steward, Mrs. O. M. Meserve.

The fifteen Granges at organization in 1887 with 514 members grew to 16 Granges with 750 members in a year, and in another year the number was 22 Granges with 1,050 members. The first three Granges organized are thrifty after fifty years. Fifty-one Granges have been organized in the State, of which 36 are flourishing, with 3,500 members in 1919. Many of the Granges own their own halls and have amassed considerable property. The 36 Granges are distributed as follows: Providence County Pomona (organized 1889), 15 Granges; Washington County Pomona, 9; Kent County Pomona, 6; Newport County Pomona, 6.

Early the State Grange became a power in cooperation with the farmers. It actively supported the State Board of Agriculture. It rendered valuable aid in releasing the United States grants for agricultural instruction from Brown University, and in founding the Rhode Island Agricultural College. It has promoted all good enterprises—corn shows, with prizes; cooperative market gardening, Farmers' Bureau, legislative laws for good roads—in fact, everything that protects and assists the producers and consumers of agricultural commodities. The Annual State Grange meets in Providence in December.

Incalculable is the vast value of nearly forty organizations with thousands of adherents meeting each month several times with closed doors to discuss freely in Granges (Granaries of goodwill and thought) everything that promotes for the countryside thrift, wealth, and righteousness.

List of State Masters: Jeremiah G. Peckham, 1887-91; Andrew M. Belcher, 1891-94; Thomas G. Hazard, 1894-96; Joseph A. Tillinghast, 1896-1900; A. A. Smith, 1900-02; Frank E. Marchant, 1902-12; Joseph A. Peckham, 1912-16; Sayles B. Steere, 1916—.

List of Rhode Island Granges: Narragansett, No. 1; Cumberland, No. 2; Border, No. 3; Burrillville, No. 4\*; Charlestown, No. 5\*; Richmond, No. 6; Hope Valley, No. 7; Davisville, No. 8\*; Primrose, No. 9; West Kingston, No. 10; Cumberland Hill, No. 11\*; Exeter, No. 12; Union (Slatersville), No. 13; Perryville, No. 14; Summit, No. 15\*; Barrington, No. 16; Noosneck, No. 17\*; Westerly, No. 18; Roger Williams (East Providence), No. 19; Fidelity, No. 20 (Kingston)\*; Conanicut, No. 21; Lime Rock, No. 22; Unity, No. 23 (East Providence)\*; Kickemuit, No. 24 (Bristol); South Scituate, No. 25\*; Moosup Valley, No. 26; Rocky Hill, No. 27; (West Warwick); No. 28\*; Portsmouth, No. 29; Aquidneck, No. 30; Nonquit, No. 31 (Tiverton Four Corners); Little Compton, No. 32; No. 33\*; Central, No. 34 (Grange Hall, Apponaug); Fiskeville, No. 35; Slocum, No. 36; Greenville, No. 37; Chepachet, No. 38; North Scituate, No. 39; Laurel, No. 40 (Gloucester); Old Warwick, No. 41; Oaklawn, No. 42; No. 43\*; Quinnesett, No. 44; Providence, No. 45; Antioch, No. 46 (Johnston); No. 47\*; Quonochontaug, No. 48; Nanaquacket, No. 49; Ashaway, No. 50; Anthony, No. 51.

\* Note—Granges thus marked are extinct.

## RHODE ISLAND ORCHARDS

The United States Census (1910) gave in Rhode Island 215,798 fruit trees, of which 152,009 were apple and 39,342 peach. The apple trees were distributed as follows: Providence county, 128,615; Washington county, 39,195; Kent county, 24,538; Newport county, 18,030; Bristol county, 5,420. The largest average bushel yield (one and one-sixth bushel per tree) was in Providence county, with Bristol county nearly as much. There was 31.8 per cent. less yield of apples in 1909 than in 1899. At the latter date, 212,822 bushels were reported. Pears, cherries, quinces and plums are also produced in considerable quantities. Indeed, all the usual trees are indigenous in the clayey and alluvial soils of the Narragansett Basin.

When Giovanni Verrazzano explored Narragansett Bay in 1524, he found apple trees growing wild. Rev. William Blackstone, selling his farm where Boston now stands to Governor John Winthrop, planted many apple trees on his new purchase of the Indians about 1635 in Cumberland, on a knoll farm (called Study Hill) rising abruptly from the river that now bears his name. "Yellow Sweetings" were picked from his original stock as late as 1836. When he preached in Providence, at times he distributed apples to his hearers, being the first many had ever seen. On Mr. Coddington's six acres in Newport an orchard was planted in 1640, which is recorded by Historian Arnold as "the second one in the State." In the records of Portsmouth, mention is made of deeds of orchards in 1654 and in 1661. An account of "Two Voyages in New England," in 1673, states "the fruit trees prosper abundantly," and enumerates six kinds of fruit, raised equally well from kernels sown or from grafts. Cider was very plentiful in the country, and was made the foundation of numerous fancy drinks. Sunburn of the bark, wood-pecker's beaks and lice gave much trouble even in the early day.

The original Rhode Island greening tree (like old Homer's birth town) is hard to locate. Dr. Solomon Drowne at Mt. Hygeia, Foster, when he purchased his home in 1801, had a tree of this species, then about eighty years old. The farm of Mr. Frederick W. Winslow, a few rods southwest of the lime kiln on the north verge of Fruit Hill, in the town of Smithfield, had a Rhode Island greening tree which was locally known as the "Daughter Tree," and which is a limb of the "Mother Tree" broken off in the September Gale of 1815. Bailey's "Encyclopedia of American Horticulture" gives a picture of this tree as it looked in 1900. The "Mother Tree" was planted by Mrs. Winslow's ancestor in 1748, and was therefore 141 years old when it was cut down in 1889. From these two trees Mr. F. M. Perry, a nurseryman of Canandaigua, New York, secured many scions which he disseminated throughout New York and the Middle States. Trees of this variety were planted on the farm of the late Lemuel Angell in North Providence, 150 years ago. It was introduced into Plymouth Colony from Newport in 1765; from there it was carried to Ohio in 1796 by General Putnam.

Again "The Original Rhode Island Greening" was raised in an old stone barn, once a greenhouse, on the Bowler farm, on the old Wapping road, South Portsmouth. The original cutting was brought from England in a potting tub. Mr. Bowler was a wealthy East India merchant who took great interest in rare exotics from all parts of the world, and greatly beautified his grounds, hence his love for this appreciated apple. Others connect this apple with farms and taverns owned by the Greene family. In 1832 the "Rhode Island Republican" finds the greening tree on a farm owned by the Greens since 1638. Travelers ate the excellent fruit as the stage coach halted at Greene's-End Inn, near Bailey's Brook, two and one-half miles out of Newport. It is stated that the first tree of the kind came up spontaneously near the wall by the brook which runs through the farm of Joseph I. Bailey, Esq., in Middletown, the owner at that time being Mr. Greene.



In Miss Elizabeth C. Brenton's "History of Brenton's Neck," we learn that William Brenton in 1634 left Hammersmith, England, and came to Boston. His land grant from Charles I. gave him generously in the New England Colonies land as he surveyed. After obtaining large holdings in Litchfield, New Hampshire, he came to Newport in 1639, and with eight others formed the township, promising with them to bear an equal of expenses in proportion to their estates and income. The same year he built a large home called "The Four Chimney House," facing the great stretch of sea, with the infant Newport full in sight. Around this stately edifice William Brenton laid out suitable grounds, adorned with the best trees obtainable. The fruit trees were brought from England. The apple had been cultivated in England since the Roman period, and many Dutch and French varieties were perfected through many centuries of care. Ray states that 78 different varieties existed in the vicinity of London in 1688. Thus in this choice Eden of William Brenton is said to have originated for the New World about 1640, the first Rhode Island greening and the yellow russet.

The fruit products in Rhode Island have greatly improved in the past ten years. A high quality of flavor has always been recognized. The climate has been more kindly of late to the less hardy varieties than further north, and intensive culture and sprays have perfected the fruit, while cold storage has aided marketing. Coöperative association has promoted intelligent care and interest. Indeed, fruit consumption comes broadly to be recognized as promoting health and comfort, thus displacing stimulants. "Since the founding of the New England Fruit Show (Inc.) in Boston, in 1909, Rhode Island men have received the preponderance of prizes and awards every year."

The State Board of Agriculture publishes a wide range of best varieties of fruit here, and the Experiment Station with the Rhode Island State College renders invaluable aid. More than five hundred acres are in excellent orchard culture within five miles of Greenville. If we include Scituate, Chepachet and Wyomkeag Hill, perhaps there are one thousand acres of fruit in this section. The following have large acreage: Nicholas S. Winsor, Thomas K. Winsor, James Winsor, Benjamin A. Winsor, Albert J. Mowry, Sayles B. & Enoch M. Steere, J. Curtis Hopkins, Frank H. Brown, John Miller, Everett B. Dexter, Stephen W. G. Tourtellot; also James H. Singleton, at Wallum Lake, and J. P. Manton, Lakey Hill, and Jesse Carpenter, Cumberland. At lower elevation, John M. Dean and Harry T. Bodwell have large holdings, and Dr. Henry W. Heaton's orchard, Kingston, the largest, has 300 acres. For peaches merited fame has come to Jeremiah Eddy, Limerock, and Messrs. Hathaway & Son, Portsmouth. Four Greening trees on one of these farms one hundred years old produced fifty and sixty bushels of select fruit in two separate years. One tree bore eighteen barrels one year, which sold for \$100.

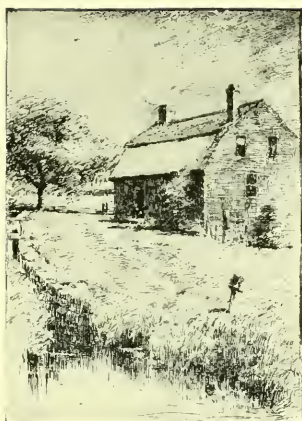




## PLACE NAMES IN RHODE ISLAND

(An asterisk (\*) following a name, identifies it as Indian).

- Abbott Run—P. O., Cumberland.  
 Absalona\*—A hill in Gloucester, 625 ft.  
 Absolute Swamp—The N. W. bound of Providence, 1638, west side of Lincoln Park and N. of Olney's Pond.  
 Acote—A hill at Chepachet.  
 Adamsville—P. O., Little Compton.  
 Albion—P. O., Cumberland.  
 Allendale—A village in Johnston.  
 Allenton—P. O., N. Kingstown.  
 Alton—P. O., Richmond.  
 Amataconet\*—A locality in Lincoln.  
 Annaquatucket\*—A river in North Kingstown.  
 Annawomscutt\*—Name of brook and village in West Barrington.  
 Antashantuck\*—Neck of land and pond near bend of Pocasset river; Randall's Pond.  
 Anthony—P. O., Coventry.  
 Aponakee\*—A brook in Warwick.  
 Apponaug\*—A village in Warwick.  
 Aquebinocket\*—Round Island.  
 Aquidneck\*—The Island of Rhode Island.  
 Aquidnesset\*—Atherton's north purchase in North Kingtown; also spelled Quidneset.  
 Aquidneest\*—Dutch Island.  
 Aquopimoguck\*—Gould Island.  
 Aquuntaug\*—A brook in Westerly.  
 Arcadia—P. O., Richmond.  
 Arctic—P. O., Warwick.  
 Arnold's Mills—P. O., Cumberland.  
 Asapumsick\*—A tract in Johnston.  
 Ascoamacot\*—A tract in Westerly.  
 Ashaway\*—A village and river in Hopkinton.  
 Ascoanoxsuck\*—A locality in Pawtuxet Purchase. P. R. I. 36.  
 Ashagomiconset\*—A tract in Westerly.  
 Ashland—Village in Scituate.  
 Ashton—Village in Pawtucket.  
 Ashuniunck\*—Beacon of Usquepaug river, Richmond.  
 Aspanansuck\*—Village in Exeter. Home of Miantonomi and Wawaloam.  
 Auburn—A village in Cranston.  
 Austin—A village in Coventry.  
 Avondale—A village in Westerly.  
 Baileys Butts—Two small hills on Grotto Brook.  
 Baileys Cove—Cove at south end of Butler's Hospital grounds.  
 Bradford—A village in Westerly.  
 Barberville—Village in Hope Valley.  
 Barbour Hights—Village in No. Kingstown.  
 Barrington—P. O., Barrington.  
 Bay Spring—A village in Barrington.  
 Bewits Brow—Probably Fruit Hill.  
 Bridgeton—P. O., Burrillville.  
 Blackstone River—The Pawtucket above the Falls.  
 Block Island—P. O., New Shoreham.  
 Bristol—P. O., Bristol.  
 Bristol Ferry—P. O., Bristol.  
 Bristol Highlands—In Bristol.  
 Burrillville—A town in Providence Co.  
 Buttonwoods—P. O., Warwick.  
 Cajoot\*—A lead mine at foot of Tower Hill.  
 Caucaunjawatchuck\*—Hill at north end of Lincoln Park.  
 Canonchet\*—P. O., Hopkinton; also name of residence of Gov. William Sprague at Narragansett.  
 Carolina—P. O., Richmond.  
 Centerdale—P. O., No. Providence.  
 Centerville—P. O., Warwick.  
 Central Falls—P. O., Central Falls; part of Pawtucket.  
 Chachacust\*—Name of Hampden Meadows, Barrington.  
 Chachapacasset\*—Indian name of Rumstick.  
 Chagum\*—A pond on Block Island.  
 Chapamistcock\*—A brook in Scituate.  
 Chapompamistcock\*—A tract in Scituate.  
 Charlestown—A town in Washington Co.  
 Chepachet\*—A village and river in Gloucester.  
 Chemunganoc\*—A pond and fort in Charlestown.  
 Chepiwanoxet\*—An island in Greenwich Bay.  
 Chepuxet\*—A river in South Kingstown.  
 Chesawanuck\*—Hog Island in Bristol Harbor.  
 Chibacuseset\*—Prudence Island.  
 Chickamaug\*—A fishing place in Pawcatuck river.  
 Chippachuack\*—South bound of Hall's Purchase, 1664.  
 Choppaquonset\*—A point in Warwick.  
 Chopmist\*—A hill in Scituate, 600 ft.  
 Cocumpang\*—A pond in Charlestown.  
 Cocumscussuc\*—Country west and north of Wickford; also a brook and harbor north of Wickford; spelled Caucumsquissick also.  
 Conanicut\*—An island at mouth of Narragansett Bay.  
 Conimicut\*—A point in Warwick, opposite Nayat.  
 Conob\*—A brook in Richmond.  
 Conockonoquit\*—Rose Island.  
 Consumpsit\*—Indian name of main part of Bristol to north line of Swansea.  
 Coonimus\*—A brook in New Shoreham.  
 Coventry—A town in Kent Co.  
 Coventry Centre—A village in Coventry.  
 Coweset\*—A village in Warwick, on Greenwich Bay.  
 Cranston—A town in Providence Co.



GILBERT STUART HOUSE



CIVIC CENTER, ARCTIC







MAIN STREET, EAST GREENWICH



COURT HOUSE, EAST GREENWICH

Crompton—A village in Warwick.  
 Cross Mills—A village in Charlestown.  
 Cumberland—A town in Providence Co.  
 Cumnock\*—An island in Pt. Judith Pond.

Darlington—A village in Pawtucket.  
 Davisville—A village in No. Kingstown.  
 Diamond Hill—A village in Cumberland.  
 Dutch Island—An island at mouth of Narragansett Bay.  
 Dyerville—A village in Johnston.

East Greenwich—A town in Kent Co.  
 East Providence—A town in Providence Co.  
 East Woonsocket—A part of Woonsocket.  
 Eden Park—A village in Cranston.  
 Edgewood—A part of Cranston.  
 Elmwood—A part of Cranston.  
 Esmond—A village of Smithfield.  
 Escoheag\*—A village and hill in West Greenwich, 541 ft.; three rivers rise in this hill.  
 Exeter—A town in Washington Co.

Fiskeville—A village in Cranston.  
 Forestdale—A village in No. Smithfield.  
 Fort Adams—Newport.  
 Fort Getty—Jamestown.  
 Fort Greble—A P. O. in Jamestown.  
 Fort Mansfield—Westerly.  
 Fort Wetherell—Newport.  
 Foster—A town in Providence Co.  
 Foster Centre—A village in Foster.  
 Foxes Hill—This hill formerly stood between Wickenden, South Main and India streets, Providence, and was the western flank of Tockwotten Hill. It did not exceed 75 feet in height, and was adopted as the starting point of the surveys of the western bounds of early Providence. It was fortified in the Revolutionary War.

Frenchtown—A village in East Greenwich, settled by the French Huguenots in 1686.  
 Fry's Corner—A village in East Greenwich.

Geneva—A village in No. Providence.  
 Georgiaville—A village in Smithfield.  
 Glendale—A village in Burrillville.  
 Gloucester—A town in Providence Co.  
 Gotham Valley—At south bend of the Woonasquatucket river, at Olneyville.  
 Gould—A village in So. Kingstown.  
 Grant's Mills—A village in Cumberland.  
 Great Swamp—The swamp bounded by Sessions St., Hope St., and Blackstone Boulevard.  
 Greene—A village in Coventry.  
 Green Hill—A village in South Kingstown.  
 Greenville—A village in Smithfield.  
 Greenwood—A village in Warwick.  
 Greystone—A village in No. Providence.

Hackleton's Rocks—Early name of Lime Rock, in Lincoln.  
 Hamilton—A village in No. Kingstown.  
 Hamlet—A village in Woonsocket.

Hampden Meadows—A village in Barrington; Indian name, Chachacust; early English name, New Meadow Neck; named Hampden Meadows by Rhode Island Historical Society in 1800, in honor of John Hampden, the English patriot, who visited Massasoit at Sowams, Barrington, with Edward Winslow, in 1623.

Harmony—A village in Gloucester.  
 Harris—A village in Coventry.  
 Harrisville—A village in Burrillville.  
 Haversham—Early name of Westerly.  
 Hawk's Cove—Formerly at foot of Blackstone St., now enclosed by harbor line. Also known as Dirty Cove and Muddy Cove.

Hawkin's Cove—North end of Randall's Pond in Cranston.

Highland Beach—A village in Warwick.  
 Hill's Grove—A village in Warwick.  
 Hipses Rock—A rock about 25 feet high, in tract bounded by old Plainfield road, Morgans Mills road and the Pocasset river. Roger Williams claimed that this rock was the western bound of the Indian deed of 1638. It is claimed that Hipses is a corruption of Hesperus—"the West."

Homoganset\*—Same as Naniquoxet.  
 Hope—A village in Scituate.  
 Hope Valley—River section of Hopkinton.  
 Hopkinton—A town in Washington Co.  
 Hopkinton City—A village in Hopkinton.  
 Horn-heap—Northwest corner of Pettaquamscutt Purchase, marked by pair of buck's horns.  
 Howard—A village in Cranston; location of State institutions.

Hoxsie—A village in Warwick.  
 Hughesdale—A village in Johnston.  
 Hunt's Mill—Location of ancient water mill and a place of modern amusements in East Providence.

Jamestown—A town in Newport Co.  
 Jerimoth—A hill in northwest corner of Foster, 589 ft. high.  
 Johnston—A town in Providence Co.  
 Joshua's Swamp—On small brook, north of Chalkstone Ave.

Kesikomuck\*—Same as Naniquoxet.  
 Kenyon—A village in Richmond.  
 Kickemuit\*—A spring and river in Warren.  
 Kingston—A village in So. Kingstown; formerly called Little Rest; seat of Rhode Island State College.  
 Kitickamuckkut\*—North end of Aquidneck.  
 Knightsville—A village in Cranston.

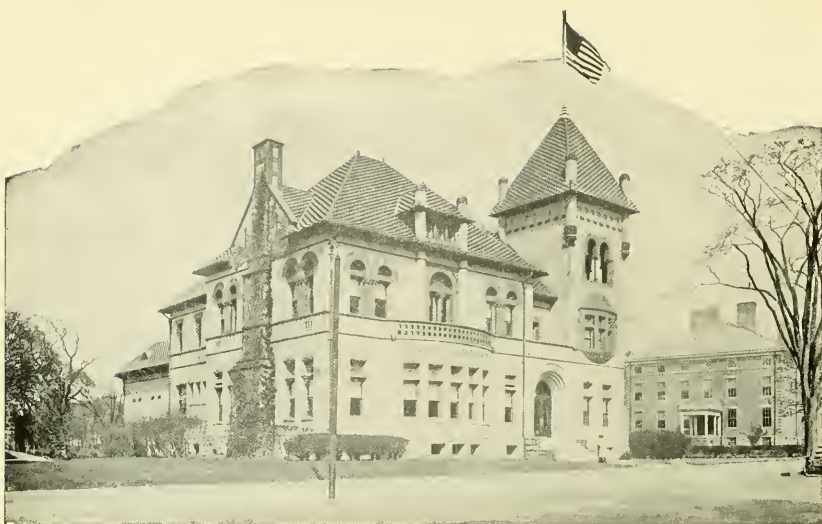
Lafayette—A village in No. Kingstown.  
 Lakewood—A village in Warwick.  
 Lebanon—A village in suburbs of Pawtucket.  
 Liberty—A village in Exeter.  
 Lime Rock—A village in Lincoln.  
 Lincoln—A town in Providence Co.



- est in the State, and next to Boston, the largest in New England. It was called New Providence by Roger Williams and was so called for several years, when it dropped the initial word. It is one of the capitals of Rhode Island and contains the new State Capitol. The name first appears in the Indian deed to Mr. Williams, March 24, 1638, in which the locality is designated as "Mooshausick or Providence."
- Prudence—A large island in Narragansett Bay.
- Quahog\*—A rock in So. Kingstown.
- Quakataug\*—Land in great Indian cedar swamp in Charlestown.
- Quakut\*—A place near Howland's Ferry in Tiverton.
- Quaquechan\*—A brook in Tiverton.
- Quamatucumpick\*—Land on west side of Pettaquamscutt purchase.
- Quassakoonkanuc\*—A pond at the source of Narragansett river.
- Quequatuck\*—A place near Crandall's Mills, 1681.
- Quidnesset\*—Northeast part of No. Kingstown.
- Quidnick\*—A village in Warwick.
- Quinamaug\*—A tract in Westerly.
- Quinsnick\*—Name of Lincoln Park.
- Quonochontaug\*—A salt pond in Charlestown.
- Quonset\*—A point in northeast part of No. Kingstown.
- Quotenis\*—Dutch Island in Narragansett Bay.
- Quowachaug\*—A place on Usquepaug river, west bound of Hall's Purchase.
- Quttonckanitnuing\*—North bound of Wyunkaug, in No. Smithfield.
- Reynold's Valley—The valley between Blackstone river and Scott's Pond.
- Rice City—A village in Coventry.
- Richmond—A town in Washington Co.
- Riverdale—A section of Warwick Neck.
- Riverpoint—A village in Warwick.
- Riverside—A village in East Providence.
- Riverview—A village in Warwick.
- Robbins Brook—The brook connecting Randall's upper and lower Canada and Lincoln ponds.
- Rock Hill—A hill in North Kingstown.
- Rockland—A village in Scituate.
- Rockville—A village in Hope Valley.
- Rocky Brook—A village in So. Kingstown.
- Rocky Hill—A hill in Cranston, east of the print works pond, 1659; also in East Greenwich.
- Rocky Point—A celebrated resort on Warwick Neck.
- Round Cove—A small cove, formerly between East River street to Medway street.
- Rumford—A village in East Providence, named for Count Rumford.
- Rumney Marsh—Formerly on the northeast corner of the Cove.
- Rumstick Point—The southeast part of Barrington.
- Runen's River—The source of the Barrington river, in East Providence.
- Sachuest\*—A point and beach in Middletown.
- Sakonnet\*—A tribe of Indians, a territory and a point in Little Compton.
- Sassafras Cove—A cove north of Field's Point, also called Long Cove. Sassafras Point at the Cove was the northeast bound of the Pawtuxet lands, Oct., 1638.
- Saunderstown—A village in southeast part of No. Kingstown.
- Saylesville—A village in Lincoln.
- Saugatucket\*—A brook in So. Kingstown.
- Sawgogue, Squakheague\*—Home of Canonius, near the Devil's Foot, about two miles north of Wickford, on Pequot Trail.
- Scamscammuck\*—The great spring at Chachapacasset, in Sowams, Barrington, near the home of Massasoit, Sachem of the Wampanoags.
- Scituate\*—A town in Providence Co.
- Sockanoxet\*—The region around Lime Rock, in Lincoln. The brook from the rocks bears the same name.
- Seekonk\*—The river between Providence and East Providence.
- Sepooke\*—A tract of land bought of Indians by Richard Smith.
- Sekesakut Hill\*—A hill and territory in Johnston.
- Sepowit\*—A point in Tiverton.
- Shady Lea—A village in No. Kingstown.
- Shannock—A village in Charlestown.
- Shawomet\*—Warwick.
- Shawomet Beach—Warwick.
- Shewatuck\*—A brook south of Wickford; same as Naniquoet.
- Shumunkanuc\*—A hill in Charlestown.
- Silver Spring—A village in East Providence.
- Simmons ville—A village in Johnston.
- Slatersville—A village in North Smithfield.
- Slocum—A village in North Kingstown.
- Smithfield—A town in Providence Co.
- Sockanosset\*—A village, a hill and a reservoir (Providence), in Cranston.
- Solitary Hill—This hill stood south of and near Olneyville Square.
- Southertown—An old name of country on both sides the Pawcatuck river at Westerly.
- South Ferry—A village in northeast corner of Narragansett.
- South Foster—A village of Foster.
- South Kingstown—A town in Washington Co.
- South Portsmouth—A village in Portsmouth.
- South Scituate—A village of Scituate.
- Sowams\*—The territory of Barrington, and a part of East Providence. The Sowams territory was bought of Massasoit, in 1653, when the Sowams Proprietary was formed. (See *History of Sowams*). Massasoit's home was at Sowams, on Sowams Bay, the north end of present Narragansett Bay, above Prudence Island. Another spelling was Sowamset.







WESTERLY PUBLIC LIBRARY



CIVIC CENTER, WESTERLY

- The founders of Aquidneck sought, by the aid of Roger Williams to locate at Sowams, but were denied their choice as Myles Standish called it, "The Garden of our Patent and the flower in the Garden."
- Sowanoxet\*—Fox Island, south of Wickford.
- Spectacle Pond and Meadows—In Cranston, 1644.
- Spragueville—A village in Smithfield.
- Spring Green—A village in Warwick.
- Spring Lake—A village in Coventry.
- Squantum\*—Location of Squantum Club, East Providence.
- Stampers Hill—Constitution Hill.
- Stillwater—A village in Smithfield.
- Succotash\*—A point in South Kingstown.
- Suckatunkanuck\*—A hill in Johnston.
- Sugar Loaf—A hill northwest of Pawtucket.
- Summit—A village in Coventry.
- Sutamachute\*—A hill northwest of Simmonsville.
- Tabamapaug\*—Dyer's Pond, Cranston; another spelling, Pangeamapaug.
- Tarklin—A village in Burrillville.
- Teapanock\*—Babcock's Pond in Westerly.
- Thornton—A village in Johnston.
- Tiogue\*—A swamp and reservoir.
- Tippecanset\*—A pond in West Greenwich.
- Tishcottic\*—Gov. Samuel Ward's farm, in Westerly.
- Tismatuck\*—An Indian village in Charlestown.
- Tiverton—A town in Newport Co.
- Tiverton Four Corners—A village in Tiverton.
- Tockwotton\*—A hill in southeast part of Providence.
- Tomaquag\*—A village in Westerly; a brook in Hopkinton.
- Tommany\*—A hill in northwest of Newport, from name of Sachem, Wanamatommany.
- Toskeunk\*—The meadows, east of Pontiac, in Warwick, on both sides of Pawtuxet river.
- Totawamscut\*—The big rock at Pawtuxet Falls.
- Touisset\*—A neck of land in southwest Swansea, part in Warren, between Coles and Kickemuit rivers.
- Toyasqut\*—A river, the west bound of Wyunkeag.
- Tunipus\*—A pond in southeastern Little Compton.
- Tunk\*—A hill in Scituate, 545 feet high.
- Tuskatucket\*—A brook in Warwick.
- Union Village—A village in North Smithfield.
- Usquepaug\*—A river, the eastern branch of the Pawcatuck; also a village in South Kingstown.
- Valley Falls—A village in Cumberland.
- Varietyville—A village near Westerly.
- Venter—A brook, north of the village of Merino, in Johnston; the place on the south was known as Venter Plain and Poor Man's Plain.
- Vernon—A village in Coventry.
- Vineyard—An island in Pawtuxet river, near the Rhodes boat-house. It was a part of the Arnold-Rhodes estate.
- Wakefield—A village in South Kingstown.
- Wallum Pond\*—A pond in northwest part of Burrillville.
- Wampanoag\*—The Indians of Plymouth Colony, 1620, Massasoit, great sachem; Sowams, Barrington chief seat of tribe.
- Wannamoisset\*—A neck of land in southwest part of East Providence, bought by John Browne, 1645.
- Wannuchecomecut\*—A part of Boston Neck.
- Wanskuck\*—A part of Providence; also name of a brook flowing into West river.
- Wapwaysit\*—A ford of the Moshassuck, at Stevens street. The first bridge over the river was built here. (P. R., Vol. III., p. 25).
- Warren—A town in Bristol Co.
- Warwick—A town in Kent Co.
- Warwick Downs—A village on Warwick Neck.
- Warwick Neck—The southeast part of Warwick.
- Washington—A village in Coventry.
- Washonset\*—The point east of the cove at Pawtuxet Falls; also called Long Neck and Little Neck.
- Watchaug\*—A pond in Westerly.
- Watch Hill—A village in Westerly.
- Watchemoket\*—A section of East Providence separated from Providence by the Seekonk river and connected by Washington bridge.
- Watuppa\*—Ponds in Tiverton.
- Wawaypoonsag\*—Blackstone's home at Lonsdale, called also Study Hill.
- Waypoiset\*—Narrows at mouth of Kickemuit river.
- Wawuttaquatuck\*—An Indian village in Charlestown.
- Weekapaug\*—A village in Westerly, also Waxcodawa.
- Weekapasacheek\*—A tract south of Wyonkeag.
- Weeweonk\*—A brook in Warwick.
- Wequatuxet\*—A brook in Charlestown.
- Wesquadomeset\*—Sayle's Hill and lands around it in North Smithfield.
- Westconnaug\*—South half of Foster and part of Scituate south of Pawtuxet river; Governor Cranston's Purchase.
- West Barrington—A part of Barrington.
- West River—A river in Providence.
- West Wickford—A part of Wickford.
- Westerly—A town in Washington Co.
- Westerly Manor—An estate between Pettaquamscut and Usquepaug river.
- West Greenwich Centre—A part of West Greenwich.
- West Kingston—A part of South Kingstown.
- Westtototucket\*—Usquepaug river.
- Weybosset\*—A fording place at head of Providence river; also a street in the city; also name of second bridge in Providence, con-

- necting east and west sides of town at Market square.
- Wickaboxet\*—A pond in West Greenwich.
- Winatompic\*—Part of Hall's Purchase in Narragansett.
- Wincheck\*—A pond in Hopkinton.
- Winnepaug\*—A pond in Westerly.
- Woodlawn—A village in Pawtucket.
- Wood River Junction—A village in Richmond.
- Woodville—A village in Hopkinton.
- Woonachaset\*—Coasters' Harbor Island.
- Woonasquatucket\*—A river rising in northwestern Rhode Island, flowing southeast, empties its waters into Providence river, near Market square.
- Woonsocket\*—Falls in Blackstone river; also city at the Falls, in Providence Co.
- World's End—Meadows southwest of Scott's Pond; also part of the pond.
- Wyoming\*—A village in Richmond.
- Wyunkeag\*—A hill in Smithfield and lands adjacent.
- Yagunsk\*—A brook near Fort Ninigret.
- Yawgog\*—A pond in Hopkinton.
- Yawgoo\*—A pond in South Kingstown.



## FAMILIAR INDIAN PLACE NAMES IN RHODE ISLAND

### BRISTOL COUNTY.

#### BARRINGTON:

*Sowams*—Name of town; home of Massasoit, 1620; also name of north end of bay.  
*Popanamscutt*—Peninsula between Sowams or Barrington river on the east and the Bay on the west; also called Peebe's Neck.  
*Wannamoissett*—Name of N. W. part of Barrington, 1717-1747, on Providence river.  
*Annawomiscut*—Bay side of West Barrington.  
*Nayatt*—At S. W. point of town, projecting into Bay.  
*Chachacust*—New Meadow Neck; Hampden Meadows.  
*Chachapacassett*—Rumstick.  
*Scamscammuck*—A spring at Rumstick.  
*Mouscouchuck*—A creek, north of Nayatt, flowing west into Bay.

*Moskittuash*—A creek flowing southerly into Bullock's Cove.  
*Nockum*—A little hill west of Hundred Acre Cove.

#### BRISTOL:

*Consumpsit Neck*—Indian name of Bristol.  
*Chesawannock*—Hog Island in Bristol harbor.  
*Poppasquash*—The land between Bristol harbor and Narragansett Bay.  
*Montaup*—Mount Hope.

#### WARREN:

*Kickemuit*—River and spring in East Warren.  
*Touisset*—A neck of land, part in Warren, part in Swansea.

### KENT COUNTY.

#### COVENTRY:

*Quidnick*—A factory village, a river and a pond.  
*Pawtuxet*—A river flowing east into Providence river.  
*Maosup*—A tributary of the Thames in Conn.  
*Mishnock*—A tributary of the Pawtuxet; also a swamp.  
*Tiogue*—A reservoir.

#### EAST GREENWICH:

*Potowomut*—A peninsula at mouth of Potowomut river, and south of Greenwich Bay.  
*Maskacaug*—A small river.  
**WEST GREENWICH:**  
*Escoheag*—A hill, 541 feet, west part of town; the source of three rivers.  
*Mishnock*—A pond and swamp.

#### WARWICK:

*Shawomet*—Indian name of the town.

*Apponaug*—A village in Warwick.

*Pawtuxet*—A village and river.

*Nausocket*—A beach at Buttonwoods.

*Cowesett*—Name of a small family of Indians; also of lands south of Apponaug on Greenwich Bay.

*Conimicut*—A point in Bay, opposite Nayatt.

*Pontiac* and *Natick*—Villages on the Pawtuxet.

*Potowomut*—A peninsula or neck extending east into Bay; also a rock and river.

*Kickamuit*, *Aponakee*, *Wecweonk*, and *Masquachug*—Are brooks in Warwick, tributary to Pawtuxet river.

*Occupassuatuxet*—A cove opening into Bay.

*Passeconquis*—A cove north of Gaspee Point.

*Namquid*—Indian name of Gaspee Point.

*Choppaquansett*—A point in Bay.

*Tuskatucket*—A small stream flowing into Greenwich Bay.

*Chepicanoxet*—An island in Greenwich Bay.

### NEWPORT COUNTY.

#### JAMESTOWN:

*Conanicut*—Jamestown.

#### LITTLE COMPTON:

*Sakonnet*—A point projecting S. W. into the Ocean; also the river separating Little Compton from the island of Rhode Island.  
*Tunipus*—A small pond.

#### MIDDLETOWN:

*Sachuest*—A neck, point and beach on the Atlantic, S. E. part of town.

#### NEWPORT:

*Aquidneck*—Indian name of the island of Rhode Island.

*Woonchasset*—Coasters' Harbor Island.

*Wonametonomy* or *Miantonomi*—A hill in north part of city.

#### NEW SHOREHAM:

*Manisses*—Indian name of Block Island.

*Cooninus*—A brook and swamp on the island.

*Chagum* or *Sachem*—A pond on the island.

## PORTSMOUTH:

*Pocasett*—Indian name of the town.

*Chibachueset*—Indian name of Prudence Island.

## TIVERTON:

*Pocasett*—Indian name of a tribe of the Wam-

panoags; also their tribal home, under Queen Weetamoo.

*Nanaguacket*—A neck of land in Tiverton; also a cove.

*Scapowit*, *Packet* and *Puncatest*—Names of minor localities in the town.

## PROVIDENCE COUNTY.

## BURRILLVILLE:

*Pascoag*—A manufacturing village; also a tribe tributary to the Narragansetts.

*Mohegan*—A manufacturing village.

*Nipmuck*—A stream tributary to the Blackstone; also a tribe tributary to the Narragansetts, located in N. W. Rhode Island.

*Wallum*—A pond named for a Quinebaug captain.

*Chepachet*—A river.

*Melunganup*—A swamp.

## CRANSTON:

*Sockanosset*—A village, now Howard; also a hill; also a reservoir.

*Pocasett*—A river and a village.

*Mishantatuck*—A river.

*Mashapaug*—An Indian village; also a pond and brook.

*Tabamapaug*—Dyer's Pond.

*Mashantatuck*—A tract of about 4,000 acres; also called *Paquabuck*; also a river on the western boundary of the land. Present spelling *Meshanticut*.

*Antashantuck*—Randall's Pond.

*Papaquinapaug*—Fenner's Pond and land around it.

*Pesanunkamesquesit*—Blackmore Pond.

## EAST PROVIDENCE:

*Seekonk*—Indian name of town.

*Watchemoket*—A thickly settled section near Providence.

*Squantum*—A point, a rocky ledge and headquarters of Squantum Club.

*Pomham*—A rock in Providence river; site of Pomham light.

*Wannamoisset*—S. W. part of town, beginning near Pomham.

*Sowams*—Southern part of East Providence, from Silver Spring east to Palmer's river.

## FOSTER:

*Moosup*—Name of river and village; also name of brother of Miantonomi, often called *Pes-sicus*.

*Westconnaug* or *Westquodnoid*—A reservoir.

## GLOUCESTER:

*Chepachet*—A river and village.

*Matony*—A hill.

*Woonasquatucket*—A pond and stream.

*Ponagansett*—A pond, stream and ledge, head of the Pawtuxet; also spelled *Punhangansett*.

*Poquanituck*—A small stream.

## JOHNSTONS

*Sutamachute*—A hill N. W. of Simmonsville.

*Ncutakonkanut*—A high hill.

*Ossapinsuck*—A brook.

*Moswansicut*—Reservoir.

*Pocasett*—A river.

*Sekeakut*—A hill and land around it.

*Suckatunkanuck*—A hill east of Almy's Reservoir.

## LINCOLN:

*Moshassuck*—River and village in valley.

*Louisquisset*—Village turnpike and brook.

*Seockanoxet*—The land at Hackleton's Lime Rocks.

*Quinsnicket*—Hill, pond and cliffs. This is an English made name. The true Indian word is *Caucanujawatchuck*, meaning a place of crows, as the first two syllables suggest.

## NORTH PROVIDENCE:

*Woonasquatucket*—River.

*Wonskuck*—Reservoir.

## NORTH SMITHFIELD:

*Woonsocket*—Hill, 588 ft. high.

*Mattity* and *Nipsachet* or *Nipsachuck*—Swamps.

## PAWTUCKET:

*Pawtucket*—Indian name of river and falls.

## PROVIDENCE:

*Moshassuck*—Indian name of Providence; also present name of river.

*Pomecansett*—Neck of land between Field's Point and Sassafrax Point.

*Woonasquatucket*—Name of river, uniting with the Moshassuck at Providence to form the Providence river. The Providence receives the Pawtucket at Fox Point and continues a tidal river to Bullocks and Gaspee Points, where it receives the name of *Narragansett Bay*. The Indian name of the Bay above Prudence Island and east of Warwick was *Sowams Bay*.

*Weybosset*—Peninsula on west side of Providence river.

*Tockwotton*—A hill at Indian Point.

*Mashapaug*—A pond.

*Wapcaysit*—Location of first bridge over the *Moshassuck*, at what is now Stevens St., leading into Charles St.

*Wauskuck*—A pond and village.

## SCITUATE:

*Chopmist* or *Chopompamiskock*—A hill range, 730 feet high.

*Chapamistcook*, *Westconnaug*, *Musquitohawk*—Names of brooks.

*Moswansicut*, *Posnagansett*—Ponds.

*Ponagansett*—A village.

## SMITHFIELD:

*W'yonkeag*—A hill 587 feet high.

## CHARLESTOWN:

*Shannock*—A village.

*Quonochontaug*—A neck of land.

*Shummicanic* or *Chemunganoc*—A hill.

*Pasquesett*, *Gawgunsk*, *Poquinunk*, *Wecapaug*, *Wequatuxet*—Brooks.

*Mashonaug*—A point.

*Pawaget*, *Watchaug*, or *Quonochontaug*, *Cocum-*

*paug*, *Pasquesett*—Ponds.

*Watchaug*—A spring.

*Tockwotton*—A cove.

*Ninigret*—A fort and also a burial place.

*Pequot*—Old Indian trail.

*Chemunganoc*—A fort and pond.

## EXETER:

*Aspanansuck*—

*Yawgoo*—A village.

*Tippecansett*, *Yawker* and *Yawgoo*—Ponds.

*Pettaquamscutt*—Purchase line.

*Yawker*—A hill.

## HOPKINTON:

*Ashaway*, *Canonchet*, *Niantic*—Villages.

*Pawcatuck*, *Ashawog*, *Tomaquog*, *Neshungansett*,

*Canonchet*, *Ashaway*—Rivers and brooks.

*Yawgoo*, *Wincheck*—Ponds.

*Ashaway* and *Tomaquog*—Valleys.

## NORTH KINGSTOWN:

*Annaquatuckett*, *Narragansett*—Villages; also reservoirs.

*Annaquatuckett*, *Mattatuxet* or *Hunts*, *Pettaquam-*

*scutt*, *Potowomut*—Rivers and ponds.

*Pojack* or *Muskechug*, *Quenset* or *Seconigansett*

—Points.

*Pamechipsk*—A ridge of hills extending north and south.

*Weehapasackeek*—Region south of Wyonkeag Hill.

*Woonasquatucket*—A river.

## WOONSOCKET:

*Woonsocket*—Indian name of the hill and falls.

*Nipmuck*—A river in the section occupied by the tribe.

## WASHINGTON COUNTY.

*Quidnesset*—A park.

*Cawcumscussuc*—Harbor at Wickford; also a brook.

*Namcook*—Boston Neck.

*Hamogansett* or *Kesikomick*, *Quidnesset*—Historic places.

## SOUTH KINGSTOWN:

*Usquepaug*, *Matunuc*, *Narragansett Pier*—Villages.

*Pesquamscot* or *Worden's Pond*—Largest fresh water pond in the State.

*Yawgoo*, *Westquag*, *Matunuc*, *Pettaquamscutt*,

*Usquepaug*—Other ponds.

*Pawcatuck*, *Pettaquamscutt*, *Saugatuck*, *Usque-*

*paug*, *Schickasheen* or *Miskianza*—Rivers,

brooks and coves.

*Quahaug*, *Poonnock*—Rocks.

## RICHMOND:

*Wyoming*, *Shannock*, *Usquepaug*—Villages.

*Ashuntunk*, *Conob*—Brooks.

## WESTERLY:

*Misquamicut*—Indian name of town.

*Niantic*—A village.

*Pawcatuck*—River on the west, separating Rhode Island from Connecticut.

*Winnapaug*—"A fine pond."

Other Indian names of brooks, ponds or hills—

*Mastuxet*, *Aquantaug*, *Mushchaug*, *Musquataug*,

*Ashagomiconsett*, *Minnacommuck*, *Pascom-*

*matias*, *Quimamoge*, *Teapanock*, *Tiscatuck*,

*Minnabang*, *Muyquataug*, *Neshudgansett*, *Pas-*

*potonage*, *Pawtuxent*, *Tishcottie*, *Tomaquag*

and *Weekapaug*.







## ERRATA

Page 981, par. 2, and p. 987: For "Cawcawsuissick," read "Narragansett."  
 Page 992, par. 2: For "when liberties of conscience was perpetuate," read "where," etc.

## INDEX

- Agricultural Societies, first, 46  
 Aquidneck, 7; purchase by Coddington, 288; first election, 296; town meetings, 299  
 Atherton Company, 476
- Baptists, first church, 577; Six Principal Baptists, Seventh Day Baptists, 583; Free Baptists, 584; churches, 586
- Block Island, 515; Capt. John Underhill, Capt. John Endicott, 517; first proprietors, 518; notable names, 520
- Books in early days, 658-660
- Boston, the Preparatory School, 251; early worthies, 258; founders of new town on Aquidneck, 267
- Brown University, founding of, 662
- Canonicus, death of, 476
- Catholic Church, 624; Bishop McFarland, 624; Bishop Hendricken, 625; Bishop Harlins, 626
- Chamber of Commerce, 843
- Church, Capt. Benjamin, 448
- Civil War, 810; regiments and batteries from Rhode Island, 811-818; Governors William Sprague and James Y. Smith, 820; distinguished officers, 822; Soldiers' and Sailors' Monument, 822
- Clarke, Dr. John, ancestry and character, 273; his book, "Ill Newses from New England," 274; tributes to his life and services, 279; applies to King for new Charter, 295; his letter to King Charles, 435; his worth, 437; his religion, 567; as pastor, 579; Charter of 1663, 945
- Congregational Church, first in America, 578; principles of, 587; Barrington Church, 589; Bristol Church, 591; at Little Compton, 592; at Newport, 594; at Kingstown, 597; Benevolent Congregational Society, 601; church at Providence, 602; other churches, 603
- Crimes and misdemeanors, 337
- Dexter, Gregory, contends for rights of Colony, 341
- Dorr War, 782; questions at issue, 784; Freemen's convention, 793; armed forces face each other, 795; Dorr abandons the struggle, 801; reward for his apprehension, 801; tributes to his character, 803; his vindication, 805; reversal of verdict against him, 958
- Drama, early, 893; suppression of, 894; reopening, 896; theatre customs, 897
- Early settlers, homes and manner of living, 149; their books, 155; occupations, 889; some estate inventories, 900; household names, 902
- Education, in early days, 488, 651; first school at Newport, 653; at Providence, 654; coming of Bishop Berkeley, 657; early school houses, 661; Brown University, 662; Rhode Island College, 664; various academies, 667; John Howland, founder of public school systems, 671; act for establishment of free schools, 672; schools in Providence, 678; office of Educational Agent, and incumbents, 679; Col. Higginson

- quoted, 683; sanitation, 688; industrial and trade education, 689
- Farming and Forestry, 37; land clearing, 39; primitive methods of farming, 42; James B. Angell quoted, 47; capital invested in lumber, 50; list of forest trees, 58
- Festive occasions in early days, 481
- Finance and Banking, 875; bills of credit, 878; lotteries, 880-882; Providence Bank, Bank of Rhode Island, Rhode Island Trust Company, 883
- Fox, George, visit of, 538
- Freeman's oath, 126
- Free School, first in Rhode Island, 316
- General Assembly, first, laws enacted by, 319; first and second, 641; act declaring Statehood, 644; places of meeting, 646
- General Court, first in Rhode Island, 312
- Geology and Soil, 13; publications bearing upon, 15; report of U. S. Geologic Survey, 17; Prof. F. H. King quoted, 28; Prof. N. S. Shaler quoted, 32
- Governors, in chronological order, 976
- Grange, The, 1196
- Great Swamp Fight, 453
- Huguenots, coming of, 557; notable names, 560
- Hutchinson, Mrs. Anne, 262; summoned to answer for "erroneous opinions," 265; excommunication, 268
- Independence, struggle for, 697; men who were to bear a part, 705; stimulus of religious revival, 707; first revolutionary outcries, 711; Stamp Act discussed, 721; message of Gov. Hopkins, 722; demonstrations at Newport, 725; repeal of Stamp Act, 729; Providence dedicates Liberty Tree, 731; the "Gaspee" affair, 732; military activity, 738; militia companies chartered, 739; committee of safety, 742; capture of British frigate "Rose," 742; naval preparations, 744; Rhode Island Declaration of Independence, 746; privateering, 750; the State militia, 752; enlistment of negro slaves, 755; battle of Rhode Island, 756
- Indian place names, 1207
- Indians, 61; their tongue, 63; religion, 64; Verrazanno quoted, 65; the Narragansetts, 69; Roger Williams quoted, 72; land title made to Roger Williams, 357
- Jews, 628; Newport synagogue, 631; other synagogues, 633; Jewish Orphanage and other benevolences, 633
- Judiciary, 935; courts constituted, 936; General Court, 938; code of laws, 942; analysis of, 943; under charter of 1663, 944; House of Deputies, 947; report of Lord Bellamont, 949; observations of Richman, Weedon and Durfee, 949; separation of legislative and judicial departments, 951; clash between General Assembly and courts, 953; case of Weedon and Trevett, 954; Dorr judgment for treason reversed, 958; Supreme Court, 960; constitutional amendments, 967; Providence Bar Meeting, 970; Rhode Island Bar Association, 971
- King Philip's War, 443; attack on Swansea, 447; troops raised by United Colonies, 450; Great Swamp Fight, 453; Capt. Michael Pierce, 455; capture and death of Canonchet, 456; Warwick attacked, 459; Plymouth Colony troops, 460
- Landmarks, early, 887; taverns, 888; jail, burial grounds, 890; first church, 906; Roger Williams's first house, 907; "Town Springe," Mowry Tavern, 908; Betsey Williams' Cot-

- tage, 999; old Town House, Turk's Head, 910; Shakespeare's old Sabin Tavern, Hopkins' house, 911; University Hall, 912; John Brown mansion, 913; Athenaeum, Arcade, 914; Greene Street School, Dorr mansion, 915
- Liberty, civil and religious, 85; Rev. Robert Browne quoted, 91; constitutional provisions, 96
- Liquor, regulation of sales of, 153, 339
- Lotteries, 603
- Manufactures, early, 827; water power, 828; ship yard at Newport, 829; various mills, 831; cotton manufacture, 831; development of water power, 832; early manufacturers, 833; calico printing, 834; cloth making, 835; hand weavers displaced by machinery, 836; Providence Woolen Company, 839; hats and bonnets, iron and steel, 840; steamboat antedating Fulton's, 841; first jewelry artisan, 841; rubber manufacturer, 842; chemical products, 843
- Medicine and Surgery, 848; early physicians, 850; ailments and their treatment, 853; various epidemics, 854-5; State Board of Health created, 856; medical teachers of early days, 857; medical teachers at Brown University, 858; development of Medical School, 858; notable physicians, 861; Rhode Island Medical Society, 864; Providence Medical Society, 865; Butler Hospital, 865; State Hospital for mental diseases, 866; Board of State Charities, 867
- Methodist Episcopal Church, at Bristol, 614; other churches, 615
- Narragansett: The Basin, 3; the Bay, 5; Dr. Francis Wayland quoted, 8; first settlers, 469; their characteristics, 479; festive occasions, 481; farm products, 483; elections, 485; noted horses, 486; list of planters, 492
- Newport, founding of, 303
- New Shoreham, 527
- Northwestern Rhode Island, 919; early settlers, 921; leading families, 926; a fine group of officials, 927
- Palatine Light, 525
- Pequot War, 387; the Bay expedition under Col. Endicott, 391; attack on Pequot fort, 393
- Pettaquamscutt, settlers at, 478
- Place names, 1200
- Portsmouth Compact, 291; a Democratic State in the making, 293
- Portsmouth and Newport, founding of, 287; second act in their establishment, 306; union of the two towns, 314
- Post Offices established, 770; postage rates, 770; early postmasters, 771
- Post roads, 767
- Presidents: William Hutchinson, 989; John Coggeshall, 991; Jeremy Clarke, 994; John Smith, 996; Nicholas Eaton, 998; Samuel Gorton, 1002; Gregory Dexter, 1006; John Sanford, 1008; Roger Williams, 1009; Benedict Arnold, 1014
- Proprietary Estate, creation of, 163
- Protestant Episcopal Church, 604; early churches, 606; St. Paul's at Narragansett, 608; St. Michael's, Bristol, St. John's, Providence, 609; other churches, 610; Grace Church, Providence, 611; revival of episcopacy, 613
- Providence, beginnings of, 143; first settlers, 157; early land allotments, 171; owners of home lots, 175; town chartered, 183; town government instituted, 213; taxation, 214; town meetings, 215; extension of bounds, 217; old streets, 892
- Providence Plantations: The proprietary, 189; controversies begin, 191; Providence Compact, 196; the Joshua Verein case, 200; govern-

- ment by arbitration, 223; weakness of, 227; its collapse, 228; charter of incorporation, 317; Aquidneck towns withdraw, 330; reunion of towns, 332.
- Quakers, arrival of, 531; persecution of, 532; welcomed in Rhode Island, 534; assailed by Roger Williams, 540; their protests against slavery, 490, 508, 543; notable men, 545
- Railroads, coming of, 775
- Redwood Library, 488
- Religion, 565; early opinions as to conditions in Rhode Island, 634
- Rhode Island, first settlers, 119; founding of colony, 311
- Roads, 765; post roads, 767; State roads, 776
- Roman Catholic Church, 617; Cathedral in Providence, 620; Bishop Tyler, Bishop O'Reilly, 623
- Royal Charter of 1663, 429; what it effected, 433
- Shawomet, settling of, 363; Gorton has scant welcome, 364; he becomes a leader, 370; his trial, 379
- Slavery, 489; first slaves in Rhode Island, 497; legislation as to slavery, 500; first importation of negroes, 503; slave trade incidents, 504; protest of Quakers, 508; act prohibiting importation of negroes, 509; act for gradual abolition of slavery, 511
- Stage coaches, 773
- Standish, Capt. Myles, 449
- State Houses, 646, 647
- Suffrage Association, 790
- Taxation for Colonial uses, 337
- Timber industry, 54; early mills, 55
- Town Histories, 1175
- Training Days, 327
- Unitarian Church, 616
- Universalist Church, 617
- Vessels lured ashore for plunder, 525
- Williams Patent, 397, 407
- Williams, Roger, contracts with Naragansett Sachems, 115; his account of the purchase, 117; his birth and history, 123; Gov. Bradford quoted, 125; Williams summoned before General Court, 131; sentence of court, 133; exiled, 139; arrives at Moshassuck, 146; summary of his acts, 206; his individualism, 231; his dealings with Naragansetts, 236; with Canonicus and Miantinomi, 236; writes to Gov. Winthrop, 243; his deed to Associate Proprietors, 245; visits England on unknown errand, 325; his letter after his return, 344; his experiences in London, 401; his new Patent, 405; Roger Williams, Saviour of New England, 415

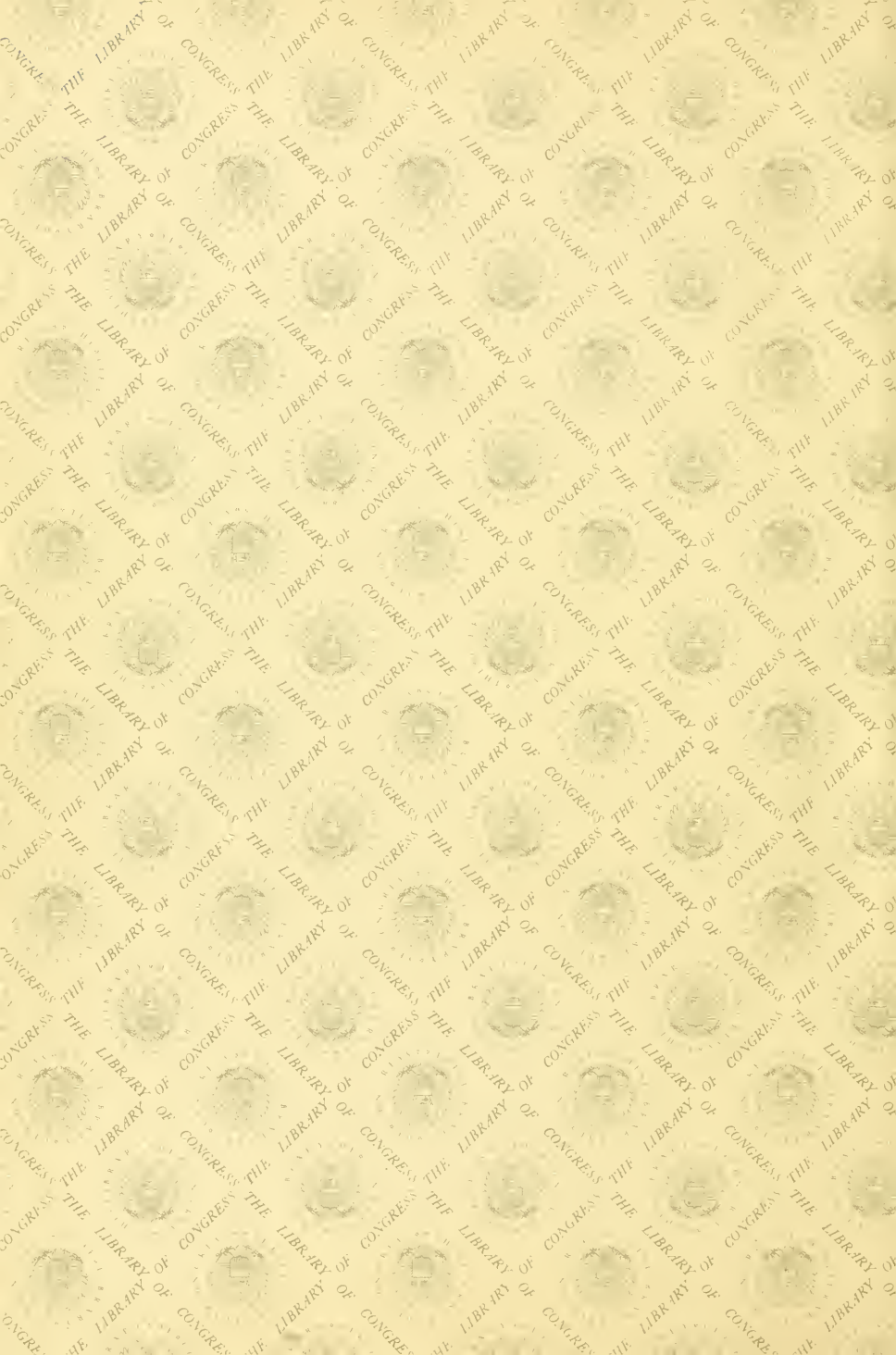














LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 014 110 017 8